

MEMOIRS  
*The* OF THE *Agnew*  
CHURCH  
O F  
SCOTLAND,  
[DEFOE]

---

In FOUR PERIODS.

---

- I. The Church in her Infant-State,  
from the Reformation to the Queen  
*Mary's* Abdication.
- II. The Church in its growing State,  
from the Abdication to the Restora-  
tion.
- III. The Church in its persecuted State,  
from the Restoration to the Revo-  
lution.
- IV. The Church in its present State,  
from the Revolution to the Union.

WITH AN  
APPENDIX, of some Transactions  
since the UNION.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed for *Eman. Matthews* at the *Bible*, and *T. Warner* at the *Black-Boy*, both in *Pater-Noster-Row*, 1717.



# THE PREFACE.



*THE following Work seems to have as little need of a Preface as any of the kind that has been publish'd in this Age: It is hoped it is it self but a Preface, or Introduction to some larger and fuller*

*History, that may, by better Hands, some time or other, do Justice, not to the Church of Scotland only, but to the Memory and Families of the particular Sufferers and Confessors, who have sacrificed themselves in Defence of Religion, in that Part of Great Britain.*

*It is a moving Reflexion, that these larger and fuller Accounts have been so often promised, and so long ago undertaken by several able and worthy Hands, and that yet nothing has been finished, in a Cause wherein History is so much in debt to Truth; we see no full Account yet given, and 'tis to be feared will not be given in our Age.*

*This Consideration has made an officious Stranger concern himself in the Work; he could not bear to think, that the Memory of the most glorious Scene of Action, and the most dismal Scene of Suffering, which the Church of Scotland has passed through,*

## The P R E F A C E.

through, should lie buried in their own Ashes, and not a Man to be found who would effectually employ himself, and set seriously about the Work of ransoming things of such Consequence from the Grave of Forgetfulness.

For this Reason he has applied himself, by Books, by just Authorities, by Oral-Tradition, by living Witnesses, and by all other rational Means, to make himself sufficiently Master of the Matters of Fact; at least to furnish out Memoirs, tho' not a perfect History, of these Things; and to endeavour to restore the general Knowledge of these great Transactions to the Use of Posterity, till some more large and particular Account of these things shall appear.

I shall say nothing to the Performance, but this, that I have endeavoured carefully to adhere to Truth of Fact, and to have it told so evidently and clearly, that it may not be misunderstood by the Ignorant, or misrepresented by the malicious Part of Mankind in Ages to come.

There is a Mistake in the Paging, and a great Breach made in the Figures between the Second and Third Parts of this Work, which may make some suggest there is something omitted; but the Reader is desired to observe, that there is no Breach of the Story, and that the Reading goes on without Interruption, tho' the Figures seem to be a little confused, which were occasioned only by the Mistake of the Printers.

The Author recommends the Work to the Candor of impartial Readers; and if any Mistakes are to be found, tho' he has been critically careful to avoid them, he desires they may be placed to the Account of a disinterested Zeal to do Justice and Service to the People of Scotland, and to a Cause which he had too much at Heart to let lie neglected any longer, how many Imperfections soever might happen in his Performance.



MEMOIRS  
OF THE  
CHURCH  
OF  
SCOTLAND.

---

PART I.

---

*Of the CHURCH in her Infant State.*



HOWEVER enquires narrowly into the Subject I am now entering upon, I mean the Church of Scotland, will find it a meer *Terra incognita*, a vast Continent of hidden, undiscovered Novelties; and will find himself surprised, to the last Degree, that Things so near us should be so entirely hid from us.

Not that there is any thing monstrous or unheard of in the Constitution or Circumstances of

this Church, much less in her Profession and Practice; but that she has been represented to the World in so many monstrous Shapes, dress'd up in so many *Devil's Coats*, and *Fool's Coats*, charg'd with so many Heresies, Errors, Schisms, and Antichristianisms by the Mob of this slandering Generation, that when a Man comes to view her in her original Reformation, her subsequent Settlement, her many Revolutions, Convulsions, and Catastrophe's in her subjected, persecuted State, and now in her glorious Restoration and Establishment, nothing can be more wonderful in humane Affairs, than to see how Mankind has been impos'd upon about her, and with what Front the Absurdities charg'd on her could be broach'd in the World.

When we view the Soundness and Purity of her DOCTRINE, the Strictness and Severity of her DISCIPLINE, the Decency and Order of her WORSHIP, the Gravity and Majesty of her GOVERNMENT: When we see the Modesty, Humility, and yet Steadiness of her Assemblies; the Learning, Diligence, and Painfulness of her Ministers; the awful Solemnity of her Administration; the Obedience, Seriousness, and Frequency of her People in hearing, and universally an Air of Sobriety and Gravity on the whole Nation; we must own her to be, at this Time, the best regulated, national Church in the World, without Reflection upon any of the other Nations where the Protestant Religion is establish'd and profess'd.

I am not comparing the Constitutions of Churches, neither shall I enter into an invidious Comparison here between the Circumstances of this Church and the Church of *England*. — Let them fight that Quarrel out with the Pen and Ink by themselves. sending

But this, I believe, I may challenge the Nations for, in the Name of the Church of *Scotland*, That as to obeying their Constitution, as to preserving the Purity of Doctrine and Worship, as to enacting good Laws, and maintaining a strict Observance of them, no Body of Men in the World come up to them.

I know the Church of *England* have Canons and Injunctions, which when People defend her, they argue from; and those Canons and Injunctions are far less liable to Objection, than those who only guess by her Practice, may imagine: For, when they come to examine how her Ministers obey those Canons, and how they are punish'd when they break them, *Hic labor, hoc opus*, This is the most monstrous thing in the World, and confirms what was said by a Divine of the Church of *England*, (viz.) That no Nation or Church, in these Parts of the World, have so good Laws so ill regarded as they (a).

Nor shall I examin here whence a Thing so justly scandalous to the Church of *England* proceeds; 'tis not the Work of this Piece, in which the State of the Church of *Scotland*, not of the Church of *England*, is my Theme: But when I have shewn therein the Advantages, which the Church of *Scotland* reaps by a Strictness of Discipline, peculiar to her self; and that Discipline exactly executed in every Part; and how by this she seems qualified to be the Church in the World, the hardest to be invaded by Errors and Schisms, and perfectly invulnerable by Heresies and Corruptions, we must be very blind in *England*, if we do not see, that the Slackness and

---

(a) See Dr. Edward's Testimony to the Discipline of the Church of Scotland, in his Sermon on the Union.

Remisness in Discipline is the only Door at which all the notorious Errors and Heresies, now swarming in the *English* Church, are crept in; such as Arianism, Socinianism, Arminianism, Scepticism, Atheism, Deism, and the new ridiculous Corruptions, Notions, and Novelties of *Dodwell*, *Coward*, *Asgill*, and others, who call themselves of the Church of *England*, and are daily filling the World with Absurdities in Religion, not fit to be suffered in a Protestant Church or Government.

Did the Convocation of the Church of *England* do their Duty, who often times sit long, and do little; did they, in Time, check the Growth of these Things; did they call in the Aid of the Civil Authority, to curb the Exorbitance of the Press, and exercise their Ecclesiastick Authority in that of the Pulpit; in short, were they as exact in their Discipline, as grave in their Censures, and as strict in the Pursuit of such Things as the Church of *Scotland*, Errors and Heresies would creep, like other venomous Creatures, upon the Ground, grovel in the Dust, and come out but in the Dark; such Crimes would be acted as Crimes, and the Guilty would hide themselves, like *Adam*, among the Bushes; and not bully Religion, and affront God Almighty to his Face; laugh at Church Discipline, and banter Civil Justice as now they do every Day.

But in *Scotland*, I take upon me with Boldness to assure the World, it is not so; no Error broached, lies brooding like hot Embers laid among dry Buildings, neglected till it sets all in a Flame: No ignorant Person can gain Admittance to, no immoral Person obtain Connivance in the Pulpit; no Error there escapes Censure, no Censure dies there for Want of Prosecution.

If any Breach be made, the Church Judicatories never fail to keep it in the stated Forms of Proceeding, where it cannot sleep; the guilty Person must be brought either to Repentance or to Punishment.

If there is any Breach in this Order, any Stop in the free Exercise of their Authority, or any Interruption to the full Extent of the Church's Power in Censure, it proceeds either (1.) from the exorbitant Power of the Gentry and Nobility, who, often especially when their own Guilt is the Question, stand out to Extremity against Church-Censures, and think themselves too great for the Authority of the Ecclesiastick Judicatories. — Or (2.), from the Looseness of the Episcopal Dissenters, who, as they separate in Worship, so they would be understood to be excused from Discipline. --- Of both which I shall speak at large in their Place, and only note it here, That even in both these Cases, there are Instances wherein the highest and most obstinate have thought fit to submit to the Discipline of the Church, either convinc'd of its Justice, or loath to have the just Reproach of the Opposition entailed upon their Posterity. — In which Case *Scotland* is not without Instances, where her Noblemen have accepted a Rebuke for the Breaches of their Morals in the open Congregation. — But of all this I shall be more particular in its Place.

In these Judicatories the admirable Order of Proceeding is such, that it seems impossible any Man can be oppress'd; for he is able to appeal so often, the Cause shall be heard so often, and by such different Judges, that he cannot fail of Justice. On the other Hand, the Subordination of Judicatories is such, and the Proceedings so

nicely accounted for by the Kirk-Sessions to the Presbyteries, by the Presbyteries to the Provincial Synods, and by the Synods to the General Assemblies, that there can no Mistake pass unobserved, no Complaint can pass unheard, no Grievance unrectified.

I shall not insist on the Particulars here ; because I shall give it at large in the Scheme I purpose to draw of the State of these Judicatories in this Church ; to which I refer.

But what I am upon here is, that by this Means you have the fewest Breaches made upon this Church by the Defection or Degeneracy of either Ministers or People, among themselves, of any Church in the World ; and this, I believe, will very remarkably appear in the subsequent Sheets.

To give a true and concise Scheme of the State of this Church, it will be needful to go back to its original Constitution, which I shall only abridge, and take no more of it, than is needful to hand down a right Understanding of its Circumstances to the present Time. And this is the Design of these Memoirs.

It began to reform from Popery in the Year 1557, being sometime before the Reformation in *England*. Not but that the Seeds of the Protestant Religion were sown, and the Protestant Doctrine spread very far in private even before that ; as may appear by the several Confessors for the Truth, who were put to Death under the Administration of the Queen-Regent, by the Assistance and particular Fury of the Cardinal *Benson*, of which presently.

But this will be farther evident by entring into an Examination of Matters in *England*. For after the Death of *James V, Henry VIII, K. of England*, send-

sending Ambassadors openly to treat of a Marriage (b) for his Son, with the Queen of *Scotland*, the said Treaty and Marriage being proposed in Parliament, was so openly contradicted by the Priests in general, with the Queen Dowager, a *French* Woman, and Cardinal *Beton* at the Head of them, that the Cardinal was confined till the Question was put in the Parliament.

And tho' when the Cardinal was thus removed, the Matter was soon concluded, yet the Cardinal making his Escape out of Prison, he and the Popish Faction so ordered Affairs that the Articles could never be executed, nor the Hostages, agreed on, obtained.

A cruel War followed on this, the King of *England* resenting all these Indignities: Which War, and the Calamities it brought with it, together with the Confusions in the Regency of the Earl of *Arran*, occasioned by the Policy and Cruelty of the Cardinal *Beton*, gave the People a greater Liberty than otherwise they would have had; so that the Protestant Religion, then particularly called *Lutheranism*, got a great deal of Ground; and not only were the common People enclined to it, but a great many of the Nobility and Gentry of *Scotland* favoured the Reformation: Nay, so far had it obtained, that some Towns began to own it in Bulk: And *Buchanan* records it, and from him I hand it down to Posterity for the particular Honour of the Town of *Dundee*, that they were the only Town in *Scotland* that was then addicted to the

---

(b) King Hen. VIII. *font Ja. 5th Books, &c. See Buch. lib. 14. fol. 63.*

(c) Protestant Religion : Or, which the Sense will very well bear if the History of the Time be examined, the Town of *Dundee* was the first Protestant Town in *Scotland*, and therefore the Cardinal would not venture to receive the Earl of *Rothes* and *Patrick Gray*, who, it seems, favour'd the Reformation, in that Town, but fled to *Perth*.

This was the Time when, at *Perth*, they burnt a Woman and her Infant, because she would not call on the *Virgin-Mary* when she was in Travel. — And having vowed the Destruction of the Reformed, they came to *Dundee*, to search for such as read the New Testament : And then it was that they raised (d) a Report among the poor People, that the New Testament was written by *Luther*, and therefore to be rejected as an heretical Book. But, it seems, the honest People of *Dundee*, like true *Bereans*, enquired farther into the Matter, and have retained their better Knowledge to this Day.

That the Popish Clergy apprehended a general Revolution in the Affairs of Religion, and saw a strong Inclination to that Change in the People, was apparent from their Vigilance and Subtilty in rejecting the Offer of an Intermariage with *England*, first made by King *Henry VIII*, in the Time of *James V* of *Scotland*, and afterwards their running headlong into a War with

(c) Buch. lib. 15. fol. 157. — Sed Cardinalis, parum tutum ratus duos Homines nobiles, & factiosos, & bene Comitatos in apudum recipere, unum instaurat a religioni addictissimum, egit cum prorege, ut Pertham rediret.

(d) Tanta; erat Cæcitas, ut Sacerdotum pleriq; conderent, Novum Testamentum nuper à Martino Luthero fuisse scriptum. Ibid. Fol. 157.

with *England*, rather than consent to match their Queen, then an Infant, to Prince *Edward*, afterwards *Edward VI*, King of *England*. The true Reason of which appeared to be, least the *English* Reformation should be imposed upon them.

This Obstinacy was so great, as that had the *English* pursued their Design with Force, after the Battle at *Pinky*, they might have ruined *Scotland* very much, their Queen being a Child, and the Nobility much divided among themselves. — And yet the *Scots*, tho' their Army was overthrown, and their Country over-run by the *English*, rejected the Match, and privily conveyed their young Queen into *France*. And all this for fear of a Reformation.

This was all from the Subtilty of the Popish Clergy, as is evident through the whole Course of the Histories of those Times. — The Priests had in vain opposed the growing Reformation with the unprevailing Remedies of Fire and Faggot: The burning of *Patrick Hamilton*, at *St. Andrews*; a Gentleman of noble Extract, was rather a Help than a Hindrance to the Reformation; of whom *George Buchanan* says, he dy'd by the (e) *Conspiracy of the Priests*. And the Story of the *Dominican* Friar, whom he having convinc'd of the Truth of his Doctrine, afterwards betrayed him, and witnessed against him, is very remarkable: For when *Patrick Hamilton*, at his Death, appeal'd to his Conscience that he believ'd, and was convinc'd of the Truth of what he persecuted him

---

(e) *Buchanan. rerum Scoticarum, lib. 14. fol. 146. Et quoq; anno, Patricius Hamiltonius è Johannis Ducis Albanii sorore, ex fratre Comitis Araniæ, natus, Juvenis ingenio summo & eruditione singulari, conjuratione-Sacerdotum oppressus, ad Fanum Andrea vivus est crematus.*

him for, the Friar, struck with the Conviction, ran distracted immediately, and died mad. — This, says the same Author (f), much terrified the Minds of the People.

Afterwards in the Year 1539, Five more were burnt at St. Andrews, many persecuted to Banishment, and some recanted. Among the Banished (g) *George Buchanan* says himself was one, but that he made his Escape out of Prison.

How the Priests managed King *James* the V, a Prince, as *Buchanan* says (h), naturally superstitious; how they corrupted his Courtiers, how they flattered him on the giving to them the Books sent him by the King of *England*; how they, by the meer Force of Money, prevailed upon him first to delay, and afterwards to break off the Interview appointed between him and the King of *England*, and how all this was for Fear of the growing Reformation in *England*, and the introducing it in *Scotland*, is so plain in History, that I need only refer the Readers to the Particulars which they will find in *Calderwood*, *Spotswood*, and *Buchanan*, the last of whom, (viz.) *Buchanan*, speaks it plainly, that the Priests (i) had this in their View. And

---

(f) *Ibid. Animos Hominum conterruit Alexandri Cambelli Mors.*

See the Story in *Buchanan*, fol. 146. *Is erat à Sodalitate Dominicanorum ————— to mortem obiit —————*

(g) *Buch. lib. 14. fol. 150. Initio anni proximi qui fuit M. D. xxxix, Lutheranismi suspecti complures capti sunt. Sub finem Februarii; quinque Cremati: Novem recantarunt: Complures exilio damnati. In his fuit Georgius Buchananus, qui sopitis custodibus per cubiculi fenestram evaserat.*

(h) *His velut machinis admotis cum regis animum superstiti- quibus obnoxiis labefactassent, tum corruptis, qui plurimum poterant aulicis, magnam per eos regi pecunie vim polliciti, penitus cum a colloquio averterunt, Ibid. fol. 149.*

(i) *Demum Sacerdotes, qui pro aris ac focis sibi certandum videbant, Jacobum Betonium Fani Andree Archiepiscopi & Geor-*

And yet in all this, *Scotland* had an unforeseen Advantage, *viz.* That having been obliged, by these things, to defer the Reformation, I mean, as a publick Action; they had Leisure thereby to see the Defects of the *English* Reformation, which happened in the mean time, and going a Step farther, to leave out some Things which the *English* retained; and which, by the Error of the Times, got such deep Root there, as never to be altered to this Day: Such as the Supremacy, prescribed Rites and Ceremonies, and which they esteem'd also a Defect, *Episcopacy*: Which Things, as they began now to be objected against in *England* by several of the best and most eminent for Piety in the first Reformation, so they obtained not at all in *Scotland*; but *John Knox*, whom, for this, I think I may call the Father of the Church of *Scotland*, going over to *Geneva*, and there conferring with the most eminent Protestant Divines concerning the Model of Church Government, which should be most agreeable to Scripture-Institution, he brought over the Figure of a Church as to Worship, Discipline, and Government, the same which we find now establish'd.

It would be too long a Work for these Memoirs to set down here the Beginning, Progress, Manner, and Issue of the first Reformation: It may be sufficient to note here the Heads of it, and withal, the different Manner of it from that in *England*, which produced that Effect mentioned above, *viz.* a differing Form of Settlement.

In

In *England* the Reformation, as to the Settlement of it, began in the Crown, the several Kings put the first Hand to it: As 1. King *Henry VIII*, by dethroning the Pope's Supremacy, demolishing the religious Houses, forbidding Appeals to *Rome*, and the like. 2. King *Edward VI*, by a general Overthrow of all the Popish Hierarchy, casting their Images out of the Churches, their Mass, and all their *Romish* Innovations out of their Worship, dethroning their whole Authority, and rooting out the Remains of their Ceremonies from the Nation.

But this had two Effects.

1. That when King *Henry VIII* abolish'd the Pope's Supremacy, his Principle at that time being rather Politick than Religious, he set his own Authority up in the stead of it, calling himself supream Head of the Church in all Things, whether Ecclesiastical or Civil; a Thing since made very ill use of, and improv'd to a Tyranny, which neither in the Divine or Humane Original of it could find any legal Foundation.

2. That when King *Edward* rejected the Pontificate of *Rome*, he yet erected a Protestant Pontificate in its stead, which being soon opposed by some of the most eminent for Piety and Wisdom in the Reformation, quickly begot a Division in the Church, which has since been carried on to that Heighth, and encreased to the Magnitude which we see this Day.

3. King *Edward*, and the first Reformers, when they came to the Matters of Worship, did not wholly destroy the Model, but reform'd it only; and tho' I am willing to believe they, to the Extent of their Light, honestly design'd to leave out all that was superstitious and idolatrous in the former, and did really believe it

was

was so; yet they thought themselves obliged to retain a Similitude of Form.

Nor do we since so much object against the Form, less against a Form in general; but against prescribing that Form as a Term of Communion.

These are the Three Heads which have since caused so much Dispute in *England*, made unhappy Breaches in the common Charity, and risen up to such large Divisions as we see at this Day.

But to return to the *Scots*, their Reformation began quite in another Manner. — The Knowledge of the Scriptures began the first Step to it, and the *English* Bible got in among the People very quickly: Some eminent, for Learning, even among the Popish Zealots, began to be enlightened by the Reading the Word of God: And as Knowledge is naturally diffusive, so this Kind, having an invisible Instructor to second it, I mean the holy Spirit of God, spread secretly, but swiftly, through the Nation.

Among those, whom it pleased God to make use of as the first Instruments in this glorious Work, was *George Wishart*, and several others, who became eminent: They were bold and steady Preachers of the Reformation, and the People of all sorts became so addicted to the Protestant Religion, by their Instruction, that after the Regent, by the Instigation of Cardinal *Beton*, had consented to the Martyrdom of that great and good Man *Mr. Wishart*, *Buchanan* tells us the whole Nation began to (k) to disrelish his Government.

?Twould

---

(k) *Buch. lib. 15. fol. 163. Ob hanc imperitiam Regni gerendi, totiusq; vite segnitiem, cum animos etiam vulgi prore offendit.*

Would be endless to recite the Names, Lives, and Death of the many Preachers who, at first, with the extremest Hazard, and with a Constancy, even to Martyrdom, spread the reformed Doctrines through *Scotland*. It suffices to note, that in a few Years it had such Success, that in general the whole Kingdom seem'd to be touch'd with the Sense of the true Religion, and not the common People only, but the Nobility and Gentry embraced it with great Zeal, Eagerness, and Resolution; and in this Case the Affairs of the Church of *Scotland* stood, when the Regent was persuaded by the *French* Court to demit, and to resign his Government into the Hands of the Queen Mother. —

This Lady being wholly *French*, and acted by their Counsels, set her self with more Heat, than Discretion, to suppress the reformed Religion, and, as she flattered her self, to extirpate the Beginnings of it out of *Scotland*; but she found her self mistaken, it was now too late; the Thing had taken too deep Root in the Hearts of the People for her to master it.

However, for Two Years, Matters of Religion slept, the Queen being married to the Dauphin of *France*, the Regent taken up by a War with *England*: And the Clergy, tho' cruel and bloody enough, yet being baulked by the Murther of Cardinal *Beton*, (who was slain in his Bed-Chamber, as *George Wishart* had pre-

---

*offendisset, tum ob alia indices fiebat vilior: Præcipue post sublatum Georgium Sophocardium, maxima parte hominum secutus calamitates in religione vertente: Sed iis maxime, qui non modo puritatem doctrinae & vitæ totius moderationem in Georgia suspiciebant: Sed qui multis & ejus veracissimis prædictionibus persuasivum futuri perspicendi divinitus ei inditam credebant.*

predicted, and cast out of a Window by *Norman Lesley*, Son to the Earl of *Rothel*, and his Followers) they wanted a Head to prosecute the Reformers to Blood, and a Power to protect them in it.

All this while the Reformed held their private Assemblies, where they had their Worship in their own Language, and had frequent Conferences upon religious Matters; for as yet they had no publick Preaching: However, by this Means the Work of Reformation still spread it self, and took deep Root in the Nation.

The first popular Discovery this made in the Minds of the Commonality was, in the City of *Edenburgh*, when the Shrine of *St. Giles*, the Patron of that City, was robbed of its Relicks, which they had in so much Veneration.

The 1st of *September*, it seems, was the Festival of this tutelar Saint, when his Image was to be carried in Procession about the City, and the Queen Regent resolved to be present at the Solemnity: But when they came to look for the Saint, he was pleased to suffer himself to be stolen away, to the great Confusion of the Clergy, who had pleased themselves with the Expectation of the Procession, and the Honour done them by the Regent to grace the Show.

However, to make up the Matter as well as they could, they made another Image to set in the Pageant, and began their Procession in the usual Form. — After the Show had passed the principal Parts of the City, and the Queen Regent was retired, the Mob rose upon the Priests, and put an End to their Pageantry: For they pulled *St. Giles* out of his Throne, which was erected on the Shoulders of the Priests, threw his Saintship into the Dirt, and in short, the sacred Image suffered immediate Martyrdom. But the

the Priests had no Mind to die with their Deity ; for they fled every Man as he could. — And yet this they need not have done, for the Rabble offered no Body any Injury but the wooden Idol, which they broke all to pieces, and so departed.

This, however, might give the Regent a Taste of what Posture the Affairs of Religion were in, if she had pleased to have taken Notice of it. However, she countenanced the Priests to go on with all the persecuting Methods they could, tho' every where they met with Insults, Slights, and Contempt from the People: As particularly when citing *Paul Messen* of *Dundee* before them, and he not appearing, was intercommoned ; that is, every one was forbid to harbour, or relieve him, or converse with him, on severe Penalties: which yet the brave Citizens of *Dundee* openly disregarded, and protected him, entertained him in their Houses, and sued to the Regent to remit his Banishment.

But things were now coming to a greater Height ; for the Asserters of the reformed Religion resolved not to bear any longer the Oppressions and Invasions of the Clergy, but to demand their Liberty in a different Manner from what had formerly been done.

They had calculated their Right first, and then their Strength: They found that if they were proceeded against by Law, they could not be hurt, for they had offended no Law ; and if their Enemies had recourse to Arms, they were more numerous than they, and would defend themselves. Upon these Resolutions, several were sent abroad by their Brethren to concert Measures, and to form themselves into something of a Body.

These were eminent Persons, as *Buchanan* (a) observes, which may serve to answer those who alledge, that the Reformation in *Scotland* was the Effect only of the Fury of the Rabble. — They went severally, to the remotest Parts of the Kingdom (b), moving the Gentlemen and Towns to adhere to the mutual Defence of Religion, and to stand by one another.

These carried with them (c) Tables, as *Buchanan* calls them; for those that were willing to join with them, to subscribe their Names. I take this to be something in the Nature of an (d) Association, for their mutual Defence, in case they should meet with any more Violences, as they were sure to do. And to this was added the Assurance, as it was call'd, which some call'd the first Covenant, and is as follows :

*The first Covenant of Scotland, 1557.*

‘ **W**E perceiving how Sathan in his Mem-  
 ‘ bers, the Antichrists of our Time, cru-  
 ‘ elly does rage, seeking to overthrow and destroy  
 ‘ the Gospel of Christ, and his Congregation,  
 ‘ ought, according to our bounden Duty, to strive  
 ‘ in our Master’s Cause, even unto the Death,  
 ‘ being certain of the Victory in him : The which  
 C our

---

(a) *Buchan. lib. 16. fol. 167. Inter hac quidam viri nobiles à Fife maxime & Angusia, ac aliquot epidorum civis illustriores.*

(b) *In omnes Scotiae praefecturas dispersi hortabantur universos ut sinceram divinae legis praedicationem amarent, Ibid. fol. 167.*

(c) *Quibus haec placerent Tabulas ea de re confectas quibus subscriberent offerunt. Ib. folio ut supra.*

(d) *John Knox in his History of the Reformation, calls it, in his marginal Note, The first Covenant of Scotland, and gives the Copy of it, lib. 1. p. 110. but I conceive it was not properly so called; for that the Covenant was not formed till some time after, and this was therefore only called a common Bond.*

our Duty being well considered, we do promise, before the Majesty of God, and his Congregation, that we (by his Grace) shall with all Diligence continually apply our whole Power, Substance, and our very Lives, to maintain, set forward, and establish the most blessed Word of God and his Congregation: And shall labour according to our Power to have faithful Ministers, truly and purely to minister Christ's Gospel and Sacraments to his People. We shall maintain them, nourish them, and defend them, the whole Congregation of Christ, and every Member thereof according to our whole Powers, and waging of our Lives, against Sathan and all wicked Power that doth intend Tyranny or Trouble against the foresaid Congregation. Unto the which holy Word and Congregation, we do join us; and so do forsake and renounce the Congregation of Sathan, with all the superstitious Abomination and Idolatry thereof. And moreover, shall declare our selves manifestly Enemies thereto, by this our faithful Promise before God, testified to this Congregation, by our Subscription of these presents. At *Edinburgh* the Third of *December*, anno 1557. God called to witness. Sic subscribitur

*A. Earle of Argyle.*  
*Glencarne.*  
*Mortoun.*

*Archibald, Ld. of Lorne.*  
*John Erskine of Dun,*  
*Et cetera.*

Soon after this they sent their Proposals to the Queen Regent by Sir *James Sandelands* of *Caldar*, which contained in short these Particulars.

1. " That the Worship of God, Prayers and Sacraments might be had in the vulgar Tongue.
2. " That scandalous Ministers might be removed.
3. " That

3. " That the People might have the Choice  
 " of their own Ministers. "

This was called the Oration and Petition of the Protestants of *Scotland* to the Queen Regent, and is at length printed in the said History of the Reformation, *lib. 2. p. 127, 128, 129.* But is too long to recite here.

The Parliament soon after this sat down, which was in *December Anno 1558*, and the Reformers presented a Letter to them also, including their Requests, and annexed to it a solemn Protestation, which they demanded to be registred at the same Time that they delivered it.

The Regent's Answer to this Protestation was mild, and such as deceived the Reformers for a while: Her Answer was thus — *Me will remember what is protest. Me sal put good Order in all thing that now controversse.* Note, the Regent was a *French Woman*, and spoke broken *English*.

The Regent all this while dealt cautiously and subtilly; for she guess'd wisely that the People who durst make these Demands, must have some Prospect of Power to support them; and she dreaded the Tumults of the Rabble: She therefore consented, in Shew, to some things, as particularly, to let them have their Worship in the vulgar Tongue, on Condition it should be without Tumult, and that they should not preach publicly in *Leith* or *Edinburgh*.

For some time, it seems, the Reformed contented themselves with this, and kept the Injunctions of the Regent exactly; but the Priests were furious, to the last Degree, at these things, and made all possible Opposition, till at last they drove things to the Extremities which

followed, and pav'd the Way for their own Overthrow.

They held their Meetings to consult for the Suppressing the Reformed, and had all the Assistance underhand that the *Queen Regent* could give them ; but she still carried it fair to the Reformers, and answered them mildly, leading them on in Hopes.

At last she threw off the Mask, and openly profess her Resolution to destroy them ; that she would not suffer the Majesty of the Government to be debas'd, but would restore it to its ancient Veneration by some remarkable Thing.

I am content to acknowledge I follow *Buchanan* in these Notes upon the Affairs of those Days ; because tho' other Historians are more particular than he, yet the Enemies of the Reformation are not without Objections against the Reputation of their Writings, whereas *Buchanan's* Reputation, as an Historian, is unquestioned, even by his greatest Enemies. I find them also all agree, in Substance, with him. He is also concise, and more pertinent than some of them ; and all Sides acknowledge him to be authentick and faithful. *But this by the Way.*

The Queen, as I have noted, dealt for a while mildly with the Reformers, but it lasted not long ; for they were obliged to come to a Point with her ; And therefore not to be wanting to themselves, as well as at the same Time to behave decently to the Regent, they sent the Earl of *Glencairn*, *Hugh Campbell*, Sheriff of *Air*, and others, to entreat her favourable Answer to their Desires.

The Queen Regent, now casting off the Mask, gave her Passion a full Vent, and told them

them (e), in so many Words, they had nothing to expect from her. — They calmly reminded her of her Promises to them, but in vain: She told them in effect (f), *Princes were not bound by the Promises which they were obliged to make in the Exigence of their Affairs.* — The Protestants finding such Usage as this, and knowing as well what they were to expect, as their own Strength to resist it, *boldly defyed her*, and told her to her Face (g), that they then renounced all Obedience to her, and advised her to consider the Consequences of it.

Now the Fire was kindled, and the Flame began to burn out, and tho' the Queen Regent was rather enraged by their Boldness than made *thoughtful*, yet she soon found the Differences of Things; she found her Authority to decrease, and her Commands every where slighted: *For Example*, she commanded the *Provost of St. Johnston*, now called *Perth*, to suppress the Innovation of Religion there; he answered, that he had no Dominion *over their Consciences*: She commanded the Sheriff of *Dundee* to send *Paul Messen*, their Protestant Minister, bound to her, instead of which the Sheriff sent to Mr. *Messen*, to tell him, that he might secure himself: She wrote to the Neighbour Assemblies, to observe

---

(e) *Buchan. lib. 16. fol. 168. Ibi non se potuit continere, quin vocem impietatis testem profunderet, Invitis, inquit, vobis, vestrisque ministris isti, etsi paulo sincerius concionabuntur, tamen exulabunt.*

(f) *Respondit, fidem promissorum a principibus exigendam, quatenus eam prestare commodum eis videretur. Ib.*

(g) *Ad hæc illi subjecerunt, Se ergo omne obsequium & parendi necessitatem ei renunciare, a que præmonuerunt, quantum incommodorum esset ab hoc fonte Emanaturum. Ib.*

*Easter* as usual, after the *Roman* way, but not one of them obeyed her.

Upon this she cited all the Ministers of *Scotland* to appear at *Stirling*, on the 10th of *May* 1559; but they came there with such Attendants, and so numerous, *the' unarm'd*; that it frighted the Regent out of her Design, and made her entreat *John Ereskine* of *Dun*, a Lover of the Religion, and that could influence them by himself, that he would disperse the People, giving her Promise at the same Time to act Nothing against the Reformers. — But see the Faith kept at that Time with Protestants: As soon as on those Promises the honest Men were returned home, she held the Meeting intended, called over the Names, and outlawed those that were absent for Contempt.

The Nobility and Gentry assembled with the Ministers, finding in what Manner they were to be used, that the Queen was wholly bent for their Destruction, and neither to be bound by Promises, or any other Obligation, and that their Ruin was absolutely determined, prepared for Force, resolving to defend themselves.

And now began the Fury of the People to break out a little beyond the Bounds which the better sort designed; for the Mob at *Perth*, says *Buchanan*, on Mr. *John Knox's* preaching a Sermon to them against Idolatry, took Fire at the Hint, and immediately fell to breaking down the Images in all the Churches and Monasteries at *Perth*. Other Historians say, This was upon the Laird of *Dun's* giving them an Account of the Falshood and Injustice of the Queen to the Ministers at the Meeting at *Stirling*, and give a very particular Account, introduced thus: The Laird of *Dun*, coming to *St. John-*  
*ston,*

6 *Johnston*, expos'd the Case even as it was, and  
 6 did conceal nothing of the Queen's Craft and  
 6 Falseness, which being understood, the Multi-  
 9 tude was so inflamed, that neither could the  
 9 Exhortation of the Preachers, nor the Com-  
 6 mandment of the Magistrates stay them from  
 6 destroying the Places of Idolatry. <sup>2</sup> *Vide Knox's*  
*History of the Reformation, lib. 2. fol. 136.* Be-  
 it which way it will, *whether* by Mr. *Knox's* Ser-  
 mon, who, it is true, did preach at that Time  
 against Idolatry; or by the Laird of *Dun's* giving  
 them an Account of the Queen Regent's Behavi-  
 our, this is certain, that here the demolishing  
 of Images, &c. began; the *Franciscans*, *Domini-*  
*cans*, and *Carthusians* were immediately pull'd  
 out of their Houses, and all they had was plun-  
 dered and wreck'd: The Nobility and arm'd  
 Men, with an unusual Moderation, avoided all  
 Appearance of enriching themselves by this  
 Work, and let the (b) Priests go away loaden  
 with Gold and Silver. But as for the Buildings,  
 they not only demolished them, but caused their  
 Soldiers to carry away (i) the very Stones and  
 Rubbish; so that in some Places they hardly  
 left any Remembrance of them to Posterity.

And now the War was begun in earnest; for  
 the breaking down of Images, and pulling  
 down

C 4

---

(b) *Buchan. Hist. 16. fol. 169. Atque hæc omnia pauperibus*  
*in prædam cesserint. Nam quibus res erat, adeo se continu-*  
*erunt ab omni avaritia suspicione, ut Monachorum nonnullos ac*  
*præcipue fratrum Carthusiensium præfectum, auro, atque argen-*  
*to factis discedere onustum permisissent.*

(i) *Nec magis fuit incredibilis militarium hominum à præda*  
*abstinentia quam in demolendis tot Aedificiis Celeritas: Car-*  
*thusiensium: nimis aedes illæ laxissimæ tam properanter non modò*  
*dirutæ, sed etiam exportatæ fuerunt, ut intra bledium vix fun-*  
*damentorum vestigia superessent. Ib.*

down Monasteries began to spread over the whole Country: The Town of *Comper* followed that of *Perth*, and the Friars and Ecclesiasticks began every where to shift for themselves, all the rest being apprehensive, and not without good Cause, of the same Fate.

The Regent, exasperated to the highest Degree, solemnly swore she would be reveng'd on the City of *Perth*, that she would have the Blood of the Citizens, and burn their City down to the Ground: But she reckon'd without her Host; for the People let her see how little they feared her; for that the very same Week several other Towns did the like. — In order therefore to put a Stop to this Sort of Work, she raised an Army, and marched directly against the Protestant Nobility, who, by the way, had ever since the Association, I mentioned before, been called *The Lords of the CONGREGATION*: And the Protestants in general, as then united, were called *The CONGREGATION*.

The *Lords of the Congregation*, for so I shall now call them, far from being discouraged at the Regent's Preparations, sent Messengers to all their Brethren to come and stand by what they had begun, and not to desert so good a Cause in its last Extremity. And this had such an Effect, that they had soon a very good Army, and 'tis recorded, to the Honour of the Earl of *Glencasny*, that he brought with him 2100 Men, well armed, to their Assistance.

The Queen Regent had rather more Forces than the *Congregation*, including her *French Auxiliaries*, but yet she was loth to venture a Battle; but sends Two Gentlemen who were in her Army, and who were Favourers of the Reformed,

formed, to treat with them ; these were the Lord *James Stuart*, and *Gillespy Campbel*, and they to shew their Willingness to hearken to Reason, readily appointed two of their Number, *viz. Alex. Cuningham*, and *John Ereskine of Dun*, to treat with her (k).

These made, says *Buchanan*, a temporary Agreement ; for indeed it was no more. It amounted to a disbanding the Troops on either Side, the Queen was to be admitted into *Perth*, on her Promise not to injure any of the Townsmen, her *French* Troops were not to come within Three Miles of the Town, and all religious Differences were to be left to the next Parliament.

Thus the War, which was just breaking out, was seemingly stopt for a while ; but the Queen Regent kept not one of her Articles ; for she brought her *Frenchmen* into the City, she exercised all Sorts of Violence on the Citizens, and fell on them by Fines at Pleasure, Change of their Magistrates, Banishment of some, and Murther of others, and, at her Departure, left a Garrison of Mercenaries in the Town.

This Treatment of the Citizens of *Perth*, finished the Ruin of all the Regent's Affairs, and this was the last Day of her Prosperity ; for now her Friends began to forsake her ; the Lord *James Stuart*, and *Gillespy Campbell*, after Earl of *Argyle*, deserted her ; for that having employed them to bring the Lords of the Congregation to an Agreement, she had dishonoured them so much in breaking her Word. The

---

(k) *Buch. lib. 16. fol. 170. Quos ante nominavimus Jacobum Stuartum & Gillespicum Cambellum ad hostem misit. Ex altera parte Alexander Cuningamus & Johannes Areskinus dunensis electi.*

The same Lord *James Stuart*, with the Earl of *Argyle*, join'd themselves soon after to the *Congregation* (1): The Regent thinking to revenge her self on *Cowper* and *St. Andrews*, as she had done on *Perth*, they raised the Country again, and sent about to all the Reformed for Help; nor did they fail of Assistance, for the Country came in to them in great Numbers, and so a second Army was raised for the *Congregation*, and, as *Buchanan* observes, they were so enraged at the perfidious dealing of the Regent, that they resolved to trust her no more, but to overcome or die.

It should be noted here, that at the breaking up of the Meeting of the Lords of the *Congregation* at *Perth*, when that City was yielded to the Queen Regent, there was another Writing subscribed which Mr. *Know* calls the *Second Covenant*, and was for mutual Assistance: And to this the Earl of *Argyle* and Lord *James Stuart* signed, having before promised, if the Queen broke her Word to the Citizens of *St. Johnston*, they would join with all their Power with the *Congregation*, as now they did; together with the Lord *Ruthven*, the Earl of *Menteth*, and Lord *Tullibardin*. The Queen sent after them, requiring them to return, on pain of Displeasure; but

---

(1) *Ad eos è locis propinquis magna repente occurrit multitudo infensissimis adversus Regentem & ejus copias animis. Quippe cum gente insociabili, & fera bellum esse, apud quam equitas, jus, fas, promissa, fides, & juris jurandi religio tam levi momento penderent, ut ad omnem spei auram, & incertissimos blandientis fortuna status dicta indicta, facta infecta essent. Nullas in posterum conditiones concordia eudiendas: nullam pacis, nisi altera parte extincta, aut certe peregrinis regno exactis, spem superesse. Proinde se ad vincendum vel moriendum comparent. Buchan. lib. 16. fol. 169.*

but they boldly rejected her, sending her Word plainly, that, with safe Conscience, they could not be partakers with her, in so manifest Tyranny as was by her practised, *Knox lib. 2. p. 152.*

The Second Covenant was as follows :

*The Second Covenant at Perth, 1559.*

AT Perth the last of *May*, the Yeere of God 1559 Yeers, the Congregations of the *West Country*, with the Congregations of *Fyfe, Perth, Dundie, Angus, Mernes, and Monrosse*, being convened in the Town of *Perth*, in the Name of *Jesus Christ*, for setting forth of his Glory, understanding nothing more necessary for the same, than to keep a constant Amity, Unity, and Fellowship together, according as they are commanded by God, are confederate, and become bounden and obliged in the Presence of God, to concurre and assist together in doing all Things required of God in his Scripture, that may be to his Glory ; and with their whole Powers to destroy and put away all Things that doth Dishonour to his Name, so that God may be truly and purely worshiped. And in case that any Trouble be intended against the said Congregation, or any Part or Member thereof, the whole Congregation shall concurre, assist, and convene together, to the Defence of, the same Congregation or Person troubled : And shall not spare Labours, Goods, Substance, Bodies and Lives, in maintaining the Liberty of the whole Congregation, and every Member thereof, against whatsoever Person shall intend the said Trouble for Cause of Religion, or any other Cause depending thereupon, or lay to their Charge under Pretence thereof ; although

it

' it happen to be coloured with any other out-  
 ' ward Cause. In witnessing and Testimony of  
 ' the which, the whole Congregation aforesaid  
 ' have ordained and appointed the Noblemen and  
 ' Persons underwritten, to subscribe these Presents.

*Sic subscribitur,*

*Arch. Argyle, R. Lord Boid, Lord Wchiltrie,  
 James Steward. Mathew Campbell of Tarmganart.  
 Glencarne.*

The Queen was now in *Fife*, marching to  
*Cowper*, and from thence intending to *St. An-*  
*drews*, where the Lords having designed to go  
 on with the Reformation, had brought *Mr. John*  
*Knox* to preach against Idolatry; but the Bi-  
 shop, terrified with the Thoughts of Reforma-  
 tion in his Cathedral-Church, hasted thither  
 with 100 Spearmen, and came into the Town  
 the Evening before. The two Lords, and their  
 Friends, had no Soldiers, only their meet  
 Household-Servants, and the Queen with her  
 Army was but 12 Miles off, *viz.* at *Faulkland*,  
 nor was the Town yet confirmed in the reform-  
 ed Religion, and to compleat all, the Arch-Bi-  
 shop, who had before caused *John Knox* to be  
 burnt in Effigie, sent them Word by *Mr. Robert*  
*Coldwell*, Laird of *Clesse*, That if *KNOX* da-  
 red to present himself to the Preaching-Place in his  
 Town and Church, he would cause him to be saluted  
 with a Dozen of Culverins, the most Part of which  
 should light upon his Nose. The Lords delibera-  
 ted on the Matter, and most were for not expo-  
 sing *Mr. Knox*; but when they came to consult  
 him he valued no Threats, but (*m*) boldly re-  
 solved

resolved to preach, and did preach, and preached against Idolatry from that Text in *Matt.* of the Ejection of the Buyers and Sellers from the Temple. In this Sermon he shewed the Duty of Magistrates and People to pull down Idolatry, and this he did with such Vehemence, and it had such an Effect upon the People, that not only the common People, but the Provost, Bailies, and Magistrates resolved to remove all the Monuments of Idolatry in that Place, and perform'd it accordingly; the Bishop taking Sanctuary with the Queen, who lay with her Army then at *Faulkland*, as before. The Queen, tho' she had no great Kindness for the Bishop, yet heard him upon this Occasion with great Concern and Attention, and resolved immediately to advance with her Army to *St. Andrews*, to punish the Offenders with the utmost Severity, and accordingly ordered her Army to march.

As the Queen was drawing towards them with her Forces, so they, *as before*, had sent about to all the rest of the *Congregation*, desiring them with all possible Speed to come to their Assistance: which they did with such Speed, that by the next Day they encreased from about 300 Men, Horse and Foot, to above 3000 well mounted and accoutred, and among them were some of the most eminent of the Nobility, such as the Earl of *Rothes*, the Lord *Ruthwen*, the Earl of *Argyle*, the Lord *James Stuart*, Earl of *Glencairn*, and others.

The Queen's Army marched all Night to surprize them, but found they had Intelligence of her March, were drawn up ready to offer her Battle, and resolved to give her a warm Reception: The Earl of *Ruthwen* led the Gentlemen of *Fife*, *Angus*, and *Mearns*, who made  
a Thou-

a Thousand Spears on Horseback: The Towns of *Dundie* and *St. Andrews* made a good Brigade of Foot, and were drawn up by themselves. When the Queen's Men saw the Order the Lords appeared in, and that they were so posted as that they could not be attackt but with great Hazard, she had recourse to her old Subtilty of treating with them, but they were not to be taken twice in one Snare: They refused to treat with her, and prepared to fight. — She sent Messengers again, who pressed them to treat, to prevent the Effusion of Blood; but they still declined it, and stood ready to engage, bidding her fall on with her *French* Cut-throats when she pleased, alledging, there was no Safety in treating with her. However, at length they consented to come to a Treaty on this Preliminary first settled, that an Assurance should be signed by the Duke of *Hamilton*, that all the *French* should be sent away over the *Firth*.

This was done, and is called in *Knox's History* (n) the Assurance, and is signed by the Duke of *Chattelerault* (*Hamilton*) and *Dosell*, a *French* Lord. This Assurance was, That in 8 Days, Messengers should be sent by the Queen to treat of a full Peace; but the Queen, who never regarded her Engagements in such Cases, never sent any Body to treat as she had promised, nor, it seems, did she intend it; but thought that upon this Treaty she should have an Opportunity to convey her *French* Troops safe out of *Fife*, and perhaps bring the Lords, in Confidence of her Treaty, to disperse their Men: The first of these she gain'd, but not the last.

The

---

(n) *Knox's Hist.* p. 155.

The Lords waited some Time, but finding no Body come, they, as Reason good, concluded the Treaty broken. — And from this Time forward they depended no more upon the Faith of Treaties, but upon their Arms: Many of the principal Nobility came in to them every Day, and instead of dispersing, they grew very strong; and first they march'd to *St. Johnston*, to deliver it from the Oppression of the Garrison which the Queen Regent had placed there: The Town was surrendered after some Difficulty, and the Bishop's House at *Scome* rifled and burnt, his Servants unadvisedly provoking the Multitude, whom the Lords had prevail'd with to let it alone.

From hence, fearing the Queen should intercept their advancing, which she was about to do, by marching her self to *Sterling*, and putting a Garrison into the Castle, they resolv'd to prevent her, and marching all Night, they took Possession of *Sterling*, and stopping there but Three Days, in which the Churches were stript of their Popish Ornaments, and the Abbey of *Cambuskenneth* demolished, they march'd on the Fourth Day for *Edinburgh*.

The Queen might, by this Time, have perceived, if her Eyes had been open, that the whole Nation was bent upon the Reformation, and that there was no resisting it; but God had hardened her Heart, and she would not understand what was visible to all the World; for the People of *Edinburgh* hearing the Lords of the Congregation were marching to them, did all the Work to their Hands, and left no Remnant of Popery in any of the Churches, even before the Lords got thither.

It was now the Year 1559, when the Lords marched to *Edinburgh*; in their Passage they took *Lithgo*, and were joined by Duke *Hamilton*, who now came over to them, and wherever they came, the Images, Altars, Pictures, and other Ensigns of Popery went to wreck.

I think 'tis a Piece of Justice to God's Providence, which no one ought to pass over, that in this Beginning of the Reformation, the Awe of the Work was on the Hearts of the Popish Party; for had they made the least regular Opposition, the Congregation might at first have been easily suppress'd.

(o) Bishop *Spotswood* in his History tells us, the Lords had but 300 Men in all their Company when they marched from *Sterling* to *Edinburgh*, and the Queen had near 3000 *French* Soldiers, besides the Popish Party, and their Adherents, who clave to her; and yet at the first News of their Approach, she fled to (p) to *Dunbar* with all her Forces, and durst not look them in the Face.

The Congregation being now Masters of the capital City, and the Queen and her Foreign Troops fled; they began to act in behalf of their Country's Liberty, as well as in religious Matters; This even by the Accounts which all the Historians of that Time give of it, will clear the first Reformers from the Slander that is so diligently cast upon them of making a tumultuary Reformation, or that it was only a Rabble of the meaner Sort, who were for Plunder,

---

(o) *Spotswood's Hist. lib. 111. fol. 126.*

(p) *Buchan. lib. 16. fol. 170. — Scotorum & Gallorum cohortes Mercenarias tantus terror invasit, ut cum omnibus que trahere poterant impedimentis Dunbarum perfugerent.*

der, and who, to enrich themselves with the Spoils of the Churches, ran into the Reformation meerly to justify their Robberies, and indemnifie the Depredations they had made upon the Church; for now they had not only Duke *Hamilton* at their Head, but a very great Number of the Nobility and Gentry were profest Managers of the Reformation, and the common People having, except in their Excesses about demolishing Idolatry, had little Hand in it but as directed by their Superiors.

Another Thing worth noting here is, that having now gotten Possession of *Edinburgh*, October 17. 1559. they appointed the reformed Ministers to (q) preach publickly in *Edinburgh*, which had not been openly done before in any Place, save just where their Army was assembled; but they saw an eminent Hand was with them, and as the Scripture says of *Jacob* when he journeyed from *Succoth*, the Fear of them fell on all the Cities round about.

Things standing in this Posture, (after Consultation in Council, says *Calderwood*) tho' he does not note that there was yet any stated Council of the Nation establish'd on their Side (r), they sent several Messages to the Queen about the settling Matters now in so much Disorder: The Queen had published a Proclamation, wherein she professed to be willing to refer Matters of Religion to a free Parliament, to meet in *January* next following, and gave Liberty of Preach-

D ing,

---

(q) *Scotorum proceres instauranda religionis principes complures in re ordinanda Diei morati, prater Edium sacrarum ad omni missificandi apparatu, repurgationem, verbo Dei sincere enun-  
ciando, concionatores constituerunt* ——— Ibid.

(r) *Calderwood's Hist. fol. 12.*

ing, &c. till then; but reproaches the Lords of the Congregation with rejecting all (s) reasonable Offers, shewing, that it is not Religion they seek, but the Subversion of Authority, and the Usurpation of the Crown. The Lords confront this with Letters to the Queen, and by open (t) Proclamation to the People. In both they call God to witness, that their only Intention is, to banish Idolatry, advance the true Religion, and defend the Preachers thereof, promising to continue in all Duty towards their Sovereign and her Mother the Regent, provided they might have these things secured to them, and offered, in the mean Time, to give Assurance of their Loyalty.

Several Messages and Returns pass'd between them, and a Meeting was appointed of 100 of a Side, to see, if possible, to accommodate Matters: The chief on the Reformers Side were the Earls of *Argyle* and *Glencairn*, Lord *Ruthven*, Lord *Boyd*, Lord *James Hamilton*, Lord *Ochiltry*, &c.

These could come to no Conclusion, and parted; and the Queen, on her Part, prepared to attack the Congregation: They kept together in *Edinburgh*, and prepared to defend it: The Duke of *Chatellerault* and the Earl of *Morton*, laboured to compose Things, and at last a Truce was agreed on, July 24, 1559.

By

(s) Spotswood, lib. 111. fol. 126.

Note. Buchanan takes no Notice of this part, and I do not take so much Care to trace J. Knox; because 'tis questioned whether that History be genuine or spurious, and Spotswood says positively the Latter.

(t) Spotswood, lib. 3. fol. 126, 127. The Particulars of these Letters, Proclamations, and Declarations are set down.

By this Truce the Protestants, on one Hand, were to be free in the Exercise of the reformed Religion, and the Papists were likewise to be unmolested; their religious Houses not insulted, nor their Tithes obstructed; the Congregation was to quit *Edinburgh*, but no Injury was to be done the Citizens, nor any Garrison put upon them; And all Things were to be referred to a Parliament, to meet on the 10th of *January* next.

Tho' the Queen Regent kept this Truce better than any before, yet it was not long; for a Thousand *French* Foot arriving to her Assistance, she began her usual Deviations, first with fortifying *Leith* for a Port, by which she might secure her Supplies, and secondly, sending for more Troops from *France*, by both which she visibly prepared for War.

This occasioned that famous Meeting at *Hamilton*, where the Lords of the Congregation agreed to write a common Letter to the Queen Regent, which was dated *September 29, 1559 (v)*, and subscribed by the Duke of *Chattellerault*, the Earls of *Arran, Argyle, Glencairn, and Monteth*, and abundance of Lords and Gentlemen.

The Congregation were so alarm'd at the fortifying of *Leith*, and the *French* Troops the Queen had fixed there; for she had now 2000 Foot more arrived, with Money, Arms, and Ammunition; that they gave Notice, by Letters, into all Parts of the Kingdom; and long Messages, Proclamations (w), Charges, and Recriminations

D 2

past

(v) *Spotswood, lib. 3. fol. 131. The Contents of the Letter.*

(w) *Ibid. 132, 133. See there the Queen's Proclamation, the Lords Declaration, the Lords Letter to the Queen at Leith, the Queen's Message by Lyon, King at Arms, to the Lords, &c.*

pass between the Queen Regent and them, in which they insisted upon the dismissing the Foreign Troops, and demolishing *Leith*; but all to no Purpose.

Upon this the Lords arm'd again, and advanc'd to *Edinburgh*: The Queen retreats to her new Fortifications at *Leith*, and with her *French* Forces and Friends, to the Number of 6000, shutting her self up there, sends Messages to the Duke and the Lords, by the Herald at Arms, charging them with Rebellion, &c.

The Lords convened a great Assembly, little less than a general Convention, wherein the Lord *Ruthven* was President; and having there considered how they had made all the peaceable Applications to the Queen Regent for their Liberties, both Civil and Religious; for the dismissing Strangers, and demolishing the Fortifications raised there, and having not been able to obtain Redress by Reason of the Obstinacy of the Regent, they began to deliberate how, reserving their Loyalty and Obedience to their Sovereign, and her lawful Authority, they might yet depose the exorbitant Power of the Queen Regent, or at least restrain it, as being exercised in Breach of the Laws, and injurious to the Authority and Royal Dignity of their Sovereign.

It was a bold Offer at that Time of Day, and startled the Assembly at first; some were for it, some against it, and they resolved to ask the Opinion of the Ministers about it. I have not Room here to insert the Messages, Declarations, Proclamations, &c. they are to be found at large, as noted below (x); for *Buchan-*

717

(x) Spotswood, *lib. 3. fol. 136, 137.*

*Knox's Hist. lib. 2. fol. 202.*

nan meddles not with them. But the Ministers Opinion I cannot omit.

The Ministers, who were called, were Two, Mr. *John Willock* and Mr. *John Knox*, whose Opinions are faithfully enough related by Mr. *Spotswood*, and agree with the Account in *Knox's History*, and are as follows:

*Mr. Willock* first gave his Opinion, ' That, albeit Magistracy be God's Ordinance, and that they who bear Rule, have their Authority from him, yet their Power is not so largely extended but that the same is bounded and limited by God in his Word: And albeit God had appointed Magistrates his Lieutenants on Earth, honouring them with his own Title, calling them Gods; yet did he never so establish any, but for just Causes they might be deprived: For even as Subjects, *said he*, are commanded to obey their Magistrates; so Magistrates have Directions given them for their Behaviour towards those they rule; and God, in his Word, hath defined the Duty both of one and the other. In deposing Princes, and those that have born Authority, God did not always use his immediate Power, but sometimes he used other Means, such as in his Wisdom he thought good; as by *Asa*, he removed *Maacha*, his own Mother; by *Jebu*, he destroyed *Foram*; and by divers others he deposed from the Government those whom he had established before by his own Word. From which, *he inferred*, That since the Queen Regent had denied her chief Duty to the Subjects of the Realm, which was to minister Justice indifferently, to preserve them from the Invasion of Strangers, and to suffer the Word of God to be freely preached; seeing also she was a Maintainer of

‘ Superstition, and despised the Counsel of the Nobility, he did think they might justly deprive her from all Regiment and Authority over them.’

*Mr. Knox coming to speak after, approv'd all that his Brother had said, adding this more, ‘ That the Iniquity of the Queen Regent ought not to withdraw their Hearts from the Obedience due to their Sovereign ; nor did he wish any such Sentence to be pronounced against her, but that when she should change her Course, and submit her self to good Council, there should be Place left to her of Regress to the same Honours from which, for just Causes, she ought now to be deprived.’*

*Mr. Spotswood is very angry (a) with the Ministers for Two Things here, in which, tho' he is a good Historian, he shews himself of a Party against them in behalf of the Doctrine of Passive Obedience, a Thing not much talk'd of in those Days.*

*First, He says, the Ministers should have refused to have meddled in this Matter, or to have given their Opinion.*

*Secondly, he says, the Examples they brought were not to the Case ; and then he subjoins his own Opinion, in which he takes upon him to condemn the Practice of Nations in deposing Tyrants (b), and rescuing themselves by Force from*

(a) Spotswood, lib. 3 fo. 137 *It had been a better and a wiser Part in these Preachers, to have excus'd themselves from giving any Opinion in these Matters; for they might be sure to have it cast in their Teeth, to the Scandal of their Profession.—*

(b) Spotswood, Hist. fol. 137. lib. 3. *Neither was the Opinion, they gave, sound in it self, nor had it any Warrant in the*

from Bondage and Slavery, when all other Means have been found to no purpose, *which was exactly the Case here.* But we all know when this good old Man wrote ; I mean, in an Age when these Nations lull'd asleep by the wheedling Arts of Tyranny, under the gay-painted Visor of Loyalty and Subjection, became Agents to their own Bondage. — But they have grown wiser since, which, if Mr. *Spotswood* had lived to see, I dare say he had so much good Sense and good Meaning in him, he must have altered his Opinion.

As to his first Objection — which strikes at the Discretion of the Ministers only, and charges their Prudentials, it may be briefly answered, that their Case differed : This was a Case begun in, and carried on for, the Matters of Religion : The Nobility and the Ministers had all along gone on Hand in Hand, aiding, assisting, and advising one another, and it would have been very unkind if the Ministers, in a Case of Conscience too, should have declined their Opinion to those Gentlemen who, at that Time, by their Instigation very much, *at least with their full Concurrence,* had ventured their Lives, Families, and Estates in the publick Affair of religious Liberty ; it had been abandoning their Friends, and which is worse, their Cause too.

D 4

Nor

---

*the Word of God : For howbeit, the Power of the Magistrates be limited, and their Office prescribed by God, and that they may likewise fall into great Offences : Yet it is no where permitted to Subjects to call their Princes in Question, or to make Insurrections against them, God having reserved the Punishment of Princes to Himself. [It were to be wish'd the Author had proved this last Affirmation.]*

Nor was this all, but the Case required it; for if it was *against their Opinions* that Authority might be resisted in Cases of Invasion of Right, *what did they there?* And if it was *their Opinion*, Silence had only signified that it was their Judgment, but that they *feared the chief Priests*, John xii. 42. *that is*, were Cowards, and durst not own their Principles.

Again, it was a general Convention of the Estates of *Scotland*, that on such an Emergency, demanded their Opinion; and this was to them the *lawful Authority* at that Time, and they ought not to have disobeyed them in any lawful Thing, if they esteem'd them a *lawful Authority*.

His Doctrine about deposing Rulers is on so many Occasions answered, both in Print, as also in the Practice of Nations, that I shall not take up any of these Sheets in it. But this I thought necessary to say in Defence of the Ministers of the first Reformation, I hope none of the Clergy of the Church of *England* will blame them, seeing they owe now the Settlement and Deliverance of their own Church from Popish Invasions to the same deposing Doctrine at the Revolution.

*But to return to the Story*: The Assembly, or Estates of the Kingdom, call them which we will, for some Historians call them one, some another, after the Ministers had given their Opinion, unanimously voted *the Regent out* of her Office, renounced their Obedience to her, and bid her and her *Frenchmen* depart.

They exhibited to her a long Charge, wherein they did not spare her; but setting out her false and treacherous Dealings with them, they

concluded thus (c): *Wherefore we, in the Name of our King and Queen, suspend and inhibit that publick Administration which you usurp under their Names.*

I have been the longer upon this Part of the Story, and shall atone for it in my Brevity in other Cases; because as the Reason of these Memoirs is to set the Matter of the past and present State of the Church of Scotland in a true Light, cleared from those Mists and Darkneſs which the partial Gloſſes of ſome late Patrons of Tyranny have ſpread over her Hiſtory; ſo theſe being ſome of the moſt capital Parts of her Progreſſion to the preſent happy Settlement which we ſee her now in, it is eſſential to my Work to leave this Part as clear and explicit as I can.

And it may be particularly pleaſant to the Friends of her Eſta bliſhment, to obſerve how wonderfully divine Providence has wrought for her, not barely in reſcuing her by Violence out of the Jaws of Superſtition, and its Handmaid Tyranny; but the ſame Providence has given a Sanction to the very Method, by obliging thoſe very People, who upbraid her with the Manner of her Eſta bliſhment, as being popular and tumultuary, and built on the Foundation of Rebellion, againſt lawful Authority, to be behold-  
ing

---

(c) *Buchan. lib. 16. fol. 172. Hæc ut, perinde ac debemus tuſamur, nos, Regum noſtrorum nomine, præſecturam, aut quocunq; alio imperii titulo publicam adminiſtrationem ſub regibus uſurpas, ſuſpēdimus ac inhibemus: Ut qui pro certo habeamus, quæ nunc à te geruntur, ea ſum eorum perpetua voluntate, erga publicam hujus Regni incolumitatem pugnare: Et quemadmodum tu nos Legitimos hujus Regni, & Regum Cives, pro Senatu, & Concilio publico non habes: Neq; nos te regentem aut magiſtratu ſuprema ſurgentem agnoſcimus.*

ing to the very same lawful Means for the Establishment they now are built upon.

Nor is there any Case that I meet with so parallel to the late Revolution in *England* as this Revolution in *Scotland*, and yet we are not of the Opinion that the Revolution in *England* was tumultuary at all.

They both began, and both were carried on by the same Methods, and no other, by which Nations oppressed, have, in all Ages, recovered their Liberty, and snatched themselves out of the Jaws of Tyranny and Oppression: Ways honourable, and justifiable by the Laws of God, of Nature, and of Nations.

I shall keep my Word, as to Brevity, in the following Part of the Story. — The Nobility having thus renounced the Regent, they sent to summon the Town of *Leith*; but the *French* had made it too strong to part with it so easily.

They were indeed formidable to the Congregation; for they had the Command of the Sea, and being at least 8000 Men well officer'd and disciplin'd, they transported themselves over into *Fife*, and ravaged the Country from *Sterling* Bridge to *St. Andrews*.

The Congregation had no proportioned Forces for this Work, nor wherewith to supply them; They sent to *England* and borrow'd 4000 Crowns for present Occasion; but the Queen, who had her Spies upon them, got Intelligence of it, and surpriz'd both the Man and the Money.

Their Affairs thus running backward, they came to the last and only Expedient, which was to put themselves under the Protection of the Queen of *England*, and seek Assistance. — And here it is to be noted, that the Presbyterians did not fly to Foreign Help to invade their Sovereign,

reign, as some will have it to be ; the Establishing the Reformation did not seek Foreign Help ; for the Nation having so universally embrac'd the Protestant Religion, there was not one in Ten to stand against them.

But the Case turned just the other Way : The Lords of the Congregation had, as has been related, engaged in the Reformation ; the Queen Regent had, by several Treaties, assented to it, Part, at one Time, Part at another ; but keeping no Faith with them, and resolving, if possible, to root them out — she flies to Foreign Aid & Mark it ; she brings in an Army of Strangers, takes Possession of their Towns, and fortifies 'em, in Order to support her in the tyrannical Measures she had taken.

To root out this Mischief the War began, and not meerly for Religion ; had the Nation been clear'd of Foreigners, on either Side, the Work had soon been done ; but being invaded by *France*, they flew to *England* for Help, and soon obtained it.

The Queen of *England*, upon a Treaty sign'd in her Name by the Duke of *Norfolk*, and in Name of the Duke of *Chastellerault* by Commission appointed, sent the Lord *Gray* with 2000 Horse, and 6000 Foot, and after that a Reinforcement of 2000 Foot more.

By these, after a long Siege, and an obstinate Resistance, the Town was at last surrendered, and the *French* Soldiers, by Capitulation, conveyed home to *France*.

During these Things, the Queen Regent had retired to the Castle of *Edinburgh*, where she fell sick, and soon after dyed. Some say, she broke her Heart for Grief that she was thus reduced. Bishop *Spotswood* says, That she sent for

for the Duke and the confederate Lords, before she died, and exhorted them to end this War, and send home both *French* and *English*: That she ask'd Pardon of all she had injured, and dyed very (d) christianly. But he quotes no Authority for it, neither do any other Historians, that I have met with, say any such Thing.

Her Death finished this first War, as I may call it, and hastened the Surrender of *Leith*, which held out but a little while; nor but that it might have held longer, and no doubt it would, the Garrison being resolute, well provided, and Relief expected; but the Queen of *England* and the King of *France* having brought Matters to a Treaty abroad, a Treaty at home followed of course; so Ambassadors, from either, met at *Edinburgh*, and a Truce being at first agreed on, the Capitulation and general Peace followed; and the 16th of July 1560, the *English* Army marched for *Barwick*, the *French* set sail for *France*, and a general Peace was made; in which, among other Articles, this glorious Stipulation was one, viz. That the REFORMATION WAS ACKNOWLEDG'D, and considering the Infancy of the Church, and the Difficulties her first Champions had waded through, it was a very great Step to her future Establishment.

The Death of the Queen Mother was followed by another Event, which had no less Influence upon the Affairs of *Scotland*, and this was,

---

(d) Spotswood, lib. 3. fol. 146. She sent for John Willock, the Preacher, (Bishop Spotswood would not call him Minister) and conferring with him a reasonable Space, declared openly that she trusted to be saved only by the Death and Merits of Jesus Christ, and thus ended her Life most christianly.

was, That the Queen became a Widow, *Francis II*, the King of *France*, dying the same Year, a few Months after his Mother-in-Law.

This gave a new Turn to the Affairs of *Scotland*, and the Popish Party was, and not without Cause, exceedingly surprized at it ; for they had before, the whole Kingdom of *France* concern'd to support them ; and their Queen being then married to the King of *France*, they had them jointly concerned in the Affairs ; whereas now, another King succeeding to the Crown of *France*, their Queen became but a Dowager, an Allie, and her Interest and Power would be the less to support her Friends in *Scotland*.

The Congregation had now the Government of the whole Kingdom in their Hands, and the Queen was, as we may say, at their Mercy : And this was a special Providence to them, as for settling the Reformation, so to clear up the Reputation of the Reformers, and purge them from the Charge the late Queen Regent had laid upon them, of aiming at the Subversion of the Government, and dethroning their Sovereign, to set up either Lord *James*, or the Duke of *Chattellerault* in her Place.

But this still tended to their Reputation, and to exonerate them as to the Charge ; for when the Regent was dead, the Queen a desolate Widow, and they had all the Power in their Hands, their upright Design could never better appear ; for they had no one to hinder their Project, if they had had it in their View ; but being sincerely bent for the Reformation of Religion, and the Establishment of their Civil Liberties, and aiming at nothing else, they applied themselves wholly to that Work, and no other, as will appear in the Pursuit of this Story.

In order to this, having dismiss'd the *English* Army, and shipp'd off the *French*, the first Thing that was done was, That in the great Church at *Edinburgh*; the Lords of the Congregation, and all the Gentlemen, their Adherents, who were there, met to give solemn Thanks to God for their Deliverance from the Tyranny of Foreigners, and establishing the true Religion, and their Civil Liberties.

Then says, Bishop *Spotswood* (a), for I must be particular here as to Authors, they distributed Ministers among the Burghs, and appointed Superintendents for the Direction of the Church Affairs.

I note this the rather here, because some Gentlemen, who are angry with the Church of *Scotland* for the present Establishment, would call this Superintendency an Infant Prelacy; and from thence argue, that the first Reformation was Episcopal, which Difficulty we shall see clear'd up as we go on.

*In the mean Time, it will receive its full Answer in these Two Observations.*

1. *They had no Power: What they were to do, or what Power they had for the planting or displacing Ministers in the Kingdom, had these two Things*

as-

---

(a) *Spotswood, lib. 3. fol. 149. Then were the Ministers, by common Advice, distributed among the Burghs; John Knox for Edinburgh, Christopher Goodman for St. Andrews, Adam Herriot at Aberdeen, &c. Besides these they did nominate (but he does not say who) for the Direction of Church Affairs: Some to be Superintendents, viz. Mr. John Spotswood for Louthian and Mers, Mr. John Winram for Fife, John Areskine of Dun for Angus and Mearns, Mr. John Willock for Glasgow, and Mr. John Keriswell for Argyle and Isles. With this small Number of Bishops (he would have called them) was the Plantation of the Church at first undertaken.*

attending it, which quite enervates the Bishop's Allegation, viz.

(1.) That it was all subservient to the Assembly of Ministers; nay, these Superintendents were subjected to the respective Presbyteries: They might be displac'd by them, and supply'd by them; and the Assembly does still, on extraordinary Occasions, depute or commission Ministers, in like manner, for the planting or displacing their Ministers, visiting of Churches, and the like.

(2.) They had neither Superiority of Dignity, or Enlargement of Stipend, or any other Thing which might invade that P A R I T Y which is profess'd by the Presbyterian Church.

2. The Case was extraordinary, and it is what is never practis'd in the Church but on extraordinary Occasions, of which this is allowed to be one; and there is no Question but on the like extraordinary Occasions, the like Offices would be made use of again, which, in short, were only Delegations, or Substitutions by and from the General Assembly: The Men had neither personal Dignity, nor personal Power; their Commission was temporary, and the Limitation of their Authority was such, as whenever the Bishops of the Church of England please to reduce themselves to, there is no Presbyterian Church in the World but would receive them.

The Debate therefore of this supposed Episcopacy must fall to the Ground, unless the Gentlemen that are for it, are content to subject Episcopacy to Presbytery; for the Assembly of Ministers, either General, Synodical, or Presbyterial had a Power over those Superintendents, and the Remark would be very well worth Note what a Kind of a Bishop it is these Gentlemen plead for.

The Superintendents were, in short, a temporary Expedient for the Necessity of the first planting the Church,

Church, and the Ministers, who appointed them, were the most antiepiscopeal in Principle that could be found, as we shall see presently. But I return to the Story.

The Lords having thus settled the Church's Affairs for the present, all Things rested till the Meeting of a Convention, or Parliament, which was appointed to be in *August* following.

Here another Dispute happened, which the Popish Party have still insisted on, *viz.* How this could be called a Parliament, since it was not called by the Queen, neither had her Majesty any Body there commissioned to represent her Person.

But the Treaty of Peace solv'd this; which being stipulated in the Name and by the Ambassador of the King and Queen, authorised the Council of Twelve; to call a Convention or Parliament, and this fully legitimated it, tho' there was no Person to represent the Sovereign.

In this Parliament all that had been done before was ratified; and having a sufficient Warrant, as before, for the holding this Parliament, they esteemed what Acts pass'd, Authentick, tho' the Queen afterwards refused to ratifie them, as we shall hear presently.

Four Acts pass'd in this Parliament, tho' they had not the Royal Assent till several Years afterward.

1. The Confession of Faith. Note, it pass'd in Parliament *August* 17, 1560.
2. An Act for abolishing the Jurisdiction and Authority of the Bishops.
3. Repealing, or annulling all former Acts made for the maintaining of Idolatry.
4. For punishing the Sayers and Hearers of Mass.

A Messenger was sent over to the Queen with these Acts, to desire her Majesty to sign them; but the Queen would not so much as give an Answer to him, but treated him with the utmost Contempt. However, the Acts being past, the Assembly was dissolved, and this was the first Settlement of the Reformation.

It is to be observed here, that the Articles of the Confession of Faith, contain all the *doctrinal Part* of the Reformer's Profession; but have not one Word of the *Discipline* or *Government* of the Church; nor was the Form of Worship settled here: And to this it is needful to say something; because great Pains are taken here to make the first Reformation look as if it had been *Episcopal*.

That they had a Form of Discipline and Worship before this, is (c) allowed by all Historians, which was the Order of *Geneva*; the new one *Spotswood* calls the Form of (d) Church Policy.

It is necessary to digress a little here to the Story of Mr. *John Knox*. He had been long at *Geneva*, and was Minister of the *English Church* there: He had also been at *Frankfort*, where the *English*, who fled from Queen *Mary's* Persecution, had a Church, and Mr. *Knox* preaching there, a Difference arose about the *English Service-Book*, which drove him back to *Geneva*.

E

Here

---

(c) *Calderwood's History*, fol. 14. Before the Confession of Faith was formed, and the Book of Discipline contrived, the reformed Kirk had that Book which is before the Psalms in Meeter for their Direction in Discipline and external Worship; which Book is called in the Book of Discipline, the Book of common Order, or the Order of the Church at Geneva.

(d) *Spotswood*, lib. 3. fol. 152. In the Convention kept at Edinburgh in January preceding, a Form of Church Policy was presented, and delivered to be ratified.

Here he drew the Model of Church Government, which he after presented to the Reformers in *Scotland* for the Scheme of theirs; and by this was that Book of Polity or Discipline formed which we are now to treat of. Some Historians have called it *John Knox's Work*; Others say, it was done by a (e) Committee.

They that would call it *John Knox's*, strive to do it because the Article of Superintendents being mentioned in this Book of Discipline, they would have *John Knox* be acknowledged to be of Episcopal Principles.

But I conceive, that all this Dispute about the Superintendents would be at an End, if it were examined, whether these Superintendents were not really Bishops? And whether the true Episcopacy is not plainly to be reduced to the ministerial Function? So that this is so far from justifying the Authority, Dignity, and Superiority of Bishops, as now practised, that it rather brings down the Bishops to the Station of those Superintendents, the utmost of whose Authority is by *Dr. Rule* plainly proved to be very consistent with *Presbyterian Parity*, a Thing which, if well (f) considered, would soon put an End to this Debate.

This Book of Discipline, however, could not obtain, with the Lords, to a general Assent, whether *Mr. Knox* formed it or not; 'tis plain he ex-

(e) Commission was given to *M<sup>r</sup>. John Winram, John Spottwood, the Bishop's Father, John Willock, John Douglas, John Kew, and John Knox*, to draw up a Book of Policy and Discipline of the Church, as they had done of the *Dodrine*.

(f) *Spottwood, lib. III. fol. 174.* It had been fram'd by *John Knox*, partly in Imitation of the reformed Churches in *Germany*, and partly of that he had seen at *Genova*.

exceedingly press'd to have it pass'd in the Convention. Bishop *Spotswood* says, the Estates at that Time did not think it meet to enter into the Examination of the Polity. By this he would insinuate, that the Reformation was settled in general, as to Doctrine, and that all agreed in the Suppression of Popery; but that the Manner, Order, Polity, or Discipline of the Church was left uncertain and undetermined. But neither will this answer: For tho' as an Assembly or Convention they did not sign it, yet as private Men, the whole Body of the first Reformers, who had been called *The Congregation*, and who had done all the Work, signed it — These were the Duke of *Chatellerault*, the Earls of *Arran*, *Argyle*, *Glencairn*, *Marshall*, *Monteith*, *Morton*, and *Rothel*; Lords, *James Hamilton*, *Yester*, *Boyd*, *Ochiltrie*, *Sanguhar*, *Lindsay*: And Abundance of the Gentry, Barons, and Burgessees, with one Bishop, *viz.* of *Galloway*, and the Dean of *Murray*.

But to go on with our History.

Thus far the Convention had acted in behalf of the Church: (1.) They pull'd down, and by an Act, abolished Popery for ever. (2.) They declared the Confession of the Protestant Faith, and pass'd the Articles of it into an Act: And thus they set the Church upon her own Legs, and then left her to settle and fix her self upon such Foundations of Discipline and Government as she should determine.

In order to this, the first General Assembly of the Church of *Scotland* sat down at *Edinburgh*, the 20th of *December*, 1560.

Their chief Work was appointing and receiving Ministers, and that alone determined, that the very Office of Superintendent was subjected

to the Assembly; but if that did not, we shall see in a few Years they take upon them to limit, approve, and disapprove their Actions.

Even in this first Assembly, the other Party made some Struggle about the Authority of assembling without the Queen's Command, and as this has been a Point frequently push'd at since, and once not very long ago, and may, in Time, come to be push'd at again, it cannot be amiss to set down the Argument then used, which, in short, was this principally.

They had then a Popish Queen, who, unwillingly, stoop'd to Necessity in the Reformation, their Words are these, *viz. if the Liberty of the Kirk should depend upon the Allowance and Disallowance of the Sovereign, we may be deprived, not only of Assemblies, but of the publick Preaching of the Gospel. Take from the Church the Freedom of Assemblies, and you take from us the Reformation; for how shall the Government of the Church be supported, Order and Unity in Doctrine be maintained, but by the Liberty of holding Assemblies, and keeping up the judicial Authority of the Church entire.* This way of Arguing was never yet answered, and, I presume, will not easily be answered.

It was then moved, in the Assembly, that the Queen might be desired to ratifie the Book of Discipline, but it was deferred for that Time.

The Queen was now returned to Scotland, *an.* 1561, and began to take Cognizance of her Affairs, in which she very early discovered her Dislike of what was doing, and her general Aversion to the Reformation.

It seem'd, however, that the Queen, enclined to stoop to the Necessity of the Times, and to acquiesce in the new Church Settlement, with allowing her the Liberty of her own Opinion,  
and

and to have Mass said in private in her own Chappel — but this gave great Offence, and the Ministers particularly insisted upon it, that it was against their Engagements for the abolishing Idolatry, and, inculcating this on the People, the Queen found she lost very much of their Affection by it, and not only so, but met with some Affronts in it also. However, resolved to support, not only her Authority, but her Party, she proceeded warmly.

She put the Provost of *Edinburgh* into the Castle, and obliged the Citizens to choose another. This was done for their forbidding the Popish Priests to be received into the Town. She then commanded the Town-Council of *Edinburgh* to choose a new Provost, which they, for Fear, at that Time complied with. Next by Proclamation, she made the City of *Edinburgh* free, as she term'd it, for all her Subjects to repair to on their lawful Occasions. This restor'd the Papists: And here she not only had the better of the City, but really seem'd to have some Right on her Side, and therefore the Lords did not stand by the Citizens in it as was expected.

Indeed the Court being now formed, and the Queen acting with great Candour in other Things, the Nobility began to be drawn in by Offices, Sallaries, and Preferments; together with the Emulation and Ambition, usual in such Cases; so that the Lords, who were before, the most zealous for the Reformation, tho' they retained their sincere Profession of the Protestant Religion, yet they remitted much of their former Zeal, and seem'd to be drawn off from their Strictness in the Prosecution of, and their warm Application to the great Work of all. And

this our Historians, of both Parties (*a, b*), very much complain of, as if they had abandoned the Reformation: However, they soon gave good Evidence to the contrary.

Little pass'd now for some Time in the Affairs of the Reformation, the Assembly had their constant Dyets, and peaceably proceeded in Church-Affairs, as Matters presented: The Queen suffered them to go on, but at the same Time she shewed, on all Occasions, that she secretly resolved to cut them short, as Opportunity should present.

In this interval one Thing happened which might have shewn her, that the Protestants, their Religion being but secured to them, were very loyal to her Person, and to her Government also; for in the Insurrection, which about that Time was raised by *Huntley* and the *Gordons*, she saw the Papists in Arms against her, and the Lord *James Stuart*, who was now Earl of *Murray*, and was the most zealous Reformer, fighting for her with a Band of Protestants at the Battle at *Corrichie*, where *Huntley* was routed, and kill'd, and all his popish Party scattered.

The

---

(a) Spotswood, *lib. 4. fol. 183.* Some of the Noblemen who had, in former Times, shewed themselves most zealous against the Toleration of Idolatry, were grown a little more cold by the Flatteries of the Court; and all of them emulous of each other's Greatness, were striving who should be in most Favour with the Queen.

(b) Calderwood, *Hist. fol. 34.* The Courtiers and Lords depending upon the Court, came not to the Assembly; but the Day following, to avoid Suspicion, they came: These he names, viz. The Duke, the Earls of Argyle, Murray, Glencairn, Morton, Rothes, &c. The very Authors and Beginners of the Congregation:

The long Accounts now intervene in our Histories of the Queen's proposed Interview with the Queen of *England*, and how the Papists disappointed it, from the very same Principles which they did the Interview of King *James V.*, and *Henry VIII.*, of *England* long before. Also the History of the Queen's Amours with the Lord *Darnley*, and that wretched Marriage from whence so many Mischiefs ensued; how the Exorbitance of *David Rizzio* brought not only his own Ruin upon his Head, but the exasperated King running into the unhappy Excess of Jealousie and Murther, so alienated the Queen from him, as to run her into the same Extreame of Murther and Revenge: And this upon the very Person of her Husband: These are sad Stories, and as they have no Concern in this Work, so I am not delighting enough in such tragical Relations, as to make a Digression here to introduce them, neither do they relate at all to the Affairs of the Church. To which I return.

Soon after the Defeat of the *Gordons*, the Queen calls a Parliament; when she made so many Concessions to the Protestants that some blind sort of People began to fancy the Queen would come over to the reformed Religion: But she soon undeceived them.

For the Match between the Queen and the Lord *Darnley* now coming forward, the Protestant Nobility took Umbrage at the Consequences, the Lord *Darnley* professing himself *Papish*.

The Queen summon'd the Estates of the Kingdom to *Sterling*, to give their Assent to her Marriage.

There was little Opposition made in that Parliament, either to that or any Thing else; the Nobility, in Complaisance to the Queen, complying

Plying more readily than was expected, only one (c) Lord opposing it. But the Papists shew'd themselves so much exalted, and behaved with so little Caution in their Hopes, that it occasioned great Jealousie among the Nobility, and was partly the Occasion of what followed; for no sooner was this Assent of the Estates to the Marriage made publick, but the People fell into a Rage, saying, that the Lords of the Estates had broke in upon their Engagements, and would overthrow the Reformation: Several Tumults also happened, particularly in *Edinburgh*, which the Queen prosecuted with great Severity,

But now the Lords, of whom I noted before that they were suspected to be yielding too much to the Court, began to open their Eyes and come to themselves, joining themselves together to oppose this Marriage, and to maintain the Reformation.

The General Assembly of the Church was sitting at the same Time, and as all People began to entertain Jealousies of the Queen's Designs, and strong Apprehensions filled the Heads of those that were most concern'd for Religion, seeing the Queen resolv'd to support Popery, and that she was now going to strengthen that Interest with a Popish Match: So they formed a Petition to her Majesty, containing Eight Heads. The 2d Article, of which was, That  
the

---

(c) *Spotswood, lib. 4. fol. 189. Lord Ochiltry only opposed it openly, professing that he would never consent to admit a King of the Popish Religion.*

*Ibid. lib. 4. fol. 190. The Barls of Murray, Argyle, Glencainn, and Rothes, assisted by the Duke of Chatellerault, meeting together at Sterling, after the Queen was gone, resolv'd to oppose the Marriage.*

the Protestant Religion should be openly professed by all Persons, and by the Queen her self. The Queen's Answer, very sharp and satirical, is, with the Articles of the Petition, set down at large in *Spotswood's* (d) History, where in she rejects their Petition, and tells them plainly she will not change her Religion, nor put the Patronage of Benefices out of her Hands.

Tho' they could expect no other Answer, yet this inflamed Matters, and serv'd to fix the Confederation, and restore the Zeal of the Nobility, who had now begun to oppose her, and in which she afterwards found her Ruine.

The Match was now fix'd, and the Queen married to the Lord *Darnley*, in July 1564, disregarding the Representation of the discontented Lords, who openly profess'd it to be against the Liberties of the Kingdom, and began to arm.

The Queen prepar'd to oppose them, and march'd towards *Sterling*, and the King with her; but the Lords, not prepared for Resistance, fled to *Paisly*, near *Glasgow*; from thence, being followed by the Queen's Forces, they fled to *Hamilton*, thence to *Edinburgh*, then separated, some fled to *England*, and some reconciled themselves to the Queen: Thus the first Beginnings of this Fire were quenched for a while, and the People quieted, who nevertheless were zealous in the Cause, tho' discouraged by these unhappy Beginnings. The Nobility being thus dispersed for some Time, the Protestant Cause seem'd to lie bleeding. The Lords, who fled to *England*, obtained the Queen of *England* to interceed

---

(d) *Spotswood's History*, lib. 4. fol. 190, 191.

ced for them by her Ambassador ; but she was, as it were, (d) bid to mind her own Business, and not to concern her self in these Matters.

The Duke of *Chateaubault* seeing the Queen both resolute and powerful, made his Peace, and was well received.

The Assembly met as usual, and solicited the Queen still to encrease and settle the Stipends of their Ministers, in which they did at length obtain some Supply ; but in the Affair of Religion it self, they received no Satisfaction at all.

The Broils of the Court, and the Murder of *David Rizzio* began the Year 1565. *Spotswood* in his History, fol. 195, makes very good Remarks on this, viz. That it had been much better to have brought him to publick Justice, and executed him by the Hand of (e) the Hangman ; for it brought on all the Miseries which followed, one on the Neck of another, almost to the Ruin of the Nation, and effectually to the Ruin of the King, and in the End, of the Queen also.

The Queen resolved to ruin the Lords, who were fled, called a Parliament, to forefault or attract them : In this Parliament, say (f) some, she designed to make *Rizzio* Chancellor, and this

(d) Spot. fol. 192. *The Messenger had his Answer in Writing, viz. That Queen Elizabeth would do well to have no meddling with the Affairs of Scotland, but leave them to the Discretion of their Princes ; seeing neither she nor her Husband did offer to trouble themselves with her Subjects.*

(e) Buchanan says, they designed to hang him publicly, but that Morton, and his Men, had not Patience enough with him.

(f) *Spotswood, lib. 4. fol. 195: The Queen designing he should act as Chancellor in this Parliament, Morton who, after Huntley's Death, had supplied that Place, took it as an Affront to him.*

this occasioned *Morton's* falling upon him. Others say, he had plotted the Destruction of the Nobility, and had proposed to the Queen the cutting them off by way of Massacre. Again, he is charged with a scandalous Familiarity with the Queen, which, whether it were true, or that it was suggested to the King to irritate him, and bring him to be concerned in the Fact, is not material farther than this; that by it, the Enmity between the Queen and him, which was before begun, was made so irreconcilable, that as *he never rested* till he had caused the *Italian* to be murdered, the *Queen never rested* till she had caused her Husband to be murdered, and divine Justice, after all, *never rested* till it had caused her to be murdered; so that Blood followed Blood till that whole Knot was destroyed. And thus the Enemies of the Reformation made Way, by their own Destruction, for the more legal and more peaceable compleating of this great Work of the Reformation, to the Glory of God, and the Honour of true Religion, as shall presently appear.

The Murder of this obscure Fellow however had this Influence, that upon this Prospect of the Lords of the Court engaging with the King against *David Rizzio*, the banished Lords took Courage to come home, and the Parliament being sitting, offered themselves to Tryal, and no Body appearing against them, the Lords being all bandyed into Parties on the other Occasion, they were acquitted; again the Queen terrified with the Strength of her Husband's Party, and the Resolution which they appeared to have taken, fac'd about to the Lords that had fled, received them into Favour, and bent her Fury at the Murderers of her Favourite.

In this juncture she was brought to Bed of a Son, who was afterwards King *James VI*, who was born in *Edinburgh Castle* on the 19<sup>th</sup> of *June*, in a little Room facing the *Castle-Hill*, which is still remembered as the Birth-Place of that King. 'Tis reported she was so irritated at the King for the Murder of *Rizzio*, that she had determined to destroy the Child, as not bearing to nourish any Thing of his begetting. I do not say this was any more than a Report; but it gives us a Hint of the Spirit that then reigned, and she having, as there is Reason to believe, at the same Time resolved to murder the Father, it might not be improbable she had as barbarous Thoughts towards the Child. But God had other Designs to bring to pass in this Birth, whether for the Good or Ill of the Church of *Scotland*, the Consequence will make appear.

Another Note is made here upon this Prince, how justly I will not determine, *viz.* That the Fright and Terror his Mother was in, at the drawn Swords which were in the Hands of the Persons employed in this Attempt, (for *Rizzio* was fallen upon in her Presence) so far influenc'd the Child in her Womb, that his Retentives generally fail'd him at the Sight of Weapons ever after. — *But this by the Way.* 'Tis no Scandal to say of him, he was no Man of War.

The Assembly being then sitting, they sent some of their Number to congratulate the Queen on the Birth of a Son, and humbly to desire the Prince might be baptized into the Protestant Church: The Queen gave no Answer to it at that Time, but very effectually made a Reply to it afterwards, causing him to be baptized after the Popish Manner, at *Sterling Castle*, by the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*.

The Church now began to see which Way Things were going ; for the Queen not only honoured the Archbishop of St. *Andrews* with the baptizing the Prince, but gave him also a Commission, whereby he was restored to his ancient Jurisdiction in several Things, which clash'd with their Authority ; such as confirming Testaments, Collation to Benefices, &c. both which being directly contrary to the Acts of Parliament, which established the *Reformation*, and to the true Interest of the Protestant Settlement, the Assembly was exceedingly alarm'd at it ; but finding it in vain to address the Queen any more, they formed a Paper in manner of an Appeal ; but called it a Supplication, directed, *as appears in the Title*, to the Nobility and Lords of the secret Council, who had profess'd Jesus Christ, and who had renounced the *Roman Antichrist* : These Proceedings on both Sides, ripened Things for the sudden Change which soon after followed.

The Murther of the King was the next Tragedy that came on the Stage of this unhappy Court : The Queen, after her being delivered of a Son, and, if she had the wicked Design of murthering it, being prevented the Execution of that Murther, retired to *Alloway*, a House of the Earl of *Mar*, near *Sterling* ; the King followed her, but was refused Admittance, (she resolving to have no more of his Race, as she openly declared) and was treated with great Contempt. — Upon this the King, (say some, with Grief (g), others say, by Poyson) fell sick, and was carried

---

(g) Buchanan, *Hist. Eng.* says, he fell sick : The Queen having given him Poyson, which, working before its Time, brake out all over his Body, and so Nature expelled the Poison.

carried to *Glasgow*. The Queen, after some Time, whether she relented at her Usage of him, or whether in the Plot for his Ruine, or whether *Bothwell* formed his Destruction upon an Apprehension of the Queen's being reconciled to him at that Time, is uncertain to this Hour; but she went to visit him, and after some Words they were openly reconciled again, and the King was, at the Queen's Appointment, carried to *Edinburgh*, where he had not been many Days but he was most barbarously murdered in his Bed, and the House blown up with Gunpowder, as by the Histories of those Times more largely is to be seen.

It is not to the Case to enquire here into the Manner and Circumstances of this Barbarity, and who did it, of all which, Authors also (*h, s*) differ. All agree that it was vilely contrived between the Queen and *Bothwell*, and more vilely executed by *Bothwell*, sither in Person or by his Agents.

But I am, by the Course of Things, hastening to the great Revolution which now happened, and which all these horrid Things were but as so many preparatory Steps to bring to pass.

First, the abominable Marriage between *Bothwell* and the Queen, which was brought to pass soon after, which made the Matter so black that nothing could be worse, next to owning the  
Fact,

(*h*) *Spotwood*, lib. 4. fol. 200. -- says -- *Bothwell* came upon him, in the Night, as he lay asleep, and strangled him --  
(*i*) *Buchanan* says, it was the Conspirators, but seems not to be positive, that *Bothwell* did it with his own Hands, tho' he owns him in the Conspiracy.

Fact, viz. That a Woman should link her self in Marriage to the Murtherer of her Husband.

*Secondly*, Her Behaviour at the Parliament which then approach'd, where she positively refused all that was desired of her in behalf of the Reformation, and behaved with a quite different Air from all she had done formerly.

*Thirdly*, Manifest Designs and secret Attempts of the Queen to get the Custody of her Son out of the Hands of the Lord *Mar*, who claim'd it by Birth as hereditary Keeper of the King's Children.

The first Step to what followed was by the Earl of *Arbol*, who, fully satisfied of the Guilt of *Bothwell* in the Murther of the King, and meditating how he might with most Base bring him to Justice, begins to start among the Nobility his just Suspicions, that the same Villainy might be practis'd upon the Infant as had been upon the Father.

Upon this the Protestant Lords appoint a Meeting at *Sterling*, in order to protect and secure the Person of the *Prince*: And in this Meeting the Destruction of Popery, Treason, and Murther took its Rise: They all met with their Fate together, and this abominable Generation, with their short liv'd Joy, vanished in Stink and Smoak, being grown noysome to the whole World by the most horrid Actions that were ever read of.

The Queen, hearing of this Meeting, and that the Lords had entered into Bond, one to another, for mutual Assistance, pretends a Journey, to visit the Borders, and thereby, according to Custom, summons the Subjects to attend her with Arms and Provisions for 15 Days: Upon this, a Rumour being spread that the Queen

Queen design'd to seize on the young Prince, and take him from the Earl of *Mar*, the Lords aforesaid take Arms, the Queen publishes a Declaration that she does not design to remove the Prince; but this not satisfying the Lords, they surround her in *Brothwick* Castle, but not being able entirely to invest the Place, *Bothwell* and the Queen make their Escape to *Dunbar*, and then, tho' too late, she raises Forces.

The Lords advanc'd to *Edinburgh*, and the Queen to *Musfelburgh*, but when the Armies faced one another, the Queen's Men did not care to fight, *Bothwell's* Guilt was too great, his Heart fail'd him, and he ran away: The Queen, who had both more Courage and more Presence of Mind, staid, but was obliged to put her self into the Hands of the Lords, who carried her to *Edinburgh*, and from thence, shewing her indeed but very little Respect, sent her Prisoner to the Castle of *Loch-Leven*. Thus ended the Reign of Popery in *Scotland*, I mean barefac'd profess'd, down right Popery; as for Popery in Masquerade, eventual Popery, disguised Popery, 'tis but a very few Years since that went off the Stage also; and we shall, in the Course of these Memoirs, see many a Farce of its acting, and some bloody Tragedies also, till at length it vanish'd with as much Contempt as the other.

*Bacchanian* tells us (k) that when the Queen had surrendred her self to the Lords, the second *Battalia*,

---

(k) *Ruch. lib. 18. fol. 195. Cum ad secundam aciem pervenisset, concursus ab omnibus clamor sublatus est, ut meretricem, ut parritidam trémarent. Erat in militari quodam vexillo depictus Hæticus Rex murtuus, & juxta filius Infans vindictam paritidæ a Deo opposens: 14 signum. duo milites inter duos hostes dissentium, quoq; se videret, ob oculos ei objiciebant*

*salia*, or Line of the Men, when she came among them, used her very barbarously, and cried out for putting her to Death, painting a Standard with the murdered King and his little Son lying by him, and displaying it before her.

It was, without doubt, a very great Revolution, and in it the Justice of Heaven visibly pursued the Murder of the King, the Barbarity of which hath hardly had its Parallel in any Age: And as this is one of the Reasons why I enter into that Part of the Story, so tho' I cannot go through all the Particulars, yet I cannot but remind the Reader of one nice Reflection, *viz.* That tho' Queen *Elizabeth* is blam'd, and perhaps justly, for putting her to Death afterwards; yet it is plain it was the Work of a superior Power, and that Vengeance, which followed them all, suffered her not to live.

*Bothwell*, who had been the chief Contriver and Actor of the whole Tragedy, never saw her more; he fled to *Shetland*, an Island in the North, where, for a while, he turned Pirate; but being beaten from thence, he fled to *Denmark*, where he was taken up, by the King's Order, and kept in a loathsome Prison, and being reduced to extream Poverty, lived about Ten Years in a Jail, and at last died raving mad.

The Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, who, as *Buchanan* relates, had been one of those that voluntarily undertook the Murder, was hang'd by the Regent, the Earl of *Murray*; being taken in the surprize of *Dunbarton Castle*.

*John Hamilton*, who was one of the Actors, dyed of Grief, after he confest the Murder to a Priest the School-Master at *Paisley*.

Even *Morton* himself, who had the least Concern in it, and at most was no otherwise guilty than that he knew of it, and concealed it, after it was done, was beheaded for that Concealment many Years after at the Cross of *Edinburgh*.

The Queen's Guilt was particularly demonstrated by her own Letters, taken in *Bothwell's* Silver Cabinet; where, under her Hand, she transacted the whole Affair with him; and among which was a Contract of Marriage, signed by her own Hand, to him, in her Husband's Life, to be consummated after he should be dispatched (1).

These Things made her Guilt so plain, that her Name became odious to all the World: And the Regent afterward made them all so plain to every Body's Understanding, when he was at *London*, and when the Queen of *England* enquired of the Reasons why they deposed their Sovereign, that, the same Author says, Queen *Elizabeth* declared, she was not worthy to be assisted.

And

---

(1) *Buth. lib. 19. fol. 201. Ibi, dum & rerum, uti gesta fuerant, explicatus fuisset ordo, & prolata coram, qui, sceleris in regem commissi, erant conscii, Testimonia, ante mortem expressa, ordinum item decreta, quibus multi, ex prorigis accusatoribus, subscriperant; arcula demum argentea in medium est allata, quam a Francisco, priore Marito, acceptam regina Bothuelio dederat, in ea inerat littera Regine manu Gallico sermone conscripta ad Bothwellium, in quibus omnibus, amoris ejus erga Bothwellum impotentia, consilium, ratio cadis regia, & post eadem, raptae: Item cum eodem matrimonii contractus tres; Primus ante parricidium, ipsius Regine manu scriptus, quo, velut Syngrapha spondet ei, ubi primum sui juris foret, se nupturam — Hæc omnium oculis exposita & in concilio perlecta, totum facinus ita subjecerunt oculis, ut nulla dubitatio de auctore amplius esse possit —*

And yet after all this Averſion manifeſted to her Perſon, and Detestation of her Crime, ſhe formed ſuch Parties among the People, who, after the firſt Heat, began to relent and commiserate her, that ſhe found Means to eſcape out of *Lochleven* Caſtle, and raiſe new Commotions.

In the mean Time the Nobility conſidered of ſettling the Government, and of entirely depoſing the Queen: The firſt Step to this was, by procuring her to demit or reſign the Crown: She at firſt reſolutely oppoſed it, but afterwards ſign'd (m) any Thing they brought her, as 'tis ſaid, without ſo much as reading it, upon this Foundation, that being under Confinement, nothing ſhe did now could be binding upon her for the future.

Thus ſhe ſigned ſeveral Inſtruments, one for the Surrender of the Crown, renouncing and demitting the Government in Favour of her Son, commiſſioning the Lords for his ſolemn Inveſtiture: One other was a Power to ſome Noblemen to make the ſolemn Reſignation, in her Name, in the publick Meeting of the States: One other was for nominating the Earl of *Murray*, who was then in *France*, Regent of the Kingdom in the Minority of her Son: And the other for naming Governours to her Son. But afterwards when ſhe made her Eſcape out of

---

(m) *Spotwood, lib. 4. fol. 211, She was perſwaded to it by Robert Melvill, who was ſent from the Earls of Arhol and Lethington, to adviſe her as ſhe loved her Life not to reſuſe them any thing they ſhould require. He likewiſe brought a Letter from Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, the Ambaſſador from England, to the ſame Effect, declaring, That no Reſignation, made in the Time of her Captivity, would be of any Force, and in Law was null, becauſe done out of a juſt Fear.*

*Lochbrum*, she revok'd all those Writings as done by her under the Restraint of a Prison, and under Terror of her Life; which they say the Lord *Lindsay* threatned when he came to her with the Instruments. However, the Lords took her at her first Word, and in the mean Time proceeded upon the Authority of these Demissions, and having put all other Things in order, they proclaimed her Son King of *Scotland*, and crown'd him July 29, anno 1567, and made *James*, Earl of *Murray*, Regent, tho' then absent in *France*. This is the same I have always call'd Lord *James*, being the Queen's half Brother, who was after call'd the good Regent, and who was, under God, the blessed Instrument of the establishing the Reformation in *Scotland*.

The Queen, as I noted, having made her Escape, raises an Army about *Hamilton*, the Regent, tho' inferiour in Number, marches to *Glasgow*, and at *Langside*, a Village not far from *Glasgow*, gives her Battle, and her Forces being overthrown, she fled into *England*.

There she past a long Imprisonment, by Order of Queen *Elizabeth*, during which for carrying on innumerable Plots and Contrivances against the said Queen and her Subjects, she was at last brought to the Block, on Pretence of conspiring against the *English*. — Whether their Pretence against her was just or no, I do not determine; but that Justice pursued her, as is said before, for the most abominable Fact above, I mean the Murder of her Husband, I think is plain from all Histories of those Times.

The Realm was now under the Conduct of the Regent, the King an Infant, and they had brought the Queen to make a Kind of Assent to the crowning her Son, and to appoint him

**Governours.** The Regent managed with a Prudence not to be described; in Diligence unwearied, in Action undaunted, in Government sagacious, in Religion zealous, and exceeding pious, in Life sedate, and in his violent Death patient and resigned. — He was barbarously intrusted by *James Hamilton*, set to work by the Queen's Party: He shot him through the Body in the Street at *Leith*, as he was riding out of the Pallace amidst a great Throng of the People crowding to see him: The Murderer made his Escape out of a Back-Door, and could not be apprehended!

Upon this Disaster, great Contention followed among the several Parties: The Nobility came several Times together in order to chuse a new Regent, and parted without bringing it to a Conclusion, and the Queen's Party grew very strong, particularly the City of *Edinburgh* sided with her. At last *Matthew*, Earl of *Lennox*, Father to the late murdered King, was chosen Regent.

He carried on the War against the Queen's Party, and taking Possession of *Leith*, had several Skirmishes with her Troops, as at *Leith*, *Dalkeith*, and other Places; but at last he is surprized at *Sterling*, with a great many of the Nobility and Gentry, by a Party of the Queen's Men, who take the Town by Surprize, and took the Regent, the Earl of *Morton*, and sundry other Prisoners; but the Queen's Men being beat out of the Town again, and forc'd to quit their Prisoners, the Regent was shot through by him that had him Prisoner, because he could not carry him off; for which Fact he was afterwards hang'd, as he well deserved.

The Lord *Essex*, E. of *Mar*, was then chosen Regent; but the Queen's Interest was so strong at that Time, and the King's so weak, that there was great Danger of a new Turn in Affairs, and Popery began to hold up its Head; but they had the Pleasure of being disappointed in that Particular also, by the Turn of Affairs in *England* with the Queen; who, on a Discovery of her Plot there with the Duke of *Norfolk*, was cloistered, confined, and afterwards, tryed for her Life, and beheaded: With her fell all the Hopes of Popery in *Scotland*. But the Church found other Enemies to struggle with, in some Respects, as fatal to her Prosperity as the Papists, of which we shall find Cause to speak more particularly in the Second Part of this Work.

But to return to the Affairs in Hand. As this Revolution was against the Interest of the Queen and her Party, so it was a farther, and, I think, I may call it a compleat Establishment of the Church; for whatever Factions and Parties were form'd in the State, the Nobility frequently changing Parties as their Interests and Fortunes guided them, yet they all joined in the Matter of the Reformation, and the confederated Lords were entirely in the Interest of Religion: But to look into this we must go back again to the first seizing the Queen.

The Earl of *Murray* being declared Regent, as above, was, while he lived, a very great Furtherance to the Establishment of the Church: That great Man being not only a vigorous and constant Friend, to the Reformation, but a most pious, religious and sincere Professor of it himself.

Things being in so good a Posture for the Church, when the Queen was taken Prisoner, the

## [ XXI ]

the first Parliament was holden at *Edinburgh* December 19, 1567, in the Name of the King, tho' but an Infant; and the first Thing they went about was, to recognize the whole Proceedings of the Reformation in the following Acts.

1st, An Act abolishing the Jurisdiction and usurp'd Authority of the Pope; which was still no more than confirming the Act made before for that Purpose; but it was done because the Papists raised some Objections against the Validity of that Parliament, the Queen having not given her Assent to their Meeting, nor confirmed the Articles at *Leith*.

2d, Another Act past, for repealing former Laws for establishing Popery.

3d, The Confession of Faith was ratified.

4th, An Act appointing, That all Kings and Magistrates should, at the Time of entering upon their Offices, swear to maintain the Church, expressed in these Words: *To maintain the true Religion as now received.*

The Polity and Jurisdiction of the Church was, says *Spotswood*; referred to Delegates, and the Thirds of Benefices were, for the present, granted to the Church; the Necessity of the Times made it impossible to obtain the rest: For the publick Affairs requiring the Assistance of all its Interest, the remaining Revenues of the Church were retained to the Service of the Nation.

In this Parliament the King's Authority being acknowledged, the Queen, his Mother, was concluded to perpetual Imprisonment, which was then thought very severe, and brought a great many to espouse her Quarrel, in meer Compa-

tion to her Circumstances, and this, facilitating her Escape, as before, filled the Nation with a long Series of Blood, Tumult, and Disorder.

Yet under all these Turmoils the Church was supported in her Jurisdiction, as well as Doctrine; and therefore here I fix the Period of what I call her Infant-State: And I think my Opinion is back'd very much by that famous Letter of the General Assembly of the Kirk, *Anno 1567*, being the same Year I am now upon.

The Letter was to Mr. *Willock*, one of their Ministers, and one who was particularly famous for his Share in the Reformation; but was fled into *England* from the Troubles of the first Years of the Queen's Return: This Man the Assembly writes to, to invite him to come back again: And their Reasons to move him to return were, 'That they had a religious and zealous Magistrate constituted, meaning the Earl of *Murray*, commonly called the *Good Regent*; 'sufficient Provision appointed for Ministers, the Church established, and Religion flourishing throughout the Realm — and they conclude their Letter, *Now you shall see the Cape-Stone of that Work whereof you laid the Foundation.*

It is true, that the Book of Polity or Discipline was not to this Day establish'd by Parliament, and therefore the Church had not all the Authority that they wish'd in the Matters of Jurisdiction, Government, and Discipline. But the Gentlemen that would dispute here the Priority of Episcopal Government in the Church to Presbyterian, will get nothing by that; for all this while the Church exercised a compleat Presbyterian Jurisdiction, and no other; had their exact regular Meetings of Kirk or parochial

provincial Sessions, Presbyteries, Synods, and General Assemblies.

The Nobility, upon all Occasions, signed the Book of Discipline, and the Book of Polity was frequently revised, and in this Parliament was ordered to be revised again.

The Bishops that remained, had nothing left them, but a ministerial Authority, and were equally subjected to Presbytery, Synod, and Assembly; and the Superintendency, of which so much is studded to prove it an Equivalent to Episcopacy, was under all the essential Articles of a Parity; a famous Instance of which was the Bishop of Orkney, who was, as a private Minister, censured in the first Assembly of the King, for solemnizing the adulterous Marriage of the Queen with *Bothwell*, and was deprived by them by virtue of an Act of Assembly against marrying a divorced Adulteress; for such, it appeared, *Bothwell* was (n), having been divorced from his Wife to come into that horrid Marriage.

Again, the next General Assembly, *Ann. 1608.* the said Bishop was (o) restored, upon his Humiliation, and satisfying the Assembly.

(p) At the same Assembly the Superintendent of *Fife* was censured for his Negligence in Visitation, and that he was careless in punishing Adulterers.

These

(n) *Calderwood, Hist. fol. 44.* He was deprived till the Assembly was satisfied for the Scandal.

(o) *Ibid.* He is restored to his Ministry, but they ordained that he publicly make a Confession of his Faith in the Kirk of *Haly-Rood-House*, on the Lord's-Day, at the End of Sermon.

(p) *Ibid.* And the Superintendents of *Angus* and *Louthian* were to report their Diligence to the next Assembly.

These are such plain Acts of Presbyterian Jurisdiction over the Superintendents, that nothing can be needful to add to it. In the same Assembly was the Form of Excommunication approved, and ordered to be printed, and is affixed just before the Psalms in Meeters Edition of 1640. One other Thing is very essential to this Debate, which will be also found at large in *Calderwoods History*, fol. 45. That some of the Members of The Principal, and some of the Regents of the College at *Abertown*, were deprived by order of the Assembly, for refusing to acknowledge the several Laws of establishing the Church, and other Things objected; but they were deprived not by the Superintendent, but by the Superintendent, together with the Ministers and Commissioners, and the Superintendent acted only as Commissioner from the Assembly, as is to this Day to be seen in the Register of 1640. As to Discipline the Practice of it was, tho' not established, yet every Day regulated and directed by the Assembly. And if there were any difficult Things in Matters of Order and Discipline, it was only owing to this, that the Polity of the Church was not perfected and settled.

The End of the First Part.

FINIS



OF



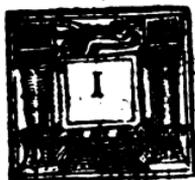

---

 PART II.
 

---

 OF THE  
 CHURCH

IN HER

*Growing State.*


Have fix'd the Period of the Church's  
 Infancy at the dethroning Queen  
*Mary*, when the glorious Top-  
 Stone of the Reformation seem'd  
 to be laid in *Scotland*; and the

Church arriv'd to a Condition to stand upon  
 her own Feet.

Her doctrinal Articles were assented to, and  
 her Worship establish'd, and both confirmed  
 by sundry Acts of Parliament, under the Ad-  
 mi-

ministration of the first Regents, the Earl of Murray, and the Earl of Lenox: Likewise her Judicatories took Place, her Churches were planted, and her Discipline was agreed to, so that as, in the Letter of the Assembly to Mr. W<sup>h</sup>ock, is noted, *The Church was fully planted*: As to her intestine Troubles, they seemed indeed to be but begun; for the Polity of the Kirk, it was not yet establish'd, nor could they ever bring the Book of Discipline to be past into an Act in the Convention or Parliament of that Day. At this Door erept in all the Mischiefs that for above 120 Years after, continually harras'd this Church, and brought her several Times under the Yoke, both of temporal and ecclesiastick Tyranny; several Times into cruel and bloody Persecutions, and more than once to the very Gates of Destruction, as shall be seen in its Order.

The Church had been now 14 Years in her first Struggles with Popery, had enjoyed her General Assemblies 12 Years, and tho' the Government of the Church was not past into a Law by the Civil Sanction of a Parliament, as is observed above, yet the greatest Part of the Nobility and Gentry had signed it; and all that Part which was needful to the true Discipline of the Church was fully practis'd by the Ministers in their particular Churches, and frequently regulated in their General Assemblies. But as in all the Ages of the Church, the Prosperity of their Affairs has led them into mutual Jarrings, Divisions, and Jealousies, which consequently ushered in Multitudes of Innovations; so it was here: The Ambition and Emulation of the Clergy and Nobility ushered in a Model of Episcopal Government, which, as it was

was at first a *Motley Scheme* of Church-Government, composed neither of Presbytery nor Prelacy, so it laid the Foundation of its own Corruptions, and in them of all the Confusions which followed in the Church, as will appear hereafter.

The first Step to this, was in the Year 1572, when, upon the old Foot of settling and perfecting the Polity of the Church, that fatal Commission was granted to settle the *Kirk*, of which in its Place. The Regent was now the Earl of *Mar*, who, tho' a Protestant, was, it seems, particularly inclined to the *new Scheme* of Church-Government which had been proposed in an Assembly or Convention of the Church at *Loth*, viz. to restore the Government of *Bishops* as it was in the Time before the Reformation: And as there was a strong Party even among the Ministers who fell in with the Court, and no doubt the Hopes of Church-Preferment had moved some, they soon were prevail'd with to join with the Party that pretended to settle the Church according to that Scheme.

In order to this, a Commission was granted to a certain Number of Gentlemen to treat with a like Number of Ministers, to be commissioned by the General Assembly, and to consider of, settle, and conclude anent all Things tending to the Establishing the *Polity of the Kirk*.

And this was that famous, or rather fatal Commission which first brought Episcopacy into the Church of *Scotland*, and their Act was expressed in these Words:

(a) " They think good, in Consideration of  
 " the present Estate, that the Names and Titles  
 " of

---

(a) Calderwood, *Hist. fol.* 50.

“ of Archbishops and Bishops be not innovated, nor the Bounds of the Diocesses confounded — but stand and continue in Time coming as they did before the Reformation, at least till the King’s Majority, or till Consent of Parliament.”

Episcopacy being thus brought in, as we call it, by Head and Shoulders into the Church, did not, however, answer their End who brought it in; for at first it came in so fetter’d and shackled with Limitation of Power and Castration of Seipends, that there was little in it more than was before in the Ministers, who were called *Superintendants*; the Name and Dignities excepted. And here it is worth observing, that the true Reason appeared both why the Church could never obtain a Parliamentary Establishment of their Book of Discipline, as also why the Nobility and Gentry fell in so suddenly with this new Model; the Case is very plain: Under this Model the Gentlemen retained to themselves the Revenues of the Church, either in Temporalities *sew’d* to themselves, as they call it in *Scotland*, or Pensions and Payments which they obtained (b) from the Church-Men; which they could never before obtain under the Ministers; for the Ministers would not so far betray the Church as to alienate her Revenues to the Courtiers and Gentry. But now it was done effectually, and the Gentlemen hold many of these Things to this Day, to the great Improvement

---

(b) *Calderwood, Hist. fol. 51. Hence they were called Tulchane Bishops: A Tulchane is a Calf-Skin stuffed with Straw, plac’d to make the Cow give Milk, for now the Bishop had the Title, which was but the Straw, but the Lord got the Milk of the Benefice.*

ishment, as well as Discouragement of the Church, and Hindrance of the Planting Ministers in many Parts of the Country.

However, the Clergy found Ways to help themselves as to the Revenue, in after Times. This was the first Condition they came into the Church in, and this simoniacal Project, for it was no less, (*viz.*) giving Part of the Church's Revenues to the Nobility, that they might have their Vote to possess the rest; this simoniacal Project, I say, was the first Reason of the Introduction of Bishops into the Church of *Scotland*.

We shall now see how this Matter relish'd with the Reformers, and whether, as some alledge, it was a general Act of the Reformation, *YEA*, or *NO*. In *February* 1572, a new Bishop was inaugurated at *St. Andrews*: Mr. *Knox* protested against it, and pronounced his Anathema, or great Curse against both Giver and Receiver.

But the Case was much altered in *Scotland* at this Time among the Gentry and Nobility. (1.) Abundance of the first Reformers, debauched by the Luxury of the Court, and touch'd upon the Niceties of Allegiance, adhered to the Queen, who was Popish, tho' they themselves were Protestants; such was the Duke of *Chastelleraunt*, the Earls of *Argyle*, *Rothese*, Laird of *Grange*, and others. (2.) Of the rest, the Interest of the Nobility in the Church's Revenues, made them all slack in the Matter of the Church Policy, shy of the extraordinary Authority of the Assembly, and averse to the Severity of Discipline.

The two first Regents the Earls of *Murray* and *Lanark*, adher'd honestly and faithfully to the Church, and were the constant Patrons of her

Settlement: The Earl of *Mar*, the third Regent, was both zealous for the Reformation, and religious in his Person; but gave way a little too early to the abovementioned Court-Principle, I mean as to their retaining the Church's Revenues. But the Earl of *Morton*, who succeeded him, openly invaded the Authority of the Assembly, and throwing off the Mask, protected the Bishops in usurping an Authority independent of the Assembly; and by the same Consequence, placing an Authority in the Prince to appoint the Bishop. And thus he did the Drudgery of the Party, for which they ill rewarded him afterward, as will appear in the Course of this Story.

The first Introduction of Bishops, as above, left them fetter'd and shackled, as I noted, under the Power of the Assembly; and tho' even the Name gave Offence, yet they were so reduc'd, as that the Name began not to be questioned, and such the Church will not dispute to this Day: For tho' they were allow'd to be called Bishops, yet they were really only Superintendents, and not that neither very long; for the Assembly, *Anno 1574*, voted the Bishops to be only Pastors of one Parish, and delated several of them afterward for not preaching, and for not attending at their (a) Charge: (b) The Bishop

---

(a) *Spotswood, lib. 5, fol. 228.* The Question was proposed to the Assembly, whether Bishops, as they were then in Scotland, had their Function warranted by the Word of God. The Assembly, without giving a direct Answer, approved the Opinion of the last Assembly, with this Addition, "That Bishops should be-  
"take themselves to the Service of some one Church  
"within their Dioceses, and name the particular Flock of  
"which they would accept the Charge."

(b) *Ibid.* The Bishop of Dunkeld was deposed by the Assembly for Dilapidations.

shop of *Dunkeld* was actually deposed by the Assembly. The Bishop of *Glasgow* was delated for not preaching — The Superintendent of *Louthian* was censur'd for inaugurating the Bishop of *Ross*, when he was admonish'd by the Assembly not to do it.

Innumerable Instances are to be found in the History of those Times, as well of Superintendents as of Bishops, who were tried and censured by the Assembly. On the other Hand, Bishop *Spotswood* affirms positively, that the Superintendent's Power was Episcopal; but gives not one Instance to prove it.

At last the grand Affair came before the Assembly, and was then decisively asserted; for the Assembly, beginning to see themselves encroached upon, came immediately to the Root of the Question, *Whether the Function of a Bishop be warranted by the Word of God.* The Name of Bishop no Body disputed, but the Extent of the Title and Office was the Thing.

In the 6th Session of the Assembly 1575, the Brethren did not conclude finally, but came to this Resolution, that they asserted their own Superiority (c), and their Power to turn the Bishop out, after which they stated the Thing in general thus:

1. " That the Name of Bishop is common  
 " to every one that hath a particular Flock,  
 " over which he hath a peculiar Charge; as  
 " well to preach the Word, and to minister  
 " Sacraments, as to execute ecclesiastical Dis-  
 G " cipline,

---

(c) *Calderwood, fol. 69. If any Bishop be chosen who hath not such Qualities as the Word of God requireth, let him be tried by the General Assembly, DE NOVO, and let him be deposed if there be Cause.*

“ cipline, with Consent of his Elders — And  
 “ this is his chief Function by the Word of  
 “ God.

“ Out of the Number of Bishops some  
 “ may be chosen to have Power to oversee  
 “ and visit such reasonable Bounds, besides  
 “ his own Flock, as the General Assembly  
 “ shall appoint ; and in these Bounds to ap-  
 “ point Ministers, with the Consent of the  
 “ Ministers of that Province, and with the  
 “ Consent of the Flock, [MARK THAT]  
 “ to whom they shall be appointed : As also  
 “ to appoint Elders and Deacons in every  
 “ particular Congregation, where there is  
 “ none, with Consent of the People thereof,  
 “ [MARK THAT ALSO] and to sus-  
 “ pend Ministers for reasonable Causes, with  
 “ Consent of the Ministers aforesaid.”

This is, in short the Church of Scotland's first Opinion of the Office of a Bishop : They did not declare directly against the very Word *Bishop* ; for the Court run high for the new Project, and they were (a) not forward to fly in the Face of the Regent, yet they were resolute in the Substance of the Thing.

It is very remarkable, that when these Resolutions were past in the Assembly, there were present, the Archbishop of *Glasgow*, the Bishops of *Dunkeld*, *Galloway*, *Brichen*, *Dumblain*, and *Ules* ; and all these, by their Silence, acknowledg'd they understood themselves to be Bishops  
 in

---

(a) Calderwood, fol. 69. They answered not directly to the Question at this Time, by Reason of the Regent's Authority, who was bent upon the Course whereof he was the chief Instrument, yet they agreed upon such Points as overthrow the Authority and Power of a Bishop.

in such a Sense; and *Spotswood* complains upon them for it. (b)

Thus the Church asserted her Authority, and the Project of the Court was very much disappointed.

Hitherto Intreague, Subtilty, and Management had been the Method in all the Steps which had been taken to have introduc'd this Novelty into the Church; but these were all defeated by this Proceeding; for the Assembly took away the Power, and left them the Name, which, 'tis plain, did not answer the End.

There remained no other Way then, but open Violence; and here we find the Regent making the first Invasion upon the Kirk, and leading the Way to all the Assaults which have been made upon her ever since.

The Bishop of *St. Andrews* dying, the Regent recommends, or rather appointed the Chapter to choose one Mr. *Adamson*, his Chaplain, to succeed the Bishop.

G 2

The

(b) *Spotswood, lib. 1. fol. 276.* It doth not appear by the Register of these Proceedings, that the Bishops who were present, did so much as open their Mouths in defence of their Office and Calling: What it was that made them so quiet, whether, as I have heard, that they expected these Motions shou'd have been dash'd by the Regent, or otherwise, that they affected the Praise of Humility, is unknown; which was no Wisdom in them to have given way to such Novelties, and have suffered the Lawfulness of their Vocation to be thus called in Question.

The Persons present be Names.

Archbp. of Glasgow, Superintendent of Louthian & Angus,  
 Bishop of Dunkeld,  
 Galloway,  
 Brichen,  
 Dumblain,  
 Iles.

The Chapter deferred the Election till the General Assembly, and acquainted them with it : Mr. *Adamson*, who was present in the Assembly, was hereupon ask'd if he would submit to Trials — and accept the Office with those Injunctions which the Church would prescribe — He answered, the Regent had forbid him to accept of the Office otherwise than as appointed by Church and State.

I give this *verbatim* out of Bishop *Spotswood* ; because his Authority is least questioned by the Advocates of this Cause (c).

Upon this Answer, which shew'd a direct Invasion of their Authority, the Assembly could do no less than assert their Right, and therefore (d) rejected him — but the Regent (e) commanded the Chapter to elect him, and they did so, in Defiance of the General Assembly.

The Assembly, justly provok'd at this, gave a Commission to the Superintendent of (f) *Louthian*, and two other Ministers — to call him before them, and prohibit him to exercise any Jurisdiction, till he should be authorized thereto by the General Assembly.

Here we see a Bishop suspended, the Royal Mandate disputed, and a Superintendent who, *Spotswood*, in another Place, says, had Episcopal Power, yet receiving a Commission

---

(c) *Spotswood, lib. 5. fol. 277. Imparted to them the Warrant they had received: The Bishop owns it was a Command to the Chapter to chuse him.*

(d) *Ibid. Inhibited the Chapter to proceed.*

(e) *Ibid. Upon a new Charge given them, they convened and made Choice of him.*

(f) *Calderwood says, it was the Superintendent of Fife, which is most likely, St. Andrews being in that Province.*

son from the Assembly, together with other Ministers, to suspend only; which, had he been a Bishop, he might have exercis'd without a Commission, if it had been in his own Bounds, and could not if he had been a Bishop, out of his Diocess, by any Commission.

Upon this Attack of the Church, the Assembly resolving to act with as much Temper and Moderation as possible, consisting with their Right and the just Authority they possess: And in order to prevent any more Disputes of this Kind, resolved, if possible, to fix upon a Form of Church-Polity, and accordingly it was drawn up and (g) offered, in their Names, to the Regent; but the Troubles which quickly followed upon this in the State, put a Stop to the settling it at this Time also, as it had done several Times before (h). Mr. Calderwood gives a long Account of the Conference of the Ministers in the *West*, with those appointed by the Assembly, in order to fix this ecclesiastical Polity, to which I refer; the Thing not being obtained, 'tis not to my Purpose to enter into Particulars other than this, that the Presbyterial Authority was clearly establish'd in it, and the very Name as well as Office and Power of a Bishop left out.

The Regent, who opposed them in all Things, did so, underhand, in this; for it was evident he push'd not at the introducing the Bishops on-

(g) Spotswood, *lib. 5. fol. 277.* *The Form of Church-Polity was presented to the Regent by Mr. Robert Pont, Mr. David Lindsay, and Mr. James Lawson.*

(h) Calderwood, *fol. 73, 74, 75, 77, 80.* *The Regent ever resisted the Work of the Polity, which was then in Hand, and press'd his own Injunctions and Conformity with England.*

ly, but even at the Dissolution of the Assembly, whose Authority was too great for him, and made him uneasy. — However, the Form was presented, as above, and he did not openly reject it; but started Objections, and appointed Questions to be answered, and nam'd a Committee of the Council to confer with them about it.

But now a new Revolution of Affairs happened; for Factions rising, among the Nobility, against the Regent, and, as it was thought, he being sensible of his being too weak for them, was advised to stoop to the Juncture of Affairs, quietly to concede his Authority, and demit that Power which, it was manifest, he could not keep.

The King was now almost Twelve Years old, and tho' he was under Governours, yet the Faction of Lords not agreeing who to repose the Trust in, it was resolv'd to declare the King *MAJOR*, and put the Government into his own Hands. This also seem'd the more honourable for the Regent; for to have named another after him, had been plainly to have told the World he was turned out — but to resign his Government into the King's own Hand, had a much greater Appearance of Honour.

He did so: But as great Mens Fall seldom stop with the Loss of their Preferments, so it was with him; he pass'd through various Troubles, till at last the Persecution of his Enemies brought him to the Block.

The King was young, but began to be inform'd of Things, and as well from *Morton* at first, as the rest of the Courtiers about him afterwards, he received too early Prejudices against the Constitution of the Church, and in par-

particular he took all Occasions to intrench upon the Power of the Assembly.

The Debate was now wholly about Bishops, the Assembly was for reducing their Power, which was effectually done as before; they were now for reducing the Name too, as a Thing which they found furnished Matter of continual Disturbance; So in the Third Session of the Assembly 1577, it was ordained, *That all Bishops and others, bearing Ecclesiastical Function, be called by their own Names, or Brethren only* (1).

In the Seventh Session of the same Assembly they put a Stop to the Number, and ordered that no Bishop be elected or admitted before the next General Assembly; forbidding Ministers and Chapters to elect, or any way proceed to the Election of any Bishop, on Pain of Deprivation.

In the Assembly at *Sterling*, in *June* 1578, they made the said Law perpetual, and that all Bishops already elected, be required to submit themselves to the General Assembly. And thus that infant mongrel Episcopacy, *so it was then called*, was voted out of the Church as a Nufance.

In the same Assembly they appointed a Committee to wait upon the King with the Book of Polity and a Supplication, which was done; and they were received well enough by the King with good Words and Promises of Kindness and Countenance, and a certain Number named by the Council to confer with them; tho' the King himself secretly hated both their Persons and

---

(1) *Calderwood's Hist fol. 82. That the said Act shall be extended to all Times to come, and till the Corruption of the State of Bishops be utterly removed out of the Church.*

Measures, for which Reason nothing could be obtained by that Conference.

The 16th of July after, the Parliament met; and the Commissioners, appointed by the Assembly to wait upon the Parliament, solicited to have the Book of Polity brought in there, and confirmed; but the Nobility always put it off, having, as afterwards appeared, no Kindness for the Strictness and Severity of Presbyterian Discipline.

*Morton's* Fall was not yet; for he still guided the King, and instilled early Thoughts into him in Prejudice of the Kirk, and in Favour of the Bishops.

However the Church went on against them, and the Assembly fell particularly upon two by Name, viz. Mr. *Patrick Adamson*, whom *Morton*, by his Letter, had made Bishop of *St. Andrews*, and Mr. *John Boyd* Bishop of *Glasgow*.

But now a second Attempt was made upon the Church, and that was by the King himself, or at least in his Name. The Assembly, as has been noted, having long struggled to obtain their Book of Polity, they had been always, tho' not absolutely denied to have it pass, yet so delay'd and postponed, that it was easie to see the Court was against them, and that it was not design'd to be pass'd at all; nevertheless they went on upon the Foot of the Scheme form'd, as what was their just Right to demand, tho' they had not Influence enough upon the Government to obtain the Grant.

Being thus, as I have noted, proceeding upon the Foot of the Polity as their Right, they receive a Letter from the King, dated at *Sterling* the 6th of July 1579, inhibiting them to proceed, and commanding them to refer all the Matters

undecided in the Polity of the Kirk to the Decision of the next Parliament (i).

The Assembly, notwithstanding this Letter, went on ; but with all the Caution and Respect possible.

They examine the Articles referred, and present an Address to the King, desiring a farther Conference upon the Affair of the Polity, and followed this with a long Supplication, to move the King to farther this Book of Polity.

While this was in Consideration, and 2 or 3 Years spent in the pressing the Polity on one Hand, and putting it off on the other, in the Year 1580 ; the General Assembly finding, as they apprehended, that all they had yielded to before as to the Word Bishop, was improved to enlarge the Office and extend the Power of a Bishop, they resolve to pull it up by the Roots, and remove the very Name of it out of the Church ; and in order to this, they pass two Acts, entirely abrogating the Office as unscriptural, declating it void and unlawful, as having no Warrant or Foundation in the Word of God : Which Acts, being very remarkable, are worth perusing, and therefore, as abridg'd, are in the Notes underneath (a,b).

Putting

(i) Calderwood, fol. 86. [The Words in the Letter are] *Forbearing any Proceedings at this Time that touch Matters heretofore not concluded by our Laws, or receiv'd into Practice ; but whatsoever in the former Conferences, touching the Polity of the Kirk, was remitted to be decided by our Estates in Parliament, let it so rest without prejudging the same by any of your Conclusions at this Time.*

(a) *Forasmuch as the Office of a Bishop, as it is now used and commonly taken within this Realm, hath no sure Warrant, Authority, nor good Ground out of the Book of Scriptures ; but is brought*

Putting all these Accounts together with as much Impartiality as possible, 'tis manifest, and, I think, out of Dispute, that the Church of Scotland was in its original PRESBYTERIAN: I have nothing to do here with the Difference or the Disputes about which is the most scriptural, Episcopacy or Presbytery, that Dispute is handled very strongly by its self; but the Reason I have been so long on this Part, is to clear up the Question which has been the Occasion of so much Debate in the World, whether the first Reformation of Scotland was Episcopal or Presbyterian. The

---

brought in by the Folly and Corruption of Mens Invention to the great Overthrow of the true Kirk of God: The whole Assembly, in one Voice, after Liberty given to all Men to reason in the Matter, none opp'ing themselves in defence of the said pretended Office, findeth and declareth the same pretended Office, used and termed as is abovesaid, unlawful in its self; as having neither Fundament, Ground, or Warrant in the Word of God; and Ordaineth, that all such Persons as brook, or hereafter shall brook the said Office, be charg'd simpliciter to demit, quit, and leave off the same, as an Office whereunto they are not called by God, and su-like to desist and cease from preaching, Ministrat'ion of the Sacraments, or using any way the Office of Pastor, while they receive de novo Admission from the General Assembly, under the Pain of Excommunication, if they be found disobedient, to be pronounced and executed against them. —

#### The Second Act.

(b) For the better executing the former Act it is ordained, That a Synodal Assembly the 17th of August next to come, shall be holden in every Province, where any usurping Bishops are, whereunto they shall be summoned by the Visitors of the said Country, viz the Bishop of St. Andrews to compare at St. Andrews, the Bishop of Aberdeen in Aberdeen, the Bishop of Murray at Elgin, the Bishop of Glasgow in Glasgow, to give Obedience to the said Act, which if they refuse to do, the said Synodal Assembly shall appoint them to receive Admonition out of the Pulpit, warning them to compare before the General Assembly in Edinburgh the 20th of October next, to hear the Sentence of Excommunication pronounced against them for their Disobedience.

NOTE; the Bishop of Dumblain quietly conformed and submitted to this Act.

The Court had indeed, from the latter End of the Earl of *Mar's* Administration, struggled hard with the Assembly to reserve its own Power, and to have some Share in the Matter independent of the Assembly, and at the Convention at *Leith*, they got Ground, as has been hinted ; but the Assembly vigorously opposed it, and afterwards overthrew it all again, and by *these Acts* entirely abolished the very Name of a Bishop in the Church.

I come now to enter into a sad Series of Strife between the Church and the Court upon this very Subject ; which continued with infinite Struggles, *Ups*, and *Downs*, intervals of Liberty, Storms of Tyranny, some horrid Scenes of Ruin and Destruction, and perhaps some Extremes on both Sides: All which harrass'd this poor Kingdom till at last the Restoration of King *Charles II*, brought the Church quite under Foot: And there begins her *PERSECUTED STATE*. *Of which by it self.*

The Court were, no question, very ill pleas'd with this Proceeding of the Assembly — but they went still on with Steadiness: Several of the Bishops submitted to this Order of the Assembly, and made their Submission, the Copies of which, by after Times, their Successors being ashamed so plain a Testimony of Fact should appear, have been rac'd out of the Registers (c).

At

---

(c) Calderwood, fol. 92. *There wanteth here in the Register Part of the Third Session, the whole Fourth, Fifth, Sixth, and Part of the Seventh riven out, as the rest of them were by the same sacrilegious Hands in the Year 1584; where the Submission of the Bishops of Glasgow, St. Andrews, and the Isles were set down, every one of whom accepted a particular Kirk, [and so from Bishops, as now meant, became Ministers only, or Bishops in a Scripture-Sense.]*

At length the King being advanced, by the Death of the Queen of *England*, to the united Crown of *Great Britain*, the Disputes rested for some Time, the Court being taken up with the Rejoicings of their new Acquisition, and with the other Incidents of the new Government: And by this Means the Church of *Scotland* may be said to have got some Ground, even at that Time when the King, who was their ayow'd Enemy, was so encreas'd in Power as to be formidable to them.

But the King was taken up with Mirth, and the Court in Revels, I had almost said in Debauchery; and not the King only, but the Nobility also, who were always the Hinderers of the Reformation, were now absent, and not so much concerned about what became of the Church, when they had their private Fortunes to make by the Favour of their Prince. This Absence of the Court, I say, gave the Church great Advantage, and the General Assembly continued to assert and maintain their Establishment as Presbyterian in opposition to Episcopacy, notwithstanding all the Injunctions and Interruptions which they met with from the Court, and therefore this may very well be called the growing State of the Kirk.

But to go back to what happened in the mean Time. It was about the Year 1582, that the King, by the ill Government of the Duke of *Lenox*, Earl of *Arran*, &c. who had him, as it might be said, in Tutelage, had not only imposed and intruded the so much abhorred Prelacy upon the Church, but had insulted the Church in their Discipline and Government on many Occasions, too long to relate; as particularly in the Affair of *Montgomery*, and the Tumult

mult in *Glasgow*, where, in defence of a Man excommunicated for notorious Scandal, they mobbed the Presbytery, beat and very ill treated Mr. *John Howison* the Moderator, and wounded several of the Students of the College; nor was it far from setting Fire to the College it self: It was said, that some of the King's Guards were employed upon this Riot, to encourage a Tumult; for that the common People could not otherwise be brought to injure the Ministers after such a Manner.

But the Kirk recovered all this, when a few Weeks after happened that memorable Attempt of the Noblemen against *Lenox* and *Arran*, called the Rode of *Ruthven*, taking the King out of their Hands, by Force, and carrying him to *Sterling*. This, I say, was called the Rode of *Ruthven*, of which we shall hear a great deal more, and was put in Execution *August 20, 1582*, as the King came back from the great annual hunting in *Athol*.

It is not to our Purpose to enter into the History or Causes of this Attempt: It is enough to say, that the Power of these two Noblemen, or at least their imprudent exercising of that Power was become intollerable to the Nation, and the rest of the Nobility and Gentry concerned, found no other way to deliver themselves from it, but to set the King at Liberty to act by better Council.

They presented a Declaration to the King of their Reasons for this Conduct, and carrying his Majesty to *Sterling*, they gave him full Liberty of his Person and a free Exercise of his Government, only taking Care that the Administration was entirely removed from the hated Hands of *Lenox* and *Arran*.

The King, tho' he never forgave this Action, and to his last resented it against the Kirk, as if they had been the only Instruments, yet complied with the Time, and the Earl of *Arran* being clapp'd up in *Duplin* Castle, and the Duke of *Lenox*, charg'd by Proclamation, to depart the Country, his Majesty consented that a Proclamation should be published, intimating that he was in the Town of *Perth*, at full Liberty; that he staid there of his own Choice for some Time, and that he approved of all the Lords had done as for his Interest and Service. At the same Time a Proclamation was also published for restoring the Liberties of the Kirk, the Freedom of their Assemblies and Judicatures, and for encouraging the Ministers in Discharge of their Duty.

Thus the Church got the Day of their Adversaries, and all Violences offered to their Judicatures, the Laws made to restrain their Liberties or abridge their Rights, were declared to be unjust and illegal, and were laid to the Charge of the said Duke of *Lenox* and Earl of *Arran*; *SUCH AS* the Disposition of Benefices *Pleno Jure*, without the Examination of the Persons, and Admission by the Kirk, making the King and his Council Judges in Matters meerly ecclesiastical; discharging or prohibiting the General Assembly to proceed to Excommunication; annulling the Sentence of Excommunication when past; Prelacy obtruded upon them contrary to the Principles of the Church of *Scotland*, who had declared in the General Assembly, that the same was unscriptural, devilish, and of humane Invention, *and the like*.

Upon this Declaration a General Assembly was convened to meet at *Edinburgh*, the 9th of  
October

October 1582, and this was perhaps the first Assembly, even from the Reformation, in which it might be said the Church had an uninterrupted Liberty to exert her full Power in her own Establishment.

At this Assembly the Laird of Paisly, in the Name of the associated Lords, declared, that the Dangers of the Ecclesiastical Constitution, and of Religion it self, as well as the Danger of the King's Person and of the Civil Government, were the principal Causes of their late Undertaking, and they desired the Concurrence of the Assembly, as well in recognizing the Necessity of what had been done, as in concerting what was yet to be done for the establishing and securing both the Church and State.

The Assembly unanimously voted (every Member being severally asked) the Reality of the Dangers attending the Reformation and the Church. The King, upon the Assembly's sending some of their Body to him, readily declared, that not only his own Person, but Religion it self was in Peril, and that such Measures had been entered into as must necessarily have overturn'd the Reformation; that he esteem'd his own Safety and the Safety of Religion to be inseparable, and exhorted the Assembly to do their Duty to remove the Dangers that threatned both him and them.

This occasioned that famous Act of the Assembly, wherein the Reformation is recognized, and the pursuing it recommended earnestly as well to Ministers as People; all the Ministers are exhorted to set forth the Dangers of the Church, the King, and the Commonwealth to their Flocks, in the most pressing Manner, urging all who love and tender the  
Glo-

Glory of God, the prosperous State of the King and Common-wealth, to concur with them in their Endeavour to their full Deliverance.

After this the Assembly proceeded with Vigour to exert themselves: They erected Presbyteries and Church-Judicatures in such Parts where there were none before, as in the Northern Provinces of *Sutherland, Caithness, Ross, Murray, Aberdeen, &c.*

Then they empowered the Presbyteries to summon before them the Bishops, and to cause them to answer to the said Presbyteries for such Offences as they should be accused of: The Crimes the said Bishops were thus accused of were such as these:

Not Preaching, and administering the Sacraments, as is the Duty of a Gospel-Minister.

Neglect in Discipline.

Error in Doctrine.

Associating themselves with excommunicated Persons.

Wasting of the Patrimony of the Kirk.

Letting Leases of Land against the Prohibitions of the Kirk.

Collating to Benefices against the Tenor of the Acts of the Kirk.

Scandal in Life and Conversation.

And many other Things, not then articulated, which were left to the Examination of Witnesses. And the Presbyteries were farther empowered to hear, try, acquit, and condemn, as the Matters of Fact should appear to them.

The Time was now come when the Authority of the Church had its full Establishment: The Convention of Estates, which was then called,

called, and which met at *Perth*, gave Room to the Assembly to lay all their Grievances before them, which was done in 22 Articles, and their Demands of particular Redress for Wrong and Wreck, as it was called, in 11 Articles more.

The Bishops were now deposed, and many of them submitted to become Pastors of private Parish-Churches.

The Laird of *Minto*, who, at the Head of a Mob, had insulted the Moderator of the Presbytery of *Glasgow*, submitted himself to the Assembly, and begg'd Pardon.

Mr. *Robert Montgomery*, whose Case had raised such Disputes between the King and the Church; the Church excommunicating him, and the King restoring him by Proclamation; came in and submitted, offering to undergo the Injunctions of the Presbytery of *Glasgow*, and desiring to be received into the Bosom of the Church.

And thus stood the Affairs of the Church at the Beginning of the Year 1583, but it continued but for a short While; for the King, impatient of the good Government of the Lords, and inwardly hating the Church, contriv'd to make his Escape from *Falkland*, which, by the Assistance of another Faction among the Nobility, he effected the 28th of *August* 1583, taking Refuge in the Castle of *St. Andrews*: Thither repair'd immediately all those among the Nobility who were privy to the Design; and thus they laid the Foundation of an entire Change of Measures and Persons in his Administration.

As in the State, so in the Church, all Things tended to Change; saving only that the Assembly, maintaining their Principles, stood their Ground against the Court with a Con-

stancy of Zeal which could never be subdued.

However, the Bishops immediately got footing by *this Turn* of the Court, and the Bishop of *St. Andrews* being in the Castle there, immediately reassumed his Office and Character, presuming on the King's Protection, as openly as if he had been placed in it by a legal Authority, even the King himself not yet declaring his Consent to his Attempt.

During these Transactions, the General Assembly conven'd at *Edinburgh*, (*viz.*) the 20th of *October*; nor did they slack their Hands in their Proceedings against the Bishops, notwithstanding the King appeared now openly of the Prelatick Party; for they call'd for the Report of their Commissioners, appointed by the former Assembly, to proceed against four Delinquent Bishops, *viz.* the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, the Bishops of the *Isles*, *Dunkeld*, and *Dumblain*.

The Archbishop had been summoned by the Synod of *Fife*, *apud acta*, to appear at this Assembly, which, he now thinking himself too high to submit to, declined to do; so they proceeded against him as in Contempt; and the Process against his Woman Counsellor *Alison Pearstone*, as a Witch, was also brought before the Assembly, and a Committee was appointed to examine Witnesses against them both.

They also resolved now to make a Representation of their Grievances, and of the State of the Church and Kingdom, and lay the same before the King himself in Discharge of themselves: This some of the Ministers prest with the more Earnestness, prophetically suggesting that a Cloud of Darkness and Persecution was coming

coming upon them, and would break over their Heads in a violent and furious Storm, as well from the Prelates as from the King himself. The Heads of this Representation are at large to be seen in the Histories of those Times. Having drawn out their (a) Grievances, some of which pointed directly at the King as a Favourer of the Enemies of God, as well Popish as prelatick; they sent Ten Commissioners with it to the King then at *Sterling*: They were very coldly received, and told, that the King advised the Assembly to keep within the Bounds of their proper Business: The Commissioners were sent back again to desire a more particular Answer; but were told they had been fully answered already.

At this Time two of the most bold and zealous Members of the Assembly died, (*viz.*) Mr. *Alexander Arbutnot*, Principal of the College at *Aberdeen*, and Mr. *Thomas Smeton*, Principal of the College at *Glasgow*. By the Loss of these two great Men their Hands were extremely weakened in the Struggles they were quickly to meet with.

However, during the Sitting of this Assembly they abated nothing of what they thought their Duty: They prosecuted the Archbishop to such a Hight, that he was obliged to feign an Embassy into *England* upon publick Affairs, *tho' others said he was worse employed*, and fearing a Sentence of Deposition, he obtained from the King to be freed from Censure during his Absence. It was said, that during this Journey into *England*, he concerted with some of the

---

(a) Calderwood, *Hist. fol.* 142.

Episcopal Clergy there, those wicked Measures by which he afterward oppressed the Church of *Scotland*, and in the End overthrew it for a Time.

That famous Supporter of the Church's Cause, Mr. *John Durie*, was one of the first that felt the Effects of the new Change, being commanded by the King to depart from *Edinburgh*, and remain at *Montrose*, which he submitted to; but both the Town-Council and the Kirk-Session of *Edinburgh* gave him noble Testimonials both of his Life and Doctrine; which was more to his Honour than all the Reproach his Enemies laid upon him could overballance.

The persecuting the Ministers was the first Work the new Establishment began with, before they fell upon the Church it self; and even in their dealing with the Ministers they acted cautiously, and strove to begin with such Things as they called legal Prosecutions for pretended Offences: Afterwards they grew bolder, and fell upon them in a grosser Manner.

In these pretended legal Prosecutions Mr. *Andrew Melvin's* Case was the most famous Example: He was summoned before the Council, where he was questioned for offensive Words spoken in the Pulpit, on a Fast-Day, reflecting on the King and his Administration, saying, *That the King was unlawfully promoted to the Crown, with other seditious Words.* The University, resolving to assert their Privileges, sent two of their Body with a Testimonial in his Behalf, sign'd by 30 of their principal Men, as well Masters as Students, and demanded that he should be censured only by the University; the Presbyteries of the Bounds sent Commissioners to protest against the Proceedings as against the  
Li-

Liberties of the Church, and Mr. *Melvin* himself declin'd the Jurisdiction of the Council in his Case, in a long Declaration, which is to be seen at large in Mr. *Calderwood's* History, fol. 144, 145. But all these were rejected by the Council. In this Declaration he both positively denied the Words, solemnly and before God, protesting that he never spoke them, accused the Informer of Malice and declared Prejudice, and justified what he had really said to be according to God's Word and his own Duty: Upon giving in this Declaration, he retired into *England*, having Notice that he was to be confined in *Blackness* Castle. After his Retreat he was publickly praised, and pray'd for in the Pulpit by the Ministers in *Edinburgh*, which, as the History of those Times expresses it, pleased the People and galled the Court.

In the mean Time the Land was full of Troubles, the Lords of *Angus* and *Mar* surprized the Castle of *Sterling*; but their great Friend *Gowry* being taken, and others secur'd, and they being not strong enough to defend themselves against the young King, who came against them with a great Army, they fled into *England*: The Castle was surrendered, the Captain and Three others, who surrendered it, were hanged: This Attempt weakened the Hands of the Church and their Friends, making their Enemies not only more strong, but also more furious than they were before. The General Assembly was appointed to be held at *St. Andrews*, the 24th of *April* 1584, where the Number of Ministers, who durst appear, were but very few: The Commissioner whom the King sent to them, being their declar'd and enrag'd Enemy,

his Name was *Graham* of *Halyards*, at that Time *Justice Depute*.

This *Graham* used them after an unaccustomed Manner, exerting a Power which they allowed not to be the Right, even of the King himself: He treated them in a rude and imperious Manner also, with all possible Disrespect. First he demanded of them, on Pain of Rebellion and Treason, to annul a former Act of Assembly, approving the *Rode* of *Ruthven*, and by a new Act to condemn it. At the same Time he entered into a Treaty with the Provost and Bailies of *St. Andrews* to imprison those Ministers that should not comply. But the Ministers got Notice of it, and being resolved not to comply, they silently declined the Assembly, and dropt out of Town, one by one, leaving the Commissioner to sit by himself. He had, it seems, private Instructions to seize upon Four of the leading Ministers, *viz.* *Mr. James Lawsons*, *David Lyndsey*, *Patrick Galloway*, and *Andrew Hay*. The Three first appeared in the Assembly, but he being willing to snap them all at once, waited for the Fourth till those that were there got Notice, and escaped, and so he mist them all; for which he was very much laughed at. The few Ministers that remain'd refused to act, giving for Answer, that they were too few to constitute an Assembly; so the Commissioner retired.

Note; at this Assembly, the Court influencing the Nobility, the Barons and Gentlemen, who, as ruling Elders, were used to be sent up from the Provinces, and were allowed to sit and vote with them, were forbid by the Court coming to the Assembly.

The Four Ministers abovenamed were sought after, high and low, to be apprehended, and would have been put to Death, especially Mr. *Patrick Galloway*; but they made their Escape for that Time, as did also many other Ministers, such as Mr. *Jahn Davison*, Mr. *James Carmichael*, Mr. *Andrew Polwart*, and many others.

Now was the Court resolved, in Conjunction with the Bishops, to ruin and overthrow the Church; and to this End, the Negotiations of the Archbishop in *England* having succeeded so far as to have all possible Concurrence from thence; to finish it the King called a Parliament: In this Parliament Matters were managed so underhand by the Court, that it seemed rather a private Council, than a Parliament. The Lords of the Articles, which were a Committee so called whose Work it was to prepare Business for the Cognizance of the House, were sworn to Secrecy, and when the House sat the Doors were lock'd up.

However, the Ministers got Intelligence of what was doing. *Calderwood* in his Account of this Part says, one of the Lords of the Articles betrayed them, fol. 155. Be that as it will, a Letter was privately sent to the Ministers in *Edinburgh*, from an unknown Hand, assuring them that the whole Business of that Parliament was to destroy the Church, and bid them take speedy Care about it. The Ministers knew not what to do, but they deputed Mr. *David Lindsey*, Minister of *Leith*, who was thought to be a Man acceptable to the King, to represent their Case, and to pray, in the humblest Manner, that an Assembly might be called and heard in Parliament, before any Thing was done to the Prejudice of the Church. But instead of hearing this,

the King caused Mr. *Lindsey* to be apprehended, as he was going into the Palace, and carried away to *Blackness-Castle*, without permitting him to deliver his Message: They sent other Messengers, to make Protest in open Parliament, but to no purpose; they could not get in. However, two Ministers, (*viz.*) Mr. *Robert Pont*, and Mr. *Balcanquell*, by their private Interest, did get in, and did make a Protest against the Proceedings.

Not content with this Proceeding, the King and Council sent an Order to the Magistrates of *Edinburgh*, that in Case any Minister did, in the Pulpit, offer to speak any Thing against the Proceedings of the Parliament, they should instantly pull them down from the Pulpit, and commit them to Prison; so the Acts were past to destroy the Church, and to erect the Episcopal Hierarchy in its Room, and were proclaimed at the Market-Cross of *Edinburgh*: The said Mr. *Pont* and Mr. *Balcanquell* taking Instruments of their Protest against it in the Name and Behalf of the Church. But the said Ministers had no sooner done so, but they were oblig'd to fly, as did also Mr. *James Lawfone*, and several others.

These Acts of Parliament, for protesting against which the Ministers were thus used, amounted to neither more nor less than an Acknowledgment of the King's Supremacy, and the Government of the Church by Bishops, &c.

It has been an Observation, which, I believe, will hold good throughout all Ages of the Church since the Reformation, that no sooner was Episcopacy, upon any Occasion, set up in the Church of *Scotland*, but it began always to persecute the Presbyterian Church. And this  
was

was the Case here ; for soon after this the Parliament sat again, viz. the 28th of *August* 1584, when an Act was made, enjoining all Ministers, Masters of Colleges, and other Ecclesiastick Persons, to appear within 40 Days, and subscribe the new Constitution of the Church, as it was then called, and submit to their Diocesan, on Pain of losing their Stipends.

Some Ministers refused this, and were forely persecuted by the Council ; but they continued to declare against it as illegal, and being questioned by the Council, how they durst oppose or condemn an Act of Parliament, they answered boldly, that they would condemn every Thing that was repugnant to the Word of God. Mr. *Craig*, one of these Ministers, was greatly insulted by the Earl of *Arran* ; but he answered him in a Kind of prophetick Rage, That God should, in a short Time, cast him from his Horse, meaning his Pride and Power, and humble him for mocking the Servants of God. This came literally to pass in a few Years after, the Earl being unhorst by *Douglas* of *Parkhead*, and killed.

On this Occasion Mr. *Craig* was depriv'd, and forbid to preach in *Edinburgh*, and the Archbishop went up into his Pulpit to preach, by Order of the King and Council ; but when the People saw him come up into the Pulpit, instead of their own Minister, they universally rose up and went out of the Church, the *Court-Party* only staying in the Place. The Copy of the Subscription required of the Ministers was as follows.

*We the Benefic'd-Men, Ministers, and Masters of Schools and Colleges, testifie and promise by these*

these our Hand-Writs, our dutiful and humble Submission to our Sovereign Lord the King's Majesty, and to obey, with all Humility, his Highness's Act of his late Parliament, holden at Edinburgh the 22d Day of May 1584. And that according to the same we shall shew our Obedience to our Ordinair, Bishop, or COMMISSIONER appointed by his Majesty to have the Exercise of spiritual Jurisdiction in our DIOCESS. And in Case of our Disobedience in these Premisses, to be content that our Benefices, Livings, and Stipends VAIK ipso facto, and that qualified and obedient Persons be provided in our Room, as if we were naturally dead. Witness, &c.

The Ministers that refused to subscribe this Paper, went into voluntary Banishment and remained in *England*, but mostly about *Berwick*, where the banished Lords also resided; but they had their Preaching even there but in private; for such was the Correspondence between the Episcopal-People in *Scotland* and the Church of *England*, that albeit the Queen of *England* permitted the banished Lords and Ministers of *Scotland* to harbour in *England*, yet would she not admit them to have Preaching in publick, as not being consonant to the Worship of the Church in *England*. Great Instance was made to Queen *Elizabeth* to deliver up those Noblemen and fugitive Ministers, which nevertheless she would never do; but she yielded at last to oblige them to reside farther from the Borders.

During these Oppressions, many Ministers of the Kirk complied with and subscrib'd the Form above, with some Alterations. Mr. *Andrew Simson*, Minister of *Dalkeith*, subscribed thus:

*I MASTER ANDREW SIMPSON, Minister of Dalkeith, swear by the Name of the great God, that I shall not preach any Heresie or seditious Doctrine, nor shall privately or publickly stir up the King's Majesty's Subjects to any Rebellion, and shall obey all his Laws and Acts of Parliament, so far as they agree with the Word of God.*

Others absolutely refused, and Mr. *Dalglish*, Minister of the *West Kirk* at *Edinburgh* was one; inso-much that a Scaffold was erected for his Execution, which, however, could not bring him off, neither would he ever comply. At last the Court was fain to publish an Explanation of it, softening the Meaning. But tho' this Explanation, which was penn'd by the Archbishop, was accepted with much Applause in *England*, and the *Scotts* Ministers were censur'd then for rejecting it, yet it gain'd but very little upon the Ministers in *Scotland*, and serv'd only to shew the Weakness of those Acts which they took so much Pains to explain.

In this Condition stood the Church for some Years, struggling with daily Innovations, the King their open and declared Enemy, and only supported by the Integrity of her Ministers and People : The great Subject upon which the Ministers were persecuted was, the subscribing the Obligation mentioned ; all such as refused were displac'd, and turn'd out ; and this continued to the Year 1587, when it pleased God to give a new Turn to the Affairs of *Scotland*, of which the following brief Account will inform us.

The banished Lords, who, as has been said, the Queen of *England* had been unkind to, were gone *South* ; but an Accident happen'd upon the

the

the Borders, which brought them back ; for on the 26th of July 1585, at a Meeting of the Wardens of the Borders on either Side, to adjust some Disputes, instead of an Agreement, they fell to Blows, and the young Lord *Russel*, eldest Son to the Earl of *Bedford*, with some other *English* Men were slain by the Laird of *Fernihurst* : Queen *Elizabeth* resenting this as a high Affront, shewed her Resolution to revenge it ; and immediately, as a Beginning, she smiles upon the Refugee-Lords, and encourages them with Money and Promises of Assistance to return into their Country by a strong Hand : The Confusions which then happen'd at Court, gave them a very good Opportunity, and several discontented Lords, and some under Prosecutions for differing Causes, not Religion, yet all joined with these to recover their Liberty by Force, and to lay hold of this Occasion, as offered by Heaven for their Return.

About the Beginning of *October*, the banished Lords from abroad, and the discontented Lords at home, meet at *Fedburgh* ; and mustering their Forces found they had between Nine and Ten Thousand Men well appointed : The King and the Earl of *Arran* lay at *Sterling*, with few Forces ; the Lords advance to *Falkirk*, and the next Day to *Sterling* : The Earl of *Arran*, the Archbishop, and all the wicked Crew fly over *Forth*, pursued faster by their own Guilt, than by their Enemies ; the Castle surrendered the 4th of *November*, and the Lords present themselves to the King.

And now the hypocritical Face being put outermost, they are received with Kindness and Favour, tho' nothing less intended or desired ; the Episcopal Crew fly while none pursues,

sues, the King owns he has been abused, promises to be directed by their Counsel, and pretends to acknowledge the good Hand of God in bringing Things to their due Course again, and restoring them, who were his faithful Friends, without Bloodshed.

The Scene being thus chang'd, Episcopacy vanish'd in a Moment, as a Vapour before the Sun; a Parliament was summoned, and the Church had its Assembly again, which had been suppress'd for near Three Years.

This Assembly was appointed for the 23<sup>d</sup> of *November* 1587, and the Place named was *Dumfermling*, the Plague reigning both at *Edinburgh* and *Sterling*; but when the Ministers came thither, they found the Ports of the Town shut against them, by Order of the Laird of *Pitferren*; so they adjourn'd to *Linlithgow*.

But the King, who mortally hated the Kirk, began now to work another way; for as he could not recover the Party that was now banished and fled; he fell to flattering the returned Lords, and by smooth Words, Entreaties, Promises, Bribes, &c. to bring them off from their Engagements with the Ministers; so that when the Assembly applyed to the King to abrogate the Acts of Parliament, which were their present Grievance, the King flew out in the greatest Rage imaginable, giving them vile and scurrilous Language, and railing them out of his Sight.

Having met with this Repulse, they applyed to the Lords, but were sorely abash'd when they found them cold and backward; some proposing Delays, others declining to meddle with it at all, others promising fair, but doing nothing, and all of them willing to put it off to  
ano-

another Occasion. But the Ministers beseeing the King with continually insisting upon Redress, he commanded them to exhibit what they alledg'd against the Acts of Parliament in Writing, this they did at large, with a Supplication to the King to do them Right. All which are at large in *Calderwood's History*, fol. 192, 193.

The King makes a Declaration, in Answer to this, explaining the Acts of Parliament, and justifying them in all Points. And thus it seem'd to be a Dispute between the Kirk and the King; for this Declaration is said to be penn'd by the King himself. The King would grant no more than this Declaration allow'd, so the Kirk return'd a Supplication to the King, and thus it stood for that Year. This Declaration and Supplication are curious Pieces for those to read who desire to be fully Masters of this Dispute, and much has been said of the extraordinary Nicety and Subtilty of the Composition. They are to be found at large in the (a) History of those Times.

As the Assembly was now revived, so were the Provincial Synods; and as that of *Fife* especially had been discontinued, because of their having fallen upon the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*: Upon their being now reviv'd, they renew their Accusation, and as it came in its Order before the said Synod, assembled at *St. Andrews*, who, after very mature Debates, the Archbishop being at first present, they excommunicated him. The Sentence was very particular, and merits a Place in these Memoirs, as follows, viz.

THE

---

(a) *Calderwood, Hist. fol. 193, to 195.*

THE ASSEMBLY went the Process deduced against Mr. Patrick Adamson, having considered and tried the same with mature Deliberation, and after Conference held, hath found, That the said Mr. Patrick Adamson hath no ways amended his Contumacy and Disobedience to the Voice of the Church of God, and of the said Assembly, convened in the Name of our Lord Jesus; but rather continuing therein, contemptuously travelleth to usurp and exercise his tyrannical Ambition and Supremacy over the Church of God, his Brethren, and this Assembly, with sundry scandalous Untruths, as well against the Word as against some of the Brethren, and being desired by diverse Admonitions, given him in the Name of the Assembly, to hear the Voice of the Church, he not only contemptuously and disdainfully refuseth the Censure and Judgment, and to be tried by the said Assembly; but claiming Supremacy and Judgment above them, heapeth up Contempt upon the Ordinance of Jesus Christ: Adding thereunto the Notoriety of the former Accusation against him before the General Assembly, wherein he was thought worthy, for weighty Causes and great Crimes, to be suspended from all Function of the Ministry, as by the said Act of Suspension appears; contrair to the Tenor whereof he hath not only usurp'd again the said Function, &c. against the Ordinance of the Church, but also hath displaid a Banner against the whole good Order and Government of the Church; THEREFORE, and for divers other notorious Slanders, whereof he stands accused, and refuses to undergo lawful Tryal: THE ASSEMBLY, in the Fear of God, and in the Name of Jesus Christ, moved by Zeal to the Glory of God, and for purging of his Church, excommunicates him the said

aid Patrick Adamson, and ordains the said Sentence of Excommunication instantly to be put in Execution in the Face of the Assembly, and by the Mouth of Mr. Andrew Hunter, Minister of Carnbie, declaring him to be one of those whom Christ commandeth to be holden as an Heathen or Pagan — Ordaining the said Sentence to be intimated in all the Kirks, that none pretend Ignorance thereof.

The Archbishop appealed, and excommunicated several of the Ministers; but he was answered by Mr. James Melvin at large, and this is the Sentence which the Bishop begg'd, at his Death, to be absolved from: These Things held the World in Suspence till the next Assembly met, which was in May 1585. This was that famous Assembly, called, *The Assembly of Conference*; wherein a Conference was managed by Commissioners on both Sides, and an Accommodation was proposed. The King insisted upon the Name of Bishop, the Assembly upon the Power and Office. The Assembly granted the Name, and the King gave up the Power, and thus the Matter seem'd to be compromised between them. And it is from this Assembly, that, to this Day, the Episcopal Party say, that the Presbyterians did acknowledge Episcopacy; but if they look into the Particulars of the Bishop which they allowed, they will find, that he was to be a Pastor of a Congregation, and that he was to be subject to the Assembly, and that he came under several other Circumstances, which will very ill support that Assertion.

In this Assembly, at the King's Request, and upon the Archbishop's Submission, they took  
off

off the Excommunication, pronounced at the Synod of *Fife*, against the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, and absolv'd him.

But against this Absolution one of the Ministers, *viz.* Mr. *Andrew Hunter* by Name, gave in that memorable Protestation, which stands upon Record in the Book of the Assembly, and to which afterwards most of the rest of the Ministers adhered; *which I have added at the End of this Part, No. A.*

It was observed, that the King wrought with this Assembly by much Policy and Cunning: He had, by Experience, found that rigid Methods, Persecutions, and Prosecutions would not answer, and that the Ministers became rather the more *CONSTANT*, or *obstinate*, as he called it, by such Methods; wherefore he went other ways to work, and seeking by all secret and underhand Dealings, to divide and draw off, to please, wheedle, perswade, entreat, and deceive; by these Methods he got many of the Brethren to act a different Part from what they would otherwise have done. This was evident in the Case of the Archbishop, where he formally submitted, but secretly abhorr'd them; the Church formally absolv'd him, and yet secretly believ'd him to be unreformed.

However it was, the Church, in all this Time, kept upon its Feet, tho' in continual Broils with the King; upon the Subject of Episcopacy, and as well about the Authority as the Name of a Bishop. There were Two Assemblies in the Year 1587, but the latter was convened extraordinary, because of the growing Danger of Popery; the Island being under great Apprehensions, at that Time, from the threatn'd Invasion of the *Spanish Armada*; and during which

the Disputes at home were somewhat abated ; and it was on this Occasion, that the Agreement, called the *General Band*, was subscribed by the King, Council, and several Persons of divers Estates through the whole Kingdom, which, in short, was neither more or less than what we now call an Association, and was done against the Papists, in which are these Words ;

‘ And for our farther hearty Union in this Service, we are content, and consent, that all and whatsoever our Feuds and Variances, fallen, or that may fall out between us, be within 40 Days hereafter, amicably referred and Submitted to Seven or Five indifferent Friends, chosen by his Majesty, of our whole Number ; and by their Moderation and Arbitriment taken away and componed : And finally, that we will neither directly or indirectly, separate or withdraw us from the Union or Fellowship of one another ; and as we shall answer to God, upon our Consciences ; and to the World, upon our Truth and Honour, and under Pain to be esteemed Traytors to God and his Majesty, and to have lost all Honour, Credit, and Estimation in Time coming.’

They were at this Time under Apprehensions, as is said, of the *Spanish* Invasion, and the next Assembly being on the 6th of *August* in *Edinburgh*, appointed a solemn Fast upon that Occasion. *NOTE*, the Assembly, not the King appointed this Fast. And at the End of *October*, the same Year, a solemn Fast was kept Three Sabbaths successively, a Communion celebrated, and the whole concluded with giving Thanks for the Defeat of the *Spanish Armada* by the *English*. *NOTE*, all this was without the King.

Things

Things now remain'd in a tolerable Quiet, the Fears of Popish Powers were over by Defeat of the *Spaniards*, the King intent upon his Marriage with the Daughter of the King of *Denmark*, went over Sea to *Copenhagen*. The next General Assembly was at *Edinburgh August 4. 1590*, and now the King and the Church seem'd perfectly *reconciled*, and, which is more, *united*. Of this Assembly I must record something, the Truth of which is not to be doubted ; but the more it is certain, the greater Brand of Infamy and Reproach will it leave behind upon the Person, who, after this, acted so contrary, in his Station, to what he appear'd that Day.

The Eighth Session of this Assembly the King came in Person into the Place where the Ministers held their Meeting, and being seated in a Chair of State, the Moderator Mr. *Patrick Galloway* propos'd Three Things to him, *viz.* The Ratification of their Liberties, the Purging the Land of Jesuits, Popish Seminaries, &c. and the Provision of Salaries or Stipends in every Parish for the Ministers. *For the first*, the King answer'd, That in every Parliament their Liberties were ratified, and should still be so. That he would, *with Heart and good Will*, join to do the Second ; and *for Stipends*, he refer'd them to the Council, and order'd them to name Commissioners to treat with the Council about it : After some other Debates, the King stood up, and taking off his Bonnet, with his Hands and Eyes lifted up to Heaven, *but hypocritically, say the Writers of those Times*, he broke out, as it were, in an Extasie of Praises and Thanksgiving to God, ‘ (1.) That he was born into the World, at a Time when

' the Light of God's Word shone clearly forth,  
 ' eclips'd neither with the Mists of Ignorance, or  
 ' the false Lights of Superstition. (2.) He bles-  
 ' sed God that had honoured him to be a King  
 ' over *SUCH A KIRK*, the *sincerest KIRK*  
 ' in the World,' says the King, repeating it  
 Three Times: To strengthen this he flies out  
 upon other Protestants, *The Church of GENE-*  
*VA, what are they?* Says the King, *they keep*  
*PASCHE* and *TULE*, *what Authority*  
*have they in God's Word,* says the King, *and*  
*where is their Institution?* As for our Neigh-  
 bour Church in England, *says this most sincere*  
*and wise King, whom our English Church-Men,*  
*after this, compared to Solomon for Wisdom,*  
 ' Their Service is an *EVIL MASS SAID*  
 ' IN ENGLISH, they want nothing of the  
 ' Mass but the Liftings: I charge you my good  
 ' People, *turning himself to every Side of the Kirk,*  
 ' Ministers, Doctors, Elders, Nobles, Barons,  
 ' and Gentlemen, to stand to your Purity, and  
 ' to exhort my People to do the same, *AND*  
 ' I, forsooth, so long as Life and Crown be  
 ' left to me, shall maintain the same against all  
 ' deadly.'

Had he been sincere in this, these Words  
 were to be recorded to his Honour, but we  
 shall soon see his Majesty acting quite another  
 Part. However, for the present, the Words,  
 and above all, the affectionate Manner with  
 which they were spoken, and their coming from  
 the Mouth of their King, unthought of, un-  
 expected by the Auditory, so affected the Mini-  
 sters that many burst out into Tears for Joy,  
 and Mr. Calderwood relating this Passage says,  
*There was nothing heard for a Quarter of an*  
*Hour*

*Hour in the Assembly, but praising God, and praying for the King (a).*

While the King continued in this Mood, the Church gat Ground, and went on in a truly growing Condition; her Judicatures were acknowledg'd, her Authority established, and her Episcopal Enemies truckled. And I cannot give a better Instance to confirm this last, than the Submission and Recantation of the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, the most implacable and inveterate Enemy of the Church, who had mortgaged Faith and Conscience for the Cause of Episcopacy, and had made Shipwreck of *BOTH*, as will appear under his Hand. This Recantation being so eminent, and the Character of the Man so well known, it is necessary to record it with the History of the Times; because it is a standing Monument of the Subjection of the Episcopal Hierarchy to the presbyterial Institution.

Nor can the Friends of the Church of *Scotland* desire two greater Testimonies to her divine Institution, than these from the Mouths of her two greatest Opposers, *viz.* the King and the Archbishop. The Acknowledgment of Enemies has a double Force in it: 'Tis a Confession that comes generally extorted by the Force of Truth, and the Influence of Conscience, as *Julian* the Apostate acknowledg'd Christ, when the poisoned Dart stuck in his Flesh. If we may believe the History of that Time, the Church of *Scotland* had not two more such powerful, and perhaps implacable Enemies in that Age, nay, scarcely before or

---

(a) Calderwood's *Hist. of the Church of Scotland*, fol. 256.

since, as the King and the Archbishop, and both of them are now brought to acknowledge the Purity of her Doctrine, the Exactness of her Discipline; *the one* to thank God for being born under such a sincere and heavenly Institution; *the other*, to cry God and the Church's Mercy for his apostatizing from it, and desiring to die in the Arms of that Church of which before he had been so cruel a Persecutor.

But to go on with the Bishop's Story. He had been excommunicated by the Synod of *Fife*, as has been said; one of his Crimes was Marrying the Marquess of *Huntly*, without requiring him to subscribe the Confession of Faith, and after the Presbytery of *Edinburgh* had inhibited any Minister to do it. For this he was pursued at Law, and stood out to a *Morning*, as it is there called, (*viz.*) to a Contempt or Execution; and the King beginning to be weary of the Contest, and willing, perhaps, at that Time to please the Assembly, abandon'd him, and deprived him of the Revenue of the Bishoprick; whether these Misfortunes, or the Reproaches of his own Conscience, brought him down, I will not determine, Charity bids us judge the best. But he fell into a languishing and grievous Sickness: In this Condition he acknowledges his Offence against God and against the Ministers, and sent to them to let them know it, and to offer himself to make publick Confession in the Pulpit, to give Satisfaction to all who had been offended at his Behaviour. He sent also to the Presbytery of *St. Andrews*, desiring they would give him Absolution, and receive him again into Communion, and into the Fellowship with the Saints.

The Ministers were doubtful of him for a long Time, they knew not the just Reasons, however were loth to resist the Work of Repentance, if begun in Sincerity, and were inclin'd to receive him, upon his giving Satisfaction by a publick Acknowledgment, as he proposed; but it soon appeared there was no Room for it, his Sickness being violent and dangerous: So they directed Two of their Body to go to him, and enquire of his Circumstances, and make their Report. These were Mr. James Melvin and Mr. Andrew Moncrief. As soon as the Bishop saw them enter his Room, he pull'd off his Cap, and raising himself he said, calling them by their Names, *Forgive me, forgive me, for God's Sake; for I have grievously offended you* in particular. They replied, that they forgave him, with all their Heart, and gave him their Hands thereupon; but began to talk with him about his publick Sins, and to exhort him to an unfeigned Repentance and Amendment: This he received with great Affection. Then they proceeded to ask him if he acknowledged the Validity of the Church's Censure, and of the Excommunication he was under. He told them *YES, he acknowledg'd it*; and cried out, *I pray ye loose me, loose me, for Christ's Sake*; and this he spoke with such Earnestness, and with so many Tears, that they could no longer doubt of his Sincerity, and having comforted him as well as they could, they left him, and making their Report to the rest of the Ministers, they met thereupon, and in a solemn Manner *absolved* him, giving Thanks to God who had been pleas'd to restore him by Conviction and Repentance.

In *April* following, the Synod of *Fife* meeting at *St. Andrews*, the Bishop, (*I call him so for Distinction*, they called him only *Mr. Patrick Adamson*) sent his Recantation in *Latin*; but the Synod desired him to cause it to be drawn again in *English*, and that he would make it as full and clear as he could, and set his Hand to it, which he did, and which is so worthy to be read with the rest of the Story, that I could not omit placing it in the Appendix to this Part, *No. B.* There needs no more to be added of the Bishop, save that about *February*, the Year following, he died.

At this Time, if ever in this King's Reign, the Church may be said to have been in its full grown Strength; tho' it lasted not long; for the King having, as was said, smil'd upon them, caref'd and complimented them, tho' it soon appeared that it was no more, and their *Arch-Enemy* having, as above, been reduced, they enjoyed a great Measure of Liberty and Authority: Some few Things indeed were wanting, which they set forth in their Petitions to the King and Council in Nine Articles, which, tho' the King did not immediately grant, yet they had kind Answers, and so much was done as to make them something easie. These Articles were,

1. That all Laws that have been made for the Weal of the true Kirk be ratified in Parliament, and a new Act pass'd, establishing the Jurisdiction of the Kirk, and all contrary Laws be abolished.
2. That the Kirk and Country be forthwith purged from Popish Priests and Excommunicates.

3. That

3. That a Law be made for repressing and punishing the Abusers of the Sacraments.
4. That Ministers be maintained in the Possession of their *Glebes, Manfes, &c.*
5. That Order be taken with the Author of the Tumult at the Bridge of *Des.*
6. That Laws be made against violating the Sabbath, and disturbing of Ministers in, or going about the Execution of their Office.
7. *Ibid.* for repressing of Rapin and Murther, that the Land may be purged of Blood.
8. That all Churches be forthwith planted with Ministers, &c. and sufficient Stipends allotted them.
9. That the Lands mortgaged to the Church, *i. e.* given by *deceased Persons in their Will*, with the Residue of the Tithes, which are not employed for Minister's Stipends, be bestowed on the Schools, Colleges, &c. As also for Provision for the Poor, and repairing the Kirks.

All these Things the King had promised in general Terms formerly to perform, but it seems, the Ministers found not the Effect of those Promises as they desired, and therefore to the said Articles they added one, which the King took not well at their Hands, *viz.* That, in respect many Things had been promised, but few performed, that now the Manner and Time of performing should be expressed, and the Execution of every Part agreed to. This Clause seemed to reproach the King with evil treating the Church, which he laid up in his Heart.

And now the Ministers thought the Time was come, and an Opportunity presented when the Polity of the Church might be confirm'd, and the

the Book of Discipline be recognized, and tho' they foresaw that they would find it very difficult to bring the King and his great Men to it, so as to get it enacted in Parliament ; they resolved, however, to give it all the Sanction they could : The Commission of the General Assembly therefore published an Act to ' Order and appoint, ' *these are the very Words*, that whosoever hath ' born Office in the Ministry within this Kirk, ' or presently bear, or hereafter shall bear Office therein, do, and shall subscribe the Heads ' of the Discipline of the Kirk within this ' Realm, at length set down and allowed by ' Act of the whole Assembly, in the Book of ' Polity, registred in the Register of the Kirk, ' and namely in the Heads controverted by the ' Enemies of the Discipline of the reformed ' Kirk in this Realm, and that they be charg'd ' to do so by every particular Presbytery where ' they be resident ; and this, under Pain of Ex- ' communication, to be executed against the ' Non-Subscribers, and the Presbyteries which ' shall be negligent, shall receive publick Re- ' buke before the whole Assembly.'

It is observ'd, however, in (a) History, that several Ministers in the Church shunned to subscribe, and others that did subscribe, fell off and accepted Bishopricks in the Innovations which soon after were made by the King upon the Church.

Nor was this all. But farther to prove what I have observed of the Church's being arrived to its full grown State, it is to be observed, That the Parliament being now summoned to the

---

(a) Calderwood's *Hist. fol.* 257.

the 29th of *May* 1692, the Church obtained, in that Meeting, a compleat Ratification of their Privileges and Government, and particularly of their General Assemblies, Synods, and Presbyteries, which they had for many Years before struggled with their Princes and Governours for, but to no Purpose. The Tenor of this valuable, and indeed unexpected Act of Parliament is too long to insert at large; but the principal enacting Clause is as follows. The whole is to be found among the Scots (a) Acts of Parliament.

*Our Sovereign Lord and Estates of Parliament following the lovable and good Example of their Predecessors, have ratified and approved, and by the Tenor of this present Act, ratifies and approves all Liberties, Privileges, Immunities, and Freedoms whatsoever, given and granted by his Highness, his Regents, in his Name, or any of his Predecessors to the true and holy Kirk, (b) PRESENTLY established within this Realm, and declared in the first Act of his Highness's Parliament, the 20th of October 1579, and all and whatsoever Acts of Parliament and Statutes made before by his Highness and his Regents, anent the Liberty and Freedom of the said Kirk, and especially the first Act of the Parliament of 1581, with the whole Particulars there mentioned, which shall be als sufficient as if the samine were here expressed, and all the other Acts of Parliament made (c) SENSINE in Favour of the true Kirk, and (d) SIC LIKE ratifies and*

(a) Scots Acts of Parliament, Part 1. p. 607.

(b) Presently, that is, now.

(c) Sensine, i. e. Since that Time.

(d) Siclike, i. e. Likewise.

and approves the General Assemblies, appointed by the said Kirk, and declareth it shall be lawful to the Kirk and Ministers, every Year at the least, and oftner pro re nata, as Occasion and Necessity shall require, to hold and keep general Assemblies, providing that the King's Majesty, or his Commissioner with them, to be appointed by his Highness, be present at (a) ilk General Assembly, before the dissolving thereof, nominate and appoint Time and Place, when and where the next General Assembly shall be holden; and in Case neither his Majesty nor his said Commissioner be present for the Time in that Town where the said General Assembly shall be holden, then, and in that Case, it shall be (b) leesome to the said General Assembly, by themselves, to nominate and appoint Time and Place where the next General Assembly of the Kirk shall be kept and holden, as they have been in Use to do thir Times by past. And also ratifies and approves the Synodal, or Provincial Assemblies, to be holden by the said Kirk and Ministers twice ilk Year, as they have been within every Province of this Realm, and also the Presbyteries and particular Sessions appointed by the said Kirk, with the whole Jurisdiction and Discipline of the same Kirk.

Agreed upon by his Majesty in Conference had by his Highness with certain of the Ministers convened to that Effect.

It was at this Time that the Assembly took that Freedom which they have been so often reproached with since, and which, they said, King

James

(a) Ilk, i. e. Each or Every.

(b) Leesome, i. e. Lawful.

James never forgave them, (*viz.*) to admonish the King. I shall give it impartially in the Words of their own Historians: ‘ The Assembly directed their Brethren who were appointed to present the Articles (*that is, those above mentioned*) to go immediately to his Majesty, and to admonish him gravely, in the Name of the eternal God, to have Respect in Time to the Estate of true Religion, to the many Murthers and Oppressions, daily multiplied, through Impunity and Lack of Justice, and to discharge the Kingly Office in both, as he will eschew the fearful Challenge of God, and avert his Wrath off himself and the whole Land, and that he might be the better informed, to lay down the Particulars to him, and crave Answer.’

It is true, it was a Freedom which Kings have not been much acquainted with in this Age; but the Ministers of that Age thought it their Duty, and perhaps if Ministers had since done their Duty, with the same Care and Conscience, tho’ their Kings had been ill pleased, they had done better for the Publick, and for Religion also.

However this was done with dutiful Respect, and when the King complained of the Freedom, they, for Vindication of their own Behaviour to their Prince, caused the Assembly to pass an Act, ordaining, that ‘ No Minister within this Realm utter, from the Pulpit, any rash or irreverent Speeches against his Majesty, or his Council, or their Proceedings; but that all their publick Admonitions proceed upon just and necessary Causes, and sufficient War-rant, in all Fear, Love, and Reverence, under Pain of deposing the Offenders. And this  
most

most effectually clears them from the Charge of being mutinous and rebellious, and of refusing to submit to lawful Authority.

It is worth noting, for the Observation of the Curious, that this happy Parliament, wherein the Church of *Scotland* was thus established, and her Rights of every Kind recognized, met on that particular Day from which her Overthrow was 72 Years after dated. I mean at the Restoration, *viz.* the 29th of *May*.

The Authority of the Church being in this flourishing Estate, 'tis necessary to record, to their eternal Praise, as no doubt it is in Heaven to their eternal Comfort, how the Ministers made use of their Time, and how they applied themselves to discharge the Duty which lay upon them as a national Church. I shall single out one or two Examples.

1. They appointed a Visitation of all the Presbyteries in the Kingdom, and that the Church of *Scotland* may be a standing Example to all the Protestant Churches in the World, I shall give the very Words of the Act of the Assembly, the Meaning and Design of this Visitation as follows: ' Forasmuch as the Visitors  
' of Presbyteries, universally throughout the  
' whole Realm, are thought a Thing very necessary, and from diverse Assemblies Commission hath been given for that Effect, a Necessity yet remaining, which craveth the continuing of the said Commission, the Assembly  
' hath given Commission to certain Brethren, to visit, and try the Doctrine, Life, Conversion, Diligence, and Fidelity of the Pastors, within the said Presbyteries: And siclike to try, if there be any of the beneficed Number within the same, not making Residence, having

ving no reasonable Excuse : If there be any that have dilapidate their Benefices, set Tacks, and made other Dispositions of the same, without the Consent of the General Assembly ; any slanderous Person, unmeet to serve in the Kirk of God, unable and unqualified to teach and edifie : And with Advice of the Presbytery, within the which the said Persons remain, to proceed against them, according to the Quality of the Offence, according to the Acts of the Kirk.'

2. The Synod of *Fife* being met at *St. Andrews* September 25. 1593, and being informed of the Threatnings, the Insolence, and the growing Power of Papists and other Enemies of the Truth, and how the Impunity in suffering these Things to go unpunished, was a great and a national Sin, moved with this and other Signs of imminent Danger, made the following Conclusion.

*That the Pastors of every Congregation, being first prepared themselves, by Abstinence, Prayer, and diligent Study, and Attendance upon their Charge, travel carefully by their Doctrine and good Example to move and dispose the Hearts of their Flock to unfeigned Repentance, calling for Mercy and Preservation at the Hands of God, that thus both Pastor and People may be prepared against that general and Solemn Fast which the Synod thinketh most needful to be published throughout the Realm. The Causes whereof, beside the general Reasons for Humiliation in Time past, are as follows.*

The Causes which are here referred to were (a) summed up in many Particulars, referring chiefly

chiefly to the Growth of Popery, Idolatry, Prophaneness, and Immorality.

To this the said Assembly added the directing some of their Members to the King ' To tell plainly to his Majesty, *these be also their own Words*, that which all his true Subjects think, touching his too much bearing with, favouring and countenancing Papiſts and Traytors, his Negligence in repressing Idolatry, and establishing the Kingdom of Christ within his Realm, and to declare freely to his Majesty the Resolution of all his godly and faithful Subjects, *viz.* That they are ready to give their Lives, rather than to suffer the same.'

This was plain dealing, and this was what the Courtiers afterwards called disciplining of the King. But the Synod stopt not here; for they went on to excommunicate the Popish and *Spanishly* affected Nobility, so they then called them, as Persons ' Who, by their Idolatry, Heresie, Blasphemy, Apostacy, Perjury, and professed Enmity to the Kirk and true Religion, had, *ipso facto*, cut themselves off from Christ and his Church.' This Excommunication by the Synod is registred at large in the Acts of the Church, having been afterwards approv'd by the Assembly. But the King took great Distaste at it, and from hence forward began to withdraw his Countenance, and Assistance, and Favour from the Church, as soon appeared in the Consequences; for the Church pursued the excommunicated Lords, the King protected them: The Church desired the King to give them no Access to his Person, the King openly received them at *Jedburgh*, and the like.

Upon this a Meeting, or Convention of Ministers, Commissioners of Burroughs, and Barons met at *Edinburgh*, and deputed some of their Members to wait upon the King. The King refused to admit them, and sent them Word he did not acknowledge their Convention, it being without his Advice. They insisted upon the Legality of their Meeting. At last *the King yielded*, and gave such Answers as he thought fit to their Advices, but with little Satisfaction, and perhaps as little Sincerity. However, the excommunicated Lords offered themselves to Tryal, and the King agreed to it, giving a Commission for that Purpose to a certain Number of the Peers and Gentlemen to try them : Their Names were as follows, (*viz.*) the Earls of *Huntly*, *Angus*, *Errol*, Laird of *Auchindown*, and Sir *James Chisholme*. But the King abolished the whole Process afterwards, and by his own Royal Declaration absolved them all, and that upon Conditions not at all acceptable to the General Assembly, who, being met at *Edinburgh* May 7, 1594, ratified the Excommunication against the Lords, ordered it to be pronounced in every Church in *Scotland*, and deputed a Committee of their Ministers to lay a Representation of the *DANGERS OF THE CHURCH*, (*mark it is an old Phrase*) before the King, and report his Answer. The Representation was very long, and the King's Answer particular ; but in short, the King promised to forefault the excommunicated Lords ; that is, to *outlaw* them, and that the Parliament should meet according to the Time appointed : All which was made good, and the excommunicated Lords were declared guilty of High Treason, their Coats of Arms torn by the Herald,

rald, and their Estates forfeited : Upon which they broke out into open Rebellion, and thereupon followed the Battle of *Balrinness*, between the Earl of *Argyle*, and the Earls of *Huntly* and *Errol*, wherein the excommunicated Lords were defeated. But that is not to our Purpose.

Having often quoted Mr. *Calderwood's* History to the Matters of Fact here related, I shall now give the Words of that ancient and grave Historian to the Subject I am upon, confirming what I have said of the full grown State of the Church ; And I do it here, because that State seem'd now to be at its Hight, and that this was the Time from whence it began sensible to decline ; for now the Church fell into Difficulties and Strife, which eclips'd her Glory for many Years, from whence, however, we shall see her quickly rising again with a double Splendor. Mr. *Calderwood's* Observation is this :

‘ This Year is a remarkable Year to the  
 ‘ Kirk of *Scotland*, both for the Beginning, and  
 ‘ for the End of it. This Kirk was now come  
 ‘ to the greatest Purity that ever it attained  
 ‘ unto ; so that her Beauty was admirable to  
 ‘ Foreign Kirks. But the Devil envying the  
 ‘ Happiness, and laudable Proceedings of the  
 ‘ Ministry, and Assemblies of the Kirk, stirred  
 ‘ up both Papists and Politicians to disturb her  
 ‘ Peace. The Papists perceived there was no  
 ‘ Rest for them in *Scotland*, if the Authority  
 ‘ of the Kirk continued ; the Politicians feared  
 ‘ that their Craft and Trade, which is to use  
 ‘ indifferently all Men and Means to attain to  
 ‘ their own Ends, and to set themselves up,  
 ‘ as it were, in the Throne of *Christ*, should be  
 ‘ undone. Whereas at her earnest Desire, the  
 ‘ Apo-

† Apostate Earls *Angus, Huntly, and Errol* were  
 † forefaulted for an unnatural and treasonable  
 † Conspiracy with the *Spaniard*, and were ex-  
 † pelled out of the Country; and she was now  
 † setting her self to reform whatsoever Abuses  
 † and Corruptions were perceived in her Mem-  
 † bers, and against the Re-entry and Restaura-  
 † ration of the said Earls. But was forced, by  
 † Craft and Policy of Politicians, and dissembled  
 † Papists, to take her self to the Defence of her  
 † own Liberties, and of that holy Discipline,  
 † which was her Bulwark, and to desist from  
 † farther Opposition to the Re-entry of the ex-  
 † communicate Earls. For some thorny Que-  
 † stions, in Points of Discipline, were devised,  
 † whereby her Authority was in many Points  
 † called in doubt. Ministers were called before  
 † the Council, to give account of their Rebukes  
 † in Sermons, and to underly their Censure.  
 † The Ministers of the Kirk of *Edinburgh* were  
 † forced to lurk, and that Kirk, which was a  
 † Watch-Tower, and shined as a Lamp to the  
 † rest, was darkned, and no less Danger ap-  
 † peared to threaten the rest. In a Word, in  
 † the End of this Year began a fearful Decay,  
 † and Declining of this Kirk.

To confirm this, we shall give a Summary,  
 and that a very brief one, of the Transactions  
 for the few Years next following, in which the  
 Ministers struggled with the Defections of the  
 Times, the refractory Disposition of their  
 Prince, and the growing Insolence of Courtiers  
 and Enemies, till they were crush'd, and  
 forc'd to submit to the Pleasure of him, who  
 thought fit, at that Time, to bring them under  
 the Feet of their Enemies for a Season.

The next Assembly met the 25<sup>th</sup> of *March* 1596; the King himself came thither; It seems it was to desire the Ministers to forward a Loan of Money, which he had designed to propose to the whole Kingdom, on the extraordinary Occasions which were then before him. The Ministers declined it, alledging, that the forfeited Estates of the Rebels were to have been applied to that Use, it being just that those who had been the Occasion of his extraordinary Expence, should contribute to defray the Charge of it.

The Ministers fell to complaining of his Conduct, his personal Sins, and the Sins of those in his Family, which it was his Duty to restrain. The King answered, if there were any gross Faults in him, or his House, he would not decline the Judgment of the Assembly, provided it was done privately. Old *Andrew Melvin* answered bluntly, *They could not justifie private Rebuke for open Offences*, and speaking to the Moderator, charged him, as he would answer it to God, that he should now do his Duty, and speak to the King plainly and freely, as was his Place to do. The King stood silent a while, and then withdrew.

This Assembly was famous for Three Things. *First*, for their Search into and Regulation of their own Corruptions as Ministers, extending to all the Ministers of the Church; which Regulation consists of Eight Heads, and are to be seen in the Registers of the Church. And *Secondly*, For that famous Humiliation and solemn renewing of the *Covenant*, which was begun in the Assembly the 30<sup>th</sup> of *March* 1596, and was carried on through all the Ministers of *Scotland*. And *Thirdly*, For their humble,  
but

but faithful Representation to the King of the Sins, as well of his Person and Family, as of his Council and Nobility, and the Remedies thereof, which were exhibited in Five Articles, and it must be own'd this was the last Time he had the Blessing of a faithful Ministry to advise and exhort him; and this Assembly being over, it was observed by many, that the Church never had another like it, during that King's Reign, and it is at this Period that Mr. *Calderwood* places in capital Letters these Words:

*Here end the sincere General Assemblies of the Kirk of Scotland.*

The Ministers of this Assembly went on with renewing the Covenant in all the Presbyteries, and at last in Parishes; but when it came to particular Persons, and especially to the Court, or to those who lived near the Court, *viz.* in *Edinburgh* in particular, they declined it, and it began gradually to drop and be omitted: What followed we shall soon see.

The excommunicate Lords were not without their Friends at Court; the King had been prevailed with to consent to their Return, but was not willing to take it upon himself for fear of embroiling himself with the Church, whom he feared as well as hated. It was concerted therefore to summon a Parliament, or Convention of Estates to meet at *Falkland*, and to get such especially to this Convention as were in the secret. At the opening the Session a Motion was made by *Alex. Seatoun*, Brother to the Lord *Seatoun*, to recal the Lords; it was seconded by several others, using some Threatnings,

nings, as if it would be best to do so, least they should join with the Enemies of their Country.

To carry on the Point, several Ministers had Notice given them to be there; but it was only such as they thought might be easiest brought to comply. But Mr. *Andrew Melvin*, a famous and most faithful Champion of the Reformation, went unsent for. It seems he was appointed or commissioned by the last Assembly to watch against the imminent Dangers that might threaten the Church: And this was his Authority.

When the Ministers were called in, he appear'd at the Head of them: The King taking Notice of it, ask'd *Who sent for him?* He answered, *SIR, I have a Call to come here from Christ and his Church, who have a special Concern in what you are doing here, and in direct Opposition to whom you are all here assembled; but be ye assured that no Council taken against him shall prosper. And I charge you, Sir, in his Name, that you or your Estates, here convened, favour not God's Enemies whom he hateth.* After he had said this, and more to the like Purpose to the King, he turn'd his Speech to the Members of the Convention, and 'Challeng'd them with being assembled there with a traiterous Design against Christ and his Church, and their native Country: ' And was going on when the King interrupted him, and commanded him to withdraw, which he did; but soon let the King hear of him again upon the following Occasion.

The Commission of the *last Assembly* was sitting at that Time, and finding which Way Things were going, they resolv'd to send some  
of

of their Members to the King, to expostulate this Matter with him: Of these the same Mr. *Andrew Melvin* was one. When they came to the King, who received them in his Closet, Mr. *James Melvin*, being first in the Commission, spoke as the Mouth of the rest, and told the King their Errand from *the Commission*. The King took him up roundly, and charg'd the Commission with Sedition, and the Ministers with being Spreaders of seditious Reports, alarming the People with imaginary Dangers, and creating needless and unjust Fears. Mr. *James* being a courteous, fair spoken Man, began to answer the King with Respect and with great Reverence, when Mr. *Andrew*, taking the Words out of his Mouth, says he, ' Man, this  
' is not a Time to flatter, but to speak plain-  
' ly; for, says he, our Commission is from the  
' mighty God, to whom the King is but a *silly*  
' *Vassal*.' Then taking the King by the Sleeve, he tells him, *Sir, we will humbly reverence your Majesty always, namely in publick; but we have this Occasion to be with your Majesty in private, and you are brought in extream Danger, both of your Life, and of your Crown, and with you the Country and Kirk of God is like to be wracked, for not telling the Truth, and giving you a faithful Counsel: We must discharge our Duty, or else be Enemies to Christ and you. Therefore, Sir, as diverse Times before, so now I must tell you, that there are two Kings, and two Kingdoms. There is Christ and his Kingdom the Kirk, whose Subject King James the Sixth is, and of whose Kingdom he is not a King, nor a Head, nor a Lord, but a Member; and they, whom Christ hath called, and commanded to watch over his Kirk, and govern his spiritual Kingdom, have sufficient Authority and Power from him so*

to do; which no Christian King nor Prince should control nor discharge, but fortifie and assist; otherwise they are not faithful Subjects to Christ. Sir, when you were in your swaddling Clouts, Christ reigned freely in this Land, in Spight of all his Enemies. His Officers and Ministers conveened and assembled for ruling of his Kirk, which was ever for your Welfare also, when the same Enemies were seeking your Destruction; and have been, by their Assemblies and Meetings since, terrible to these Enemies, and most speedable for you; will you now, when there is more than Necessity, challenge Christ's Servants, your best and most faithful Subjects, for their conveening, and for the Care they have of their Duty to Christ and you; whenas you should rather commend and countenance them, as the godly Kings and Emperors did. The Wisdom of your Counsel, which is devilish and pernicious, is this, that you may be served with all Sorts of Men to come to your Purpose and Grandour, Jew and Gentile, Papist and Protestant. Because the Ministers and Protestants in Scotland are too strong, and control the King, they must be weakened and brought low, by stirring up a Party against them, and the King being equal and indifferent, both shall be faine to flee to him: So shall he be well settled. But, Sir, let God's Wisdom be the only true Wisdom, this will prove meer and mad Folly: For his Curse cannot but light upon it; so that in seeking both, you shall lose both: Whereas in cleaving uprightly to God, his true Servants shall be your true Friends, and he shall compel the rest counterfeitly and lyingly to serve you, as he did to David.

It is easie to guess how well this pleased the King: However, tho' the King was at first very warm and angry, yet he grew calm and pleasant, protested that he had no Knowledge  
of

of the Return of the Lords, and that offer what they would, they should have no Favour from him; till they had fully satisfied the Church. This Discourse of Mr. *Melvin* to the King, Mr. *Calderwood* says was taken out of his own Memoirs, left behind him, written with his own Hand.

The King kept ill his Promises in this Case also; for now Dissatisfactions grew high between the King and the Ministers; the King encroaching daily upon their Liberties, which they, by no Means, would give up, they deputed Four of their Body to the King, to represent, that there was a most dangerous Jealousie begun between him and the Church, which could not but be fatal to both, and to desire his Majesty to declare plainly what offended him, that, if possible, they might give him Satisfaction.

The King answered in few Words, ‘ That ther could be no Agreement between him and them till the *Marches* of their *Jurisdiction* were ridden.’ This is a *Scoticism* in Speech, alluding to the People, who used to ride annually over the Marches or Borders of both Kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, to settle and ascertain the Bounds, as our Parish-Officers do annually in *England* for the Parishes. This intimated plainly that the King resolved to put Limits to the Church’s Power, and to restrain them in some of those Liberties and Privileges which they claimed as their due. When the King had given them this Hint, he gave also Four Heads of Complaint against them, in which, he said, he expected Redress.

1. That in their Preaching, they should have nothing to do to speak of the King’s Affairs, or of Matters of State.

3. That

2. That the General Assembly should not meet but by the King's Authority and especial Command.
3. That he have a negative Voice in the Assembly.
4. That the Church Judicatories meddle not with Civil Matters, or with any Matter of Law.

The Ministers now began to see plainly, that the Platform was laid for the Overthrow of the Ecclesiastick Constitution: They thought it was a good Providence to the Church that the King spoke so directly to his own Designs, and they acted with the greatest Prudence and Caution possible to take from him all Occasion of Advantage over them. They ordered therefore (1.) That all the Acts of Parliament, Acts of Council, Declarations of the King, or other Documents in Favour of the Liberties and Discipline of the Church should be search'd out, and collected. (2.) That the Presbyteries should be advertised not to enter into any Debates or Disputes upon the King's Proposal, that they might not be supposed to call in Question the undoubted Liberties and Authority of the Church. *But he that has a Nail to drive, will not want a Hammer*: The King had an ill Turn ready for the Church, and he let them know it on the following Occasion.

One Mr. *David Black*, a Minister in *St. Andrews*, had used some distastful Speeches in a Sermon some Months before, which having given Offence to the King and Council, they resolved to begin there, and summoned him to appear before the Council to answer the same.

Thus the King began with them, and they, on the contrary, found him Work enough; for in the first Place; they went on in their judicial Process against the two great Women, whose Cause the King had openly espoused, *viz.* the Lady *Huntly*, and the Lady *Levingstone*. To the first they directed a Libel or Summons to answer their Charge: This was, if possible, to prevent her being received at Court, as she could not well be, while under the Process of the Church, before she had given Satisfaction.

2. They ordered the Presbytery of *Sterling* to proceed to Excommunication against the Lady *Levingston*. And as to Mr. *David Black*, they ordered that he should decline the Judicatory of the King and Council, *or as we call it in England*, plead to their Jurisdiction, and refuse to answer before them. Then they came to a Resolution in the Assembly, *nemine contradicente*, That all Judgment of Doctrine appertaineth to the Pastors of the Church *in primâ instantiâ*: and they appointed a Committee, and farther ordered all the Ministers to search all the Warrants of Scripture, or Precedents in the Laws of the Realm, to support that Position.

It would swell these Memoirs too much, to give a Particular of all the Disputes which pass'd between the King and the Assembly of Ministers on this Occasion: They waited on him with their other Demands, and got tolerable Answers, tho' the King was highly affronted with Mr. *Patrick Galloway*, one of those that was sent to him, who told him, *That their Enemies got Grants and Performance; but the Church got fair Words and Promises only*. However the King, upon a new Application, promised them positively, that all they desir'd should be granted  
with

with Respect to the Popish Lords and the two Ladies abovenamed : But there was yet a Sting in the Tail, about Mr. *David Black*, of whom the King said he must appear and answer for himself, to satisfy the *English* Ambassador, who, it seems, had complained against him, and take heed, says the King, *that you decline not my Judicatory, for if you do, it will be worse than you imagine.*

Hereupon the Assembly went upon it openly, resolving not to give up their Rights, and directed Mr. *Black* to give in a Writing of Declination under his Hand, which, as it is a very curious Piece, and of great Consequence in the Question, and being penn'd with much Art, as well as maintained with much Vigor, I cannot omit publishing it, as follows :

*The Declination of the King and Council's Judicature, in Matters spiritual, namely in preaching of the Word, given in to the same at Halyrud-House, by Mr David Black, Minister at St. Andrews, in his own Name, and in Name of his whole Brethren of the Ministry, the 18th Day of November, 1596.*

‘ U N T O your Majesty and Lords of secret  
 ‘ Council, with all Reverence in Christ  
 ‘ humbly meaneth, I Mr. *David Black*, Minister  
 ‘ of the Evangel at St. *Andrews*, that where I  
 ‘ am charged by your Highness's Letters, to  
 ‘ compear and answer for certain unreverent,  
 ‘ unfamous, and undecent Speeches, alledged ut-  
 ‘ tered by me in some of my Sermons made in  
 ‘ publick, in the Kirk of St. *Andrews*, in the  
 ‘ Month of *October* last by past 1596, as at more  
 ‘ length is contained in the said Letters :  
 ‘ Wherein

‘ Wherein albeit the Conscience of my Innocen-  
 ‘ cy upholdeth me sufficiently, against whatso-  
 ‘ ever Calumnies of Men; and that I am ready  
 ‘ by the Assistance of the Grace of my God, to  
 ‘ give a Confession, and stand to the Defence of  
 ‘ every Point of the Truth of my God, uttered  
 ‘ by me in the said Sermons, either in opening  
 ‘ up of his Word, or Application thereof, be-  
 ‘ fore your Majesty or Council, or whatsoever  
 ‘ Person or Persons, that upon any lawful Cause,  
 ‘ will crave an Account of that Hope which is  
 ‘ in me, in whatsoever Place or Manner, so  
 ‘ far as shall be requisite for clearing and Main-  
 ‘ tenance of the Truth, and of my Ministry, and  
 ‘ may be done without the Prejudice of that  
 ‘ Liberty, which the Lord Jesus hath given and  
 ‘ established in the spiritual Office-Bearers of  
 ‘ his Kingdom. Yet seeing I am at this Time  
 ‘ brought to stand before his Majesty and Coun-  
 ‘ cil, as a Judge set to cognosce, and discern  
 ‘ upon my Doctrine, where through my answer-  
 ‘ ing to the said pretended Accusation might  
 ‘ import, with the manifest Prejudice of the  
 ‘ Liberties of the Kirk, an Acknowledgment of  
 ‘ your Majesty’s Jurisdiction, in Matters that are  
 ‘ meer spiritual, which might move your Ma-  
 ‘ jesty to attempt farther in the spiritual Go-  
 ‘ vernment of the House of God, to the Provo-  
 ‘ cation of his hot Displeasure against your Ma-  
 ‘ jesty, and in End either a plain subverting of  
 ‘ the spiritual Judicature, or at least a confound-  
 ‘ ing thereof with the Civil, if at any time pro-  
 ‘ fane and ambitious Magistrates might by such  
 ‘ dangerous Beginnings find the Hedge broken  
 ‘ down to make a violent Irruption upon the  
 ‘ Lord’s Inheritance, which the Lord forbid.  
 ‘ Therefore I am constrained, in all Humility  
 ‘ and

and Submission of Mind, to use a Declinature of this Judgment, at least *in prima instantia*; which I beseech your Majesty to consider earnestly, and accept of, according to Justice, for the Reasons following.

The Lord Jesus, the God of Order, and not of Confusion, as appeareth evidently in all the Churches of the Saints, of whom only I have the Grace of my Calling, as his Ambassador, albeit most unworthy of that Honour, to bear his Name among his Saints, hath given me his Word, and no Law or Tradition of Man, as the only Instructions, whereby I should rule the whole Actions of my calling, in Preaching of the Word, Administration of the Seals thereof, and Exercise of Discipline: And in the Discharge of this Commission I cannot fall in Reverence of any Civil Law of Man, but in so far as I shall be found to have passed the Compass of my Instructions, which cannot be judged, according to the Order established by that God of Order, but by the Prophets, whose Lips he hath appointed to be Keepers of his heavenly Wisdom, and to whom he has subjected the Spirits of the Prophets. And now seeing it is the Preaching of the Word, whereupon I am accused, which is a principal Point of my Calling, of Necessity the Prophets must first declare, whether I have kepted the Bounds of my Directions, before I come to be judged of your Majesty's Laws, for my Offence.

Because the Liberty of the Kirk, and whole Discipline thereof, according as the same has been, and is presently, exercised within your Majesty's Realm, has been confirmed by diverse Acts of Parliament, and approved by the Confession of Faith, by the Subscription and Oath

of

of your Majesty and Majesty's Estates, and  
 whole Body of the Country, and peaceably  
 enjoyed by the Officebearers of the Kirk in all  
 Points; and namely in the foresaid Point,  
 touching the Judgment of the preaching of  
 the Word *in prima instantia*, as the Practice of  
 diverse late Examples evidently will shew.  
 Therefore the Question touching my Preach-  
 ing ought first, according to the Grounds and  
 Practice foresaid, be judged by the Ecclesiasti-  
 cal Senate, as the competent Judge thereof, in  
 the first Instance.

In Respect whereof, and for diverse other  
 weighty Causes and Considerations, namely  
 of eschewing the great and dangerous Incon-  
 veniences, that might fall both to Religion  
 and to your Majesty's own Estate, by the Ap-  
 pearance of Distraction of your Majesty's Af-  
 fection from the Ministry, and good Cause of  
 God in their Hands, to the Grief of your Ma-  
 jesty's best Subjects, and to the Encouragement  
 of the Adversaries, both of your Majesty's E-  
 state and Religion. Therefore I most humbly  
 beseech your Majesty, and in the Name of  
 my Brethren the Commissioners of the General  
 Assembly, and the Remnant of the Brethren  
 of the Ministry, who, for testifying their ear-  
 nest Affection and Allowance of the Premisses,  
 have subscribed these Presents with their  
 Hands, that your Majesty in this Action,  
 would manifest your earnest Care to maintain  
 that Liberty, which the Church of Christ  
 within the Country, for the Comfort of the  
 Saints, hath with so great Blessing enjoyed,  
 since the Gospel was first revealed in this  
 Land, wherethrough the Godly may be com-  
 forted, the Adversaries frustrated of their Ex-  
 pectati-

‘pectation, and your Majesty truly honoured  
in honouring the Lord Jesus.’

The Foundation of Discontent being thus laid on both Sides, all Things tended to an open Rupture between the Parties: The King at the Head of the Civil Power, and the Assembly at the Head of the Ecclesiastick, push'd at one another without any Appearance of a Reconciliation. It is, without doubt, that the King was Aggressor: He found the Severity of the Ministers a Burthen that he could by no Means bear. They said the same of his Invasions upon their Liberties. Several Proposals of Accommodation were made, and sometimes they came very near to one another; nay, at one Time the King was brought to agree to the Mediums they propos'd; but the next Morning they found his Mind quite altered again, and if it be true which one of the Writers of those Times affirms, *viz.* That the King was resolv'd upon setting up Episcopacy, and had named the Bishops to every Diocess (*a*), before Mr. *Black's* Declinature above. It is no more to be wonder'd at, that tho' his Majesty might sometimes seem to comply with them, for Delay, or for other private Reasons, yet that they always found he changed his Mind when it came to the Point to be concluded.

It would be endless to set down here the many Particulars of this Breach. Take the Sum of them thus. Upon the failing of the many Attempts to accommodate Matters, the Ministers preached openly and vehemently against  
the

---

(*a*) Calderwood, fol. 358.

the King's Proceedings, defended the Jurisdiction of the Church, and daily drew the People to them. This nettled and alarmed the King: He attempted to perswade the Commissioners of the Assembly by fair Means, to direct the Ministers not to meddle. They answered, they could not be silent, while he went on to sap the Foundations of their Liberties, and overthrow the Discipline; that it was their Duty to speak freely and plainly: When Perswasions availed not, he used Force; he charged the Commissioners of the Assembly to depart the City of *Edinburgh*, and publish'd this Charge at the Cross of *Edinburgh*: He ordered the Council to proceed against Mr. *David Black*, notwithstanding his Declinature, and to condemn him of Contumacy, sentencing him to enter into Ward, upon Pain of Rebellion and *Horning*: His Crime was said to be, *For treasonable, uncivil, slanderous, and seditious Words, Calumnies, and Speeches uttered by him against the Queen, the Queen of England, the Nobility, Council, and Session.*

Besides this, the King refused to grant the Stipends to the *Northern* Ministers, for whom the Commissioners of the Assembly had petitioned; the King's Answer was, *That such as would acknowledge his Authority, should have their Salaries; but he would give no Fee to such as would disclaim their Obedience.*

Upon the Commissioners being warn'd to depart, they published an Exhortation to the Presbytery of *Edinburgh*, as they should answer it to God and his Church, to discharge their Duty in so necessary and dangerous a Juncture, and to call before them the open and malicious Enemies of the Church, of whatsoever Rank, and proceed against them, even to Ex-

communication, if they relaxed not : Likewise to the Ministers of *Edinburgh*, to stand to their Calling, and not to be slack in their Duty ; with Caution however that if Violence was used ; for there was a Report, that they should be pull'd out of their Pulpits by armed Men, they should give Place to the Fury, and make no Resistance ; and then publishing a long Declaration, for Vindication of their Proceedings, and protesting against the Injustice that was used towards them, they departed. This was in *December 1596*.

The same Month the King fell upon the Ministers of *Edinburgh*, and without any particular Accusation or Crime alledged, charg'd Four of them, *viz. Robert Bruce, James Balfour, Walter Baconquell, and William Watson*, to enter into Ward ; that is to say, to go to Prison, within Six Hours after the Proclamation, upon Pain of horning ; they not doing it, Orders were sent to the Magistrates of *Edinburgh*, to apprehend them ; but they fled to the Borders. There were also several of the Inhabitants of *Edinburgh* in the same Condition, being all such as were eminent for their Zeal to the true Religion. But this was not all.

For the King resolving now to carry his Game on to the uttermost, contriv'd a Writing of Recognition, which was called there the BAND, which all the Ministers were required to sign, on pain of losing their Stipends. The Copy of which Band or Engagement is as follows, (*viz.*)

*The Copy of the Band, ordained by his Majesty and Estates, to be subscribed by every one of the Ministry under the Pain of losing their Stipends.*

W E the Pastors and Ministers of Scotland,  
 underscribing, humbly acknowledging  
 our Duty to God, and Obedience to the King  
 our Sovereign, whom for Conscience Sake we  
 ought to obey, confess, that he is our Sovereign Judge; to us, and every one of us, in all Causes of Sedition and Treason, and other civil and criminal Matters; and to all our Speeches, which may import the said Crimes, albeit uttered by any of us publickly in Pulpit (which God forbid) or in any other Place: And that the said Pulpits, nor no other Place whatsoever, have that Privilege or Immunity, to be Occasion or Pretence to any of us of declining his Majesty's Judgment, in any of the said civil or criminal Causes intended, or to be intended against any of us, in time coming; but rather that our Offence is the greater, in Case any of us commit such Crimes in the said Pulpits (which God forbid) where the Word of God, his Truth and Salvation should be preached by us unto our Flocks. In Witness whereof, and of our humble Acknowledging of our Duty in the Premisses, we have subscribed these Presents with our Hands, and are content the same be registrat in the Books of our Sovereign's secret Council in *futuram rei memoriam.*

After this, for now the Mask was thrown off, a Proclamation was publish'd, by Sound of Trumpet, at the Cross of Edinburgh, empowering

ing and requiring all Magistrates, Barons, and Gentlemen of Power, to interrupt any of the Ministers if they should utter any Speeches tending to Sedition from their Pulpits; or any Speeches, in Reproach, Contempt, or Disdain of the King, his Progenitors, or his Council, and any of their Proceedings; and to imprison and detain them till Notice should be given to the Council, and Orders from thence received about them.

To this Pass Things were come, in the Space of one Year.

The Ministers, generally speaking, refused the Band, with Abhorrence; and published their Reasons for it, with their Apologies and Defences in abundance; and some publick Meetings did the like, as the Synod of *Fife* in particular.

We are now come to a Meeting, called by the King a General Assembly; but not owned to be such by the Church. The King having, as is said, claimed the Right of calling the General Assembly, tho' the Church had by no Means yielded up that Point, his Majesty thought fit to act upon that Right, and summoned a Convention of Ministers at *Perth*, to meet the 28th of *February* 1597. The Ministers, who came thither, met at the King's Appointment, so there was a Violation of the Liberties of the Church, in the very Entrance; for by the Constitution the Church has the Right of calling, as well as of constituting their Assemblies. But this was not all; for as the Assembly was called by the King, so were the Members nominated chiefly by him, and especially the *Northern* Ministers, who appeared in an unusual Number; and yet as it was they were for some time doubtful, whether to  
have

have it called an Assembly or not: Old *James Melvin* denied it to be an Assembly; but the *Northern Men* outvoted them, the King also joining his Authority: However, eight Presbyteries entirely opposed it, eleven, on the other Hand, approving it: The Commissioners of the Presbytery of *Fife* made a Protestation against it, and against all that should be done in it.

Two Things the King attempted here upon them, yet neither succeeded thoroughly. First, the King, on Pretence of conferring with them on some Affairs of Moment, appoints them to meet, in the same Place, with the King and his Estates. This was a Wyle, to bring them to have sitten as it were in Parliament; but the sound Ministers saw it, and protested against it. Next, the King would have entered into Discourse of the Point in Controversie, but the same Ministers refused to put any of the Heads of their Discipline in Question; neither would they reason or speak upon them at all. The King press'd it, but to no Purpose: The King tried them again, and they came to the Place, but would enter upon no Business there; but made a long Protestation against whatever should be done in that Meeting, as not being lawfully constituted.

Having thus denied the Legality of this Assembly, and refused to act, the King was left to go on as he liked; nor are the Things done, said to be rightly recorded, or any Dependance to be had upon them. But in a Word, the King went on his own Way, and brought his Ends about by such arbitrary Methods, and yet by a specious Pretence of legal Steps, as may easily be imagin'd. He exhibited 13 Articles to them, every one of which was a Violation of

their former Discipline; the Consequence of this was bringing in the excommunicated Lords, and at length setting up Episcopacy in the Church.

In the mean Time, the legal Assembly had been appointed to meet at *Aberdeen*, on the 27th of *April* 1597, and the Moderator of the former Assembly went thither accordingly; and tho' the Number was not great, yet they met in Form, constituted themselves regularly, and having begun the Assembly with Prayer, as usual, and appointed a Fast for Confession of Sins, they made Protestations for the Liberty of the Church, and referr'd all other Business to the next Meeting. This is the Assembly which the King disowned.

The King, in the mean Time, went on the other Way, and appoints another Assembly of his new Model, to meet at *Dundee*, in the Month of *May* after. Thus the Church was miserably divided, and her Discipline trodden under Foot: At this Assembly the King, as it is said, aimed at Two Things, *viz.* (1.) Bringing in the excommunicated Lords. And (2.) acknowledging the Meeting at *Perth* for a legal Assembly of the Church; both which the King, who had, by this Time, wheedled off, or brought off many of the poorer of the Ministry to his Party, easily obtained; some complying for Preferment, some for the Honour, and some the Profits of the Court; for it was an easie Matter, says the Historian of that Time, Mr. Calderwood, to draw such as thirsted for Gain and Glory, to farther the Intentions of the Court. Thus a dreadful Schism was made in the Church, which also became wider every Day. The As-

sem-

sembly of *Dundee* absolved the *Papish* Lords; gave up the Liberty of Rebuking the Crimes of the great ones; committed Matters of the greatest Import to a few, and those such as appeared devoted to the Court; quitted summary Excommunication, tho' for notorious Crimes; abolished all Meetings of Ministers, not warranted by the King, or forbidden; and all ecclesiastick Matters to be treated of in the Assembly, were, by this Model, to be first prepared and determined of by the King: So, *says the same Writer*, the Assembly was now no more than the King's *LED HORSE*; and all this was brought to pass by a subtle dividing the Ministers, and awing or enticing some from the rest; who, back'd and supported by the King, and joined with the Creatures of the Court, carried on his Designs to the Ruin of all true Religion.

And now came on the grand Design; for the King having gained a Number of *false Brethren*, (a remarkable Word) he had every Thing done to his Hand. The Parliament being sitting, the Commissioners of the General Assembly petition, in the Name of the Church, *tho' falsely*; for the main Body of the Church abhorred the Thought of such a Thing, for Ministers to be allowed to sit and vote in Parliament. This was granted, and pass'd into an Act, and the very Words of the Act openly declared the Meaning of the Thing, (*viz.*) That those Ministers who should vote in Parliament should be Bishops, or Prelates. The Words are these: *That such Pastors and Ministers as his Majesty shall, at any Time, please to provide to the Office, Place, Title, and Dignity of Bishop, Abbot, or other Prelate, shall at any Time hereafter, have Vote in Parliament,*

as by the (a) Act may be seen at large, This was in *December 1597.*

On the 7th of *March 1598*, another *Royal Assembly*, for such it was, *not an Assembly of the Church*, met at *Dundee*, of which I need say no more than this, that by the same Art and Management that the rest was carried on, the Act of Parliament, for Ministers to vote in Parliament, was approved, in the said Assembly, with all the Formality and Pretence of Good to the Church imaginable.

The Glory of the purest Church in the World, *I use the King's own Words*, being thus under an almost total Eclipse, was strangely represented that same Year in the Firmament, the most glorious Lamp of Heaven, the *SUN*, suffering at this Time, a most fearful Eclipse, *so the Historians of that Day call it*, the whole Face of the Sun being covered and darkened; but it pleased God to put them in mind by it, that altho' it was of a long Duration, *viz.* near Two Hours before it went quite off, yet the Sun recovered again its full Lustre. And thus the Church of *Scotland* likewise has since done after many dreadful Eclipses and Hours of Darknes.

The next Year finish'd the Work: The giving the Ministers a Vote in Parliament had been already past; the King summoned a Number of Ministers to a Conference at *Halyrood-House*, where he thought fit to have some of the best Sort called; but took Care to secure a Majority of his own Party: Here, for Formality Sake, those Things were debated and resolved, which the King before had resolved, with-

---

(a) *Acts of Parliament for Scotland, Part 1. page 177.*

without debating: The Questions were not, if the giving the Ministers Votes should be confirmed; that was past and over before; but *how many* their Number should be, who should *choose them*, and *what Title* they should have? Where, finally, their Number, and the Choice of them, was left to the King; and it was ordered that they should have the Title of *BISHOP*. And thus this long contriv'd Design obtained its finishing Stroke, and Episcopacy was established in; or rather upon the Ruins of, the Church of *Scotland*.

I have been more particular in this Part, as it relates to the Manner how Episcopacy got its first footing in the Church of *Scotland*; that the Fraud, the Artifice, and hypocritical Fawnings, the arbitrary and outrageous Dealings, which were practis'd with the Ministers, might appear; as also the Strugglings and Opposition it met with for so many Years. The next succeeding Years will require little to be said: The King had gain'd his Point; the Gradations, by which Episcopacy proceeded, as it ever did in *Scotland*, from Power to Persecution, and at length to its own Ruin and Downfal; as they were publick, so our Account shall be more concise and general.

The Time drew near now that the King was to receive an Addition of Glory, and be call'd to a Kingdom infinitely more opulent, populous, and powerful than his own; and withal, wrapt up in that Ecclesiastick Hierarchy which he so much desir'd; in the mean Time, he spent the Hours in daily Contests with the Presbyterian Ministers, *for the other are not now to be called so*, oppressing, imprisoning, removing, banishing; so that no sooner was he become

come a King of an Episcopal Church, but, as was always natural to the Spirit of Episcopacy in *Scotland*, he became a Persecutor; nay, a Persecutor of that very Church, which, as before is observed, he had, in the Face of the Assembly, with Eyes and Hands lifted up to Heaven, solemnly praised and blessed God for being born in, and made King of; calling it, *alas! with what Hypocrisie!* the purest, the sincerest Church on Earth.

This was the Time when the King writ that flattering Letter to the Pope, styling him, in the Beginning, *Beatissime Pater Pontificem maximum*, and the like; which, to escape the Censure of, he caused, many Years afterwards, the Reproach of to be laid upon another Person, who, it was pretended, deceived the King; and having privately penn'd the Letter, got the King to sign it in a Crowd of other Writings which were to pass the Sign-Manual, and which the King signed of Course, without reading; but if other Authors may be believ'd, the King, who, was not so hurried with Business, while King of *Scotland*, but that, in other Cases, he was quick sighted enough, and used not to let the smallest Matter pass unobserved, was not to be thus deceived.

This was the Time when Mr. *John Spotswood*, who was prosecuted even by the King's Friends in the Church, for having been at *MASS* openly in *France*, was protected by the King from their Censure, and afterwards made Archbishop of *St. Andrews*; the same who writ the History afterwards of these Times, and is so often quoted in these Memoirs.

On the 31<sup>st</sup> of *March* 1603, an Express arrived from *England*, bringing News of the Death  
of

of Queen *Elizabeth*, with Letters of Recognition from the Privy-Council there, who had proclaimed his Majesty King of *England* and *Ireland*. As the King read the Letters, his Countenance chang'd; the Lords near-hand feared he had been taken ill, when, on a sudden, he left off reading, and lift up his Hands and Eyes to Heaven, as tho' he had prayed; and giving the Letter to one of the Lords that stood next him, said, *The Queen's dead: Read that Letter, Man.*

Immediately the Lords congratulated him, and the Court rung with Joy; the Guns at the Castle were fired, and the King was proclaimed at the Market-Cross of *Edinburgh*, King of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*, &c.

The next Sabbath, being the 3d of *April*, the King made the following Speech to the People, in the great Church, which, I observe, because he scarce ever performed one Word of it at all.

*As God hath promoted me to a greater Power, than I had; so I must endeavour to establish Religion, and to take away Corruption, in both the Countries. Ye need not doubt, but as I have a Body as able as any King in Europe, whereby I am able to travel; so I shall visit you every Three Years at least, or oftner as I shall have Occasion; (for so have I written in my Book directed to my Son, and it were a Shame to me not to perform that, which I have written) that I may with my own Mouth, take Account of the Execution of Justice of them that are under me; and that ye yourselves may see and hear me, and from the meanest to the greatest have Access to my Person, and pour out your Complaints in my Bosom. This shall ever be my Course.*

The Triumphs of this new Accession of Power to the King, his Passage into *England*, his Reception there, his Coronation, and other Ceremonies, are no Part of this Work ; I shall say only this of them, that they, together with the *English* Business, almost took the King wholly off of *Scots* Affairs for the first two or three Years of his Reign, and he did little but confirm and establish his new Fabrick in the Church.

In this Condition Things stood with the Church almost all the rest of the Reign of King *James*, the Authority of the Church Judicatories was wholly lost, their Discipline destroyed, and the Government dissolved into a prelatick Hierarchy.

It is true, the King being absent, and embarrassed with the *English* Affairs, they did not push on the designed Persecution so far, or so fast, as, its very likely, he would otherwise have done ; but still the Council continued daily to invade the Privileges of the Church, and by Encroachments of one Kind or other, went on to oppress them ; and upon every Step the Ministers took, to assert their Right, or defend their Privileges, they were proceeded against by the Council as Criminals ; and once no less than Six of the Ministers were tried for high Treason, and condemned to Death, for declining the Judicature of the Council, and continuing to assemble at *Aberdeen*, without the King's Authority ; but the King would not suffer them to be executed : What he did with them we shall see presently. First, a Proclamation was published, forbidding all People, either in publick or private, to call in Question his Majesty's Proceedings against the said Ministers. Then the Cause slept a while, the Parliament being

to meet. This was the Year 1606, when th Parliament met at *Edinburgh*, but was adjourned to *Perth*; in which the Act was pass'd, entitled, *The Act for Restitution of Bishops*, by which the Temporalities of the old Bishopricks were likewise restored to the Church, having before been given to the Crown by a Law call'd the (a) *Act of Annexation*.

The first Thing of Note which happened after the King's Accession to the Crown of *England*, and the last Thing of this Nature which we shall bring into these Memoirs was, That memorable Conference at *Hampton-Court*, between the eight Ministers of the Presbyterian Church and the King, upon the Matters then in Dispute. The Case in short was this, the Presbyterian Ministers had met in an Assembly, as was already noted, at *Aberdeen*, without the King's Authority, as they insisted they might legally do; the King discharg'd or dissolv'd their Meeting as illegal, but they continued to meet for all that: And when some of them were delated, or indicted, *as we call it*, before the Court of Justice for that Contempt, they declined the Authority of the King, *that is to say*, his Authority to take Cognizance of those Affairs; for they never disputed his Authority in Civil Matters: For this they were again indicted, brought to Trial, found guilty of high Treason, and received Sentence of Death, as above.

But the King finding, that this pushing Things to Extremity would not fully answer his End, and willing rather to proceed by other  
Me-

---

(a) *Act of Scots Parliament, Part 1. pag. 759.*

Methods, concluded at length to have the Cause brought to *London*, where it should be publickly heard before himself and the Council, not doubting but it should be so managed there, as that he should either really have the Victory, or at least seem to have it ; hereupon making shew to desire an Agreement, he (the King) caused a certain Number of the *Scots* Ministers on both Sides, to be summoned to appear before him at *London*. Their Names were as follow, (*viz.*)

Of the Episcopal Party. Of the Presbytery. Part.

The Arch- bp. of	{	St. Andrews,	Mr. Andrew Melvill,
			Mr. James Melvil,
The Bp. of	{	Glasgow,	Mr. James Balfour,
		Orkney,	Mr. William Watson,
		Galloway,	Mr. John Carmichael,
		Dunkeld.	Mr. Adam Coult,
			Mr. William Scot.

And as this was a most eminent Transaction, by which the Craft, Drift, and Weakness in Argument, in the *Scots* Episcopal Party, and the Capacity, Fidelity, and Courage of the Ministers, were more than ordinarily conspicuous ; and that it is necessary the Reader should have it faithfully and fully stated ; I say, for this Reason, I shall impartially relate the Fact, as it is set down in the Histories of those Times, taking one Historian on one Side, and one of the other, that the impartial Reader may judge for himself, without any Gloss or Comment on our Side, and the Conduct of both Sides may be clearly seen. And because some may think the reciting this Story, however memorable and worth their Reading, too long an Interruption to the Thread of Story, and yet that those, whose

whose Curiosity, is worth obliging, may not be disappointed; and above all, that the Truth of Fact may impartially be handed down to Posterity, that they may have a true Notion, and be able to make a right Judgment of so remarkable an Event, I have placed it at large, among other Things, by way of *addenda* to, and at the End of this second Part of the Work, where it may be read by it self, *No. C, D.*

After that Conference, as it was called, was over, and the King had found that neither, by Perswasion, nor Threatning, any thing was to be done with them, so as to get the Power, he had assumed, confirmed by them, or the Proceedings against their Brethren approved; he dismissed them, and went to work with the Ministers who were under Sentence: He found it not for his Purpose to put them to Death; he knew too well what a Flame it would kindle in *Scotland*: However, to put as great a Show of Resentment upon it as he thought might answer his End, he appointed a Court of Justice to sit at *Lithgow*, where the six condemned Ministers were brought, to receive their Sentence, which the King was pleased to change from that of Death into that of Banishment, never to return, on Pain of Death. Their Names were as follows:

- Mr. *John Forbes*, Minister of *Awford*.
- Mr. *John Welch*, Minister of *Aire*.
- Mr. *Robert Dury*, Minister of *Anster*.
- Mr. *Andrew Duncan*, Minister of *Creil*.
- Mr. *Alex. Straughan*, Minister of *Creich*.
- Mr. *John Sharp*, Minister of *Kilmeny*.

Besides these, by a Letter from the King, directed to the Council, eight Ministers more were confined for their Lives, or during the King's Pleasure, in the most distant, and most remote and barbarous Places of his Kingdom, viz.

Mr. *Charles Farum*, in the Isle of *Bute*.

Mr. *John Monroe*, in *Kyntyre*.

Mr. *Robert Youngson*, in the Isle of *Arran*.

Mr. *James Irwyn*, in the Isle of *Orkney*.

Mr. *William Forbess*, in the Isle of *Shetland*.

Mr. *John Ross*, in the Isle of *Lewes*.

Mr. *James Gray*, in *Caithness*.

Mr. *Nath. Inglis*, in *Sutherland*.

These Ministers thus sent into Banishment, were also commanded not to come out of the Bounds of their Confinement, upon Pain of Death; and by another Proclamation, all other Ministers were forbidden to recommend, in their Prayers or Sermons, any of those so sentenc'd: This was esteemed a greater Cruelty than the rest; likewise the Ministers at Court, were forbidden to go back to *Scotland*, and one of them, viz. Mr. *Andrew Melvin* was taken up, on Pretence of Words spoken in *London*, and some *Latin Verses* made by him, reflecting on the Cathedral-Worship in *England*, and was sent to the Tower, and kept there Three Years, after which he was banished into *France*, where he ended his Days.

But Things ended not here; for the King being not able to get his Will of the Ministers by the Violences above; continued, notwithstanding, to make Innovations in their Discipline and Government, and therefore in the

Assembly held at *Linlithgow*, December 10. 1606, he brought in the Overture of *constant Moderators* in the Presbyteries, and the Ministers of the Assembly being always a Majority of the wrong Side, after a few had opposed it, agreed to admit them upon some Conditions, tho' they could never bring the Presbyteries to accept of them.

But now came on a Blow which even the Ministers themselves did not foresee, I mean the Five Articles concerning Worship, called afterwards *the Articles of Perth*. The Constitution of the Church consists, as it is politically understood of 4 principal Heads, *viz.* (1.) Her Doctrine. (2.) Her Worship. (3.) Her Discipline. And, (4.) Her Government. The two last were effectually reduc'd, and the King had his Will of them, as you have heard; her Doctrine and Worship seem'd still to remain. But now the King began to attack their Worship, being resolv'd to bring the Church's Neck under the Feet of her Enemies.

It was the Year 1617, when the King took his Journey into *Scotland*, and where it was expected, by his Presence, he should carry every Point; but he failed in several. And first, at the Meeting of the Parliament he propos'd an Article, importing, ' That whatever was  
' resolv'd or concluded, by his Majesty, with  
' Advice of the Archbishops and Bishops, in  
' Matters of external Polity in the Church,  
' should have the Force of an Ecclesiastick Law.'

This was a bold Stroke, even the Bishops themselves startled at it *at first*, and the Ministers signed a general Protestation against it, which the King coming to the Knowledge of, the Article was dropp'd, and so the Protestation was

not delivered in; but the King resolv'd to exercise the Power *without the Ceremony of an Act*, as we shall see presently.

The King summoned the Bishops to meet him at *St. Andrews*, where, in a set Speech to them, he propos'd what he after obtained; the Bishops refer'd him to an Assembly; but the King, who own'd that he resolv'd never to have any more Assemblies, was very averſe to an Assembly, and it was now evident that the Reason why the King had propos'd formerly the Article abovenam'd was, that the Power of making Ecclesiastick Laws being veſted in himſelf, he might have no more Occaſion for Assemblies, which even, tho' Episcopall, were very much his Averſion.

However, in ſhort, upon the Entreaty of the Bishops, and Promiſes of Compliance in ſome *Time-ſerving Miniſters*, the King call'd an Aſſembly to meet at *Perth*, the 25<sup>th</sup> of *Auguſt* 1617. There had been one held at *St. Andrews* the *November* before, which diſguſted the King very much in not complying with his Demands.

In this Aſſembly the Worſhip, as well as the Diſcipline was innovated, and the Concluſions were paſſ'd in the following Heads, afterwards call'd, as above, *the 5 Articles of Perth*. The Articles at large are to be found in the (a) *Hiftories* (b) of thoſe Times; but in ſhort, they contain'd, (1.) The Kneeling at the Communion. (2.) Private Communion at ſick Peoples Requeſt. (3.) Private Baptiſm. (4.)

Con-

---

(a) Spotswood, *Hift. of the Church of Scot.* fol. 539.  
 (b) Calderwood *ſol.* 611.

Confirmation of Children. (5.) Observation of Festivals. All which was now to be imposed upon the Church of *Scotland*.

When the Articles were past, Order was sent to all the Ministers to Intimate them in their Churches, to exhort the People to conform to them, and to preach upon the Lawfulness of it. But this it was never in their Power to do, nor, where Ministers did conform, was it in their Power to make the People comply with, or hear them; but a dreadful Rent being thus made in the Church, the People divided from the Ministers, and the dissenting Ministers set up private Communion, and were almost universally followed, as will appear presently.

But to return to the Affair of the Ministers in *England*, the *Scots* Ministers behaved with such Courage and such Steadiness, that the Court could get no Ground of them; but was forc'd to have Recourse to Coercion and Persecution in *Scotland*, and in *England* also; The Six Ministers, instead of being disputed with, were imprisoned, and long harras'd from Place to Place; so that some of them never saw *Scotland* more. If I enter not far into the Particulars of those Times, it is because I would not record some Things practis'd upon them by some of the Clergy in *England*, which it may not be grateful to Posterity to hear; for it is not the Conduct in *England*, but the Conduct in *Scotland* that these Memoirs are written about.

The Sum of the Matter is this, in few Words; the King having miss'd of his Triumph, and of reducing the Ministers to a Necessity of submitting, resolv'd however not to miss of his Design in *Scotland*, and to this End he esta-

lished a high Commission-Court there, to enforce the Articles of *Perth*, and in a Word, to abolish the Constitution of the Church of *Scotland*.

First, instead of the General Assembly, the King, by his special Warrant, summoned a Convention, not of the Estates, but of Ministers, to meet at *Linlithgo*, the 10th of *December* 1666; instead of the Presbyteries electing the Ministers, as was usual, to represent them, the King's Letter was sent, directed to the Presbyteries, ordering them to send such Men, by Name, as the King had directed. Let any *Englishman* conceive of this, as if the King of *England* were to summon a Parliament to meet at *Westminster*, and instead of issuing out Writs, for Elections of Members, should name the Members whom they should send up. This was the Method in *Scotland*, and with the same Justice; and because this is a Novelty that never was practised before or since, I have given the Copy of the Warrant, for thus sending up of Ministers, at the End of this Part, *No. D.*

In this Meeting the Project of constant Moderators in the Presbyteries was proposed, it is called the King's Advice to the Assembly; but any one may guess what the Meaning of such a Phrase must be; when King's advise, especially to their own Subjects, they will not take it ill if their People take it for a Command, and so it prov'd; for the Act past without Opposition.

Great Arts were used, and some Violence, to bring the Presbyteries to accept these constant Moderators, nor could all the Threatnings and Violence that was practised; bring them to it. The Presbytery of *Edinburgh* was told plainly, that

that if the Presbyteries refused them, the King would overthrow the Presbyteries themselves, and there should be no more in *Scotland*; but all would not do: They named a Moderator *pro interim*, to continue to the next General Assembly, and would do no otherwise.; and the like did other Presbyteries also.

At length the Presbyteries were charg'd, in the King's Name, and on Pain of Rebellion, and putting them to the Horn, to accept them: This prevail'd with some, but many stood out, and some of the Moderators themselves refused to accept. Not one of the Synods in *Scotland* would accept them, except *Angus*; no Threats, no Cunning, for neither were wanting, could bring them to it.

By this Time the Court found that all the Arts hitherto used, for subverting the Church, however they might establish a new Constitution, would never bring the Ministers to comply, till they came to downright Persecution; and therefore it was resolved to take that Course by a high Commission-Court, in the Pursuit of whose Powers, the Ministers were to be brought by Violence, by Persecution, Horning, that is to say, Banishment and Confiscation of Goods, to abandon their Flocks, and lay down the Office of Ministers.

It was in the Year 1616, that the Commission-Courts were first erected, *viz.* one in each Archbishoprick. This Commission was the highest Exercise of Tyranny that was ever practis'd by any King in *Great Britain* since Laws and Constitutions were allowed to be the Rule of

the Government; for it actually put the King in Possession of the Bodies and Goods of all his Subjects, and empowered him to use them as he pleased, without the ordinary Forms of Justice, and meerly by the Agency of the Clergy making the Bishops the Instruments of absolute Power, not only to ruin and destroy the Liberties of the Church, but even of the whole Country, Clergy or Laity. The Copy of this famous Commission is among the *Addenda*, at the End of this Part, *No. E.*

How they exercised this unlimited Authority, the Histories of those Times are Witnesses, in which whoever pleases to look, will find the Episcopal Clergy were not backward to merit the general Reproach cast upon Priests of all Religions.

There is scarce any kind of Cruelty, Injustice, and Oppression to be named in the World, which was not practised in the Consequence of this Commission, upon the Ministers of the Church; present Death, Racks, and Tortures excepted.

The Ministers were beset with Spies, to observe their Words Gestures, and their Expressions in their Prayers and Sermons, in order to observe if they offered to speak against the new Constitutions. They were delated or prosecuted before this Court upon so many Accounts, that it was scarce possible to avoid it; such as speaking against the Bishops, disliking the Canon reproving Wickedness, Vices, and Immoralities, alledging they pointed at the dignified Clergy.

They were delated in general upon the 5 Articles of *Perth*, upon Points of Doctrine, the Supremacy of the King over the Church, own-  
ing

ing or disowning the General Assemblies, and the like.

In their appearing at their Courts, they were insulted, brow-beaten, and maltreated by the Bishops, neither treated as Gentlemen, as Scholars, or as Ministers of the Gospel. The Bishop of *St. Andrews* in particular told them, at one of his Meetings, that he should proceed to sentence as he was directed, wherein he should have no Regard to Wives, Children, or Estate, which he effectually made good; and indeed the King's Order or Letter gave them express Encouragement to such Cruelty. It seems the Court thought them too relax and slow in their Proceedings, which, if our Histories are true, there was little Reason for. But after the first Commission had tyranniz'd about Three Years, and the Business seem'd a little to rest, it was, on a sudden, renewed again, *Anno* 1619; and in *November* after the Bishop of *St. Andrews*; sitting in Judgment upon some of the Ministers, pull'd out the King's Letter, written from *England*, dated the 23d of *November* 1619, animating them to all possible Severity against the Ministers that would not comply. This most merciful Letter being under the King's own Hand, and upon such an extraordinary Stile, cannot be omitted, without leaving this Account imperfect: The Words, so far as relate to the present Case, are as follows, (*viz.*)

*I command you, as you will be answerable to me, that you depose all those that refuse to conform, without respect of Persons, no ways regarding the Multitude of the Rebellious; for that, if there be wanting Numbers to fill their Places, I will send you Ministers out of England; and I charge you*

to certifie us of your Proceedings, betwixt this and the 3d of March next to come.

As the Bishops wanted no spurring to a Work they so much delighted in, so they fail'd not to proceed, in consequence of this Letter, with the utmost Rigour ; the Ministers were every where cited, and upon their refusing to conform, were deprived, imprison'd, put to the Horn ; their Goods plunder'd, many of them banished to the Islands, and the like : In their Examinations, they were used with all possible Indignity and Contempt ; and in their Imprisonments, with Rigour and Cruelty.

The Laity were also fallen upon for not kneeling at the Communion, according to the Article of *Perth*, and at one Time six of the Citizens of *Edinburgh* were ordered to Banishment, from their Houses, Trades, and Families, without Trial, Citation, or Form of Process, on Pretence that they had countenanced the Ministers in their Disobedience.

I might fill this Volume with the History of these Violences, and enlarge, with great Advantage, on the unprecedented Proceedings of this tyrannical Court of Bishops: It would also be very diverting, as well as profitable, to record here the Conduct of the suffering Ministers and People, how stoutly they stood, in Defence of their Principles ; how boldly they disputed, and often baffled and put to Shame the Bishops, especially of *St. Andrews* and of *Glasgow*, in the Arguments they used with them ; as particularly *Mr. Tho. Hog*, Minister of *Dysert*, to the Bp. of *Glasgow* and Doctor *Lindsay*, about the Differences between Capping and Kneeling at the Sacrament: The Bishop, it seems, would have proved that Capping,

ping, or pulling off the Hat, and kneeling, were synonymous; that they were not *diversa species gestus*, but that they who did the first, could not refuse the last, in which Mr. Hog silenc'd them both, and brought the Bishop to say, *It is long since I learnt my Logicks, &c.* Mr. Hog answered, ' There is no Difficulty here to any that are desirous to learn the sacred Truths of the Gospel: Capping, in religious Exercises, is an outward Act of Veneration or Reverence only, and this we do at the Sacrament; because none can deny but that Reverence is due to the Celebration of that solemn Ordinance. But Kneeling, in religious Exercises, is an Act of Adoration or Worship, which is proper to God only, and therefore Exception is taken at it in the Sacrament, lest we seem to worship the Elements which we receive.'

This was so plain that the Bishop could make no Reply, and so broke off the Discourse; many such Accounts, I say, might be given, both profitable and diverting, but the short Compass of these Memoirs admits not to enter into those things; it may suffice to note, that they got as little Ground by their Violence, as they did by their Disputations; and after all they could do in this one Article of kneeling, tho' the King sent down his Letter also, strictly commanding all to kneel, yet at the Communion published in *Edinburgh*, for Trial of the Effect of this Command, out of Sixteen Hundred Communicants in the Collège-Church there, they could make but Twenty receive kneeling, and the next Day but seven, and these few were either of the Families of the complying Episcopal-Clergy, who administred, or the poor Alms-People, who durst not refuse; yet they publish'd in

England that the People generally complied with the King's Command, and that only a few obstinate Presbyterian Ministers stood out, a Practice we see reviv'd even lately while we were told mighty Stories of the Willingness of the People in *Scotland* in *Queen Ann's* Time, to receive the *English* Liturgy in *Scotland*, and how desirous they were to have it set up there; whereas it since appears that it has not been received any where, except where the Tyranny of their Lairds and Superiors imposed it, and that as soon as that imposing ceased, by the subduing the Rebellion under the Reign of his present Majesty, we hear no more of it.

The last publick Step to the confirming all this Wreck of the Church, was the getting the Five Articles of *Perth* established by the Sanction of an Act of Parliament, and so giving them the Force of a Law; for till then they acted meerly upon the Mandate and personal Authority of the King.

The Solemnity of this Transaction was extraordinary, the Parliament met the 25<sup>th</sup> of July 1621, the Ministers were carefully fenc'd against, that none should get into the House, to protest against it; for they knew they had a Protestation ready to deliver: Mr. *David Barclay*, one of the Ministers, who resolved to present the Protestation, got into the House to the second Bar, but was discovered and put out again, and at last contented himself to read it at the Door, and stick it up against the Wall.

However, there was great Opposition to this Act, even in the Parliament it self, but the King, by Management of the Members, and by the Assistance of the Bishops, got a Majority to vote it; yet a great many, both Lords and  
Com-

Commons opposed it. Among the first, the Lords *Rothefs, Mentieth, Eglintoun, Linlithgow, Kintail, Gray, Ross, Yester, Cathcart, Couper, Burlic, Balmerinock, Elphinston, Torphichen,* and *Forbes*, all publicly voted against it. The Earls of *Mortoun, Buchan*, and the Marquess of *Lauderdale* staid without the Door, because they would not vote for it; and of the Commissioners for Shires and Burghs, Forty Four voted against it, besides nine Lords and Six and Twenty Commissioners that cared not to appear on one Side or other, and came not near the Parliament.

However, notwithstanding all that could be done, the Articles were voted, the Act pass'd, and was published with Sound of Trumpet at the Cross of *Edinburgh* the 20th of *August* 1621.

It is recorded by several Historians of those Times, that when this Act, for confirming the Articles of *Perth*, had been voted, and pass'd, and was presented for the *ROYAL ASSENT*, which is signified there by touching it with the Sceptre, the Moment the high Commissioner, the Lord *Scone*, stood up to touch this Act, Heaven declared its *ROYAL DISSENT*, in a most remarkable Manner; for Three Flashes of Lightning, one immediately after the other, darted in at the great Window, and strook directly in the Commissioner's Face: He confess'd afterwards he felt the Warmth of the Fire on his Face; the last Flash was more frightful than the two first, and they were rendred the more visible by an exceeding dark Cloud, which, for some Minutes before, hung directly over the City: The Thunder, which followed, and broke upon the City, and as it were more immediately on the Parliament-House, was very

ter-

terrible, especially the Third Clap of Thunder, immediately after the Lightning: The Dark-ness, occasioned by the said Cloud, increas'd to such a Degree, that it became frightful, and the whole was followed by so violent and so heavy a Rain, that the like had not been known in the Memory of Man; and the Lords and Members of Parliament, altho' their Business was finished, and the House broke up, were kept Prisoners by the Fury of the Rain for above an Hour, and so long it continued; that when they did go away, every one shifted home as they could; so that this Act could not have the Honour of a Procession, and to have the Regalia carried before it, as was usual on like Occasions. The Day got the Name of black *Saturday*, upon this Account, as well as on the Occasion of the black Work they had been about.

Nothing but a dark Prospect of Persecution, and a Cloud, threatenng Desolation to the Church, now appear'd; the Prisons were fill'd with depriv'd Ministers, and the remote Parts with the Banished, and the King's Letters came every Post pressing to more and more Severities; nay, the Magistrates of *Edinburgh* were threatn'd, in express Terms, by the King with being deposed, and the City of *Edinburgh* was threatn'd with having the Session, or Term for sitting of the Courts of Justice, removed from them to *Linlithgo*, because they were not careful to do their Duty, in pursuing the Ministers, and preventing private Conventicles; for the depriv'd Ministers preach'd in their own Houses, and Multitudes left the Churches, and flock'd to hear them.

But the Hand of Heaven interposed in the very Extremity, and by a surprizing Event put an End for the present to the Fury of those People; for just as the Prosecution of Mr. *William Rigg*, *John Hamilton*, *John Meen*, and several other suffering Ministers was come to the Extremity, and they were at the Point of being sent into Banishment, an Express from *London* brought the News that the King was DEAD.

By this one Blow the high Commission was dissolved of course, all Proceedings depending before them dropp'd, and Abundance of good Men were, for the present, delivered from the Oppressions of the Bishops.

But the King being succeeded by his Son King *Charles I*, who was no less zealous than his Father in the Episcopal Part of Church-Affairs, the Church of *Scotland* got no other Advantage by the Change than the Stop above mentioned, which, by that extraordinary Incident of the Death of King *James*, was put to the Persecution of the Ministers, as above.

On the contrary, the Episcopal Model received all possible Encouragement, as may be gueſt by Archbishop *Spotswood* being made Lord Chancellor of *Scotland*, till the unexpected Folly and Madness of the Court-Party unravelled all their own Work, and the Church rose again upon the Ruin of her Enemies.

Nay, such was the signal working of divine Providence, as has been seen more than once in the Case of the Church of *Scotland*, that the Oppressions and Persecutions of this Church were made the Means of overturning, not the Bishops only, who were the more immediate Persecutors, but even the King himself, and all  
his

his Family, as will eminently appear in the Process of the Story.

The King died *March 27th, 1625*, the first Year of his Son's Reign appeared entangled so many ways, that he became less intent, for some Time, upon the Affairs of *Scotland*, than his Father had been: He was left entangled in a War with *Spain*, and entred afterwards rashly and inconsiderately into another with *France*; in both which his People were uneasy, and his Generals unfortunate.

The Mismanagement of the War, the indirect Methods taken by the Court for raising Money, and the ill Usage of those, who, upon Principles of the Peoples Liberties, opposed it, made the Parliament fall upon his Favorite the Duke of *Buckingham*, refuse Subsidies, and insist warmly on Redress of Grievances. These put the King so out of Love with Parliaments in *England*, that no Parliament was afterwards called in Fourteen Years; during which, so many illegal and arbitrary Things were done, that when the King was afterwards driven, by Necessity, to call a Parliament, they carried their Resentment at these illegal Practices to such a height as drove both Parties to Arms, and ended in the Overthrow, first of the Episcopal People in *Scotland*, where the Flame first broke out. Secondly, of the whole Establishment of the Church of *England* in *England*. And lastly, in the Ruin of the King, and of the Royal Family.

This short Digression to the *English* Affairs should not have been made, for I have carefully avoided suffering these Memoirs to pass the Tweed, except on extraordinary Occasions, had it not been to reconcile the History of Facts, and explain what is said above,

(viz.)

(viz.) that the Flame of the War in *England* began first in *Scotland*.

During the long interval of Parliament in *England*, the King had Leisure to apply himself to the Affairs in *Scotland*, and being resolved to play *Rehoboam's* Part, he met with *Rehoboam's* Fate: His Father had, as is said above, imposed Episcopacy upon *Scotland*, and a long Series of Time had accustomed too many of the People to it, or an Indifferency about it; so that it was thought had the King sat still, he might, in Time, have reduced the Nation at last to have been contented with it. But far from this, he not only was not content with putting Hardships upon the Presbyterian Ministers, but prompted, by an evil Fate, he fell upon a Thing which, even the Episcopal People in *Scotland*, could not bear; this was imposing the *English* Liturgy upon the *Scots*. This was not only the most rash and impolitic Part in the Court, but it was the most unkind and ungrateful Part to his Friends in *Scotland*; for now the Episcopal Party themselves, who had done every violent Thing he had desired for his Service, were fallen upon, except they would comply with the Service-Book, which Abundance of them refused. And thus he made his Friends his Enemies.

This was the Project of Archbishop *Laud* in *England*, who afterwards made *L' Amende honorable*, for these and several other *English* Extravagances of like Nature with the Loss of his Head. This Bishop had introduced several Novelties in the Church of *England* it self, encouraged and proposed the Book of Sports, persecuted the Puritans, and insulted with unheard of Pride several of the Clergy of the *English* Church,

Church, particularly in a Visitation of his Clergy, he took upon him to remove the Communion-Table in all the Churches, which, from the Reformation, had always stood in the Body of the Church, and to place it Altar-Fashion at the upper End of the Chancel, on an Ascent, and railed about, exactly after the Manner of the Church of Rome. ' This, says a (a) learned Historian of those Times, was opposed by divers of the Clergy, and the Bishop of Lincoln wrote a Book, called, *The holy Table, shewing the Practice of the Primitive Churches, and with Arguments against this Innovation.*'

Had he contented himself to have introduc'd his *Petty-Popery* into the Church of *England*, and let the Church of *Scotland* alone; his worthless Name had had no Place in these Memoirs; but whether put upon it by his own mischievous, turbulent Spirit, which was always restless in tyrannizing over others; or, as some have suggested, invited to it by some of the Prelates in *Scotland*, it was not long ere he began to intermeddle with his Neighbours in *Scotland*: And the Occasion seems to be as follows.

King *James* had, says (b) the *English* Historians, had so good Success in pulling down the Presbyterian Church in *Scotland*, and setting up an Episcopal Hierarchy, that he had conceived what they call, in *England*, a farther Reformation of that Church, meaning the Church of *Scotland*, by bringing them to a Conformity in Worship, as well as in Government, to the Church of *England*; and for that Purpose had

or.

(a) Whitlock's *Memoirs*, fol. 24.

(b) *Coke's Detection*, Vol. 1. page

ordered some of the *Scots* Bishops to compile a Book or Form of Common-Prayer, &c. to be used in *Scotland*, which they did ; but the Death of that Prince, and the Opposition made to it from the most learned even of the Episcopal Ministers themselves in *Scotland*, occasioned that no more was done in it at that Time. This is taken from the Accounts given in our *English* Histories of those Things (a), for the *Scots* either never knew any Thing of it, or did not own it.

King *Charles* I. falling in with the pernicious Counsels of Archbishop *Laud*, as above ; renews this Project, if it was such, of his Fathers, and gives Direction to the said Bishop *Laud*, and several other of the *English* Clergy, to revise that Liturgy, which they did ; and forming another out of it with several material Alterations, and even more distastful to the *Scots* than the *English* Liturgy it self, they advised the King to send it down into *Scotland*, and to command it to be read in all the Churches there, and that it should be conform'd universally to as it was in *England*.

The People of *Scotland* were greatly alarmed at this Innovation ; and it is said, that several of the Episcopal Clergy took the Freedom to remonstrate against it, to whose Memory I would not fail to do Justice had History recorded their Names.

But the Bishops, and some Lords of the Council, both approving the Design, and having received the King's positive Directions for it, set themselves immediately to Work, to cause this Common-Prayer-Book to be read.

N

It

---

(a) Whitlock's *Memoirs*, fol. 25. col. 2.

It (a) is said, that before it was admitted, some of the Bishops in *Scotland* objected against it, that tho' they liked the Book, yet they were disgusted at its being imposed by the *English*; also they objected against the Translation of the Psalms, Epistles, and Gospels, which were differing from their Bibles; and that this, to satisfy them, was amended.

Now, as if they were resolved to irritate the People of *Scotland* to the utmost, this Service-Book was not only appointed to be read; but the Minister officiating was to have on the *Surplice*, according to the *English* Custom, which was a new and uncouth Sight to the People of *Scotland*, hateful to the knowing, and next to frightful to the ignorant well-meaning People, and which tended to make the Thing it self, to the last Degree, odious to the whole Nation.

It was first set up in the Chappel Royal at *Halyrood-House*, where none being obliged to go but the King's Servants, it being no parochial Church, it was not so offensive; for tho' the People abhorr'd the thing it self, yet as it was not imposed upon them, they concerned themselves the less about it; but this was only an Introduction to the rest, and the using it there was to make it a little familiar to the Citizens, who flocked thither to satisfy their Curiosity. But this was upon a wrong Supposition, (*viz.*) That as the Fox, by often seeing the Lion, was less terrified, so the more the People were acquainted with this Innovation, the more they would like it; whereas on the contrary, the more the People saw this Service perform'd, the

---

(a) Whitlock's *Memoirs*, fol. 25. col. 2.

the more hateful and abominable it appeared to them.

It was on the 23<sup>d</sup> of *July* 1637, when the Dean of *Edinburgh* appointed to preach in the great Church in that City, and resolved before Sermon, in his Habit and Surplice, to read the Service-Book, as he had done before in the Royal Chappel.

There was a great Concourse of People in the Church, expecting what would be the End of this Matter, and some Guards were placed at Hand, to prevent any Disorder in the Town; but no one expected any Thing like that which happened, neither could it be suspected, or was there ever afterward any Ground to believe that any Thing was concerted before, except that it was in the Appointment of divine Providence, to bring forth what follow'd by these unforeseen Accidents.

The Hour of Service being come, the Dean, in his Surplice, comes out of the Vestry, the People gazing as at a great Show, and making Gestures of Contempt enough, but no Noise or Disorder; he passes through the Croud to the Reading-Desk, and began to read, the People still continuing quiet, when, on a sudden, at some Words that disgusted her, an old Woman, in a Rage, starts up, *VILLAIN*, says she, *doſt thou ſay the Maſs at my (a) LUG*, and taking up a little Stool, which she sat on, she drives it full at his Head, raising a most hideous Noise in the Church by it: Some that sat next her, following her Example, did the like, till, in a Word, the whole Church was

---

(a) My Ear.

In an Uproar, and the Dean fain to come down out of the Desk, and pull off his Surplice, for fear of being torn in Pieces ; the Bishop of *Edinburgh*, being present, went up into the Pulpit, and beckning for Silence, offered to speak ; but it was all to no purpose, neither did they spare ; but Sticks, Stools, and any Thing that came to Hand, flew at him, from all Quarters, till at last both Bishop and Dean were obliged to give over, and retire into the Vestry.

The Lord Chancellor call'd to the Magistrates, to come down and appease the People, but it was all ineffectual ; for, by this Time, the Tumult was as great without as within, and Showers of Stones, Sticks, &c. assaulted the Church-Windows from the Street.

Nor did it end here ; for the Multitude encreasing, went to all the Churches where the Curates had designed to read the Service-Book, and set all in an Uproar in every Quarter of the City.

The Dean and Clergy, in the great Church, with the Magistrates and the Courtiers, having gotten rid of the Rabble for a while lock'd themselves in, and went on with their Liturgy by themselves ; but the Mob, who waited for them in the Street, assaulted the Bishop as he came out, and it was not without Difficulty that he got safe to the Palace.

This was the Beginning, and at that Time it went no farther ; the Care of the Magistrates, and Power of the Court, overawing the Croud. But the Harvest being over, and People more at Leisure, it was soon found that the Generality of the Nation, as well the Gentlemen as the old Women, were disgusted at the imposing this Liturgy upon the Church ; and about the Middle

dle of *September*, great Numbers of Gentlemen being, with their Servants, come to *Edinburgh*, a Petition was drawn up, and handed about to be signed, requesting the Council, in their own Names, and the Names of all the Noblemen, Gentlemen, and others, who should agree to the same; That the Service-Book might be no farther prest upon them till these Things might be represented to the King, and his Majesty's Pleasure be farther known. An infinite Number set their Hands to this Petition, and among them several Gentlemen of good Rank, and their Number encreased every Day.

The Council, instead of showing any Concern at these Things, pretended to resent it to the Gentlemen that presented the Petition, and threatned them to give the King an Account of their Names, as disorderly and disaffected Persons, and to take Order with them as such; and instead of an Answer to their Address, they published a Proclamation, to remove *the Session*, that is the Term, to *Linlithgow*, thinking thereby to take away the Pretence for People to flock to *Edinburgh*, as they usually did at that Time on their Law-Business: They also dissolved all Meetings on Church-Affairs, &c.

This encreased the Rage of the Citizens of *Edinburgh*; for the Removing the Term was a Ruin to the City, as it hinder'd the Concourse of People there on those Occasions.

The very next Day after this, the Mob gathered in *Edinburgh* to a prodigious Multitude, and there is no doubt but that whatever it was before, this new Tumult was concerted among those Gentlemen who had petition'd, as above; nor was it long 'ere they publicly appeared with and at the Head of them in the Street.

The first Thing the People did, they surrounded the Council-House, the Privy-Council being sitting, and demanded a better Answer to their Petition, and that the Service-Book be laid aside till the King was fully informed of the Matter: The Bishop of *Galloway*, going to the Council, was assaulted in the Street, tho' with Words only, and followed to the Door: The Earl of *Traquair* had the same Fate, as had also the Lord Treasurer. The last was indeed insulted particularly, and his WHITE-STAFF taken away in the Street.

At the same Time another Part of the Rabble beset the Magistrates of the City and the Town-Council, and demanded of them to join with them in opposing the *English* Liturgy or Service-Book, and threatening to pull them out by the Heels, they obliged them to draw up a Paper, and sign it, engaging not to permit the idolatrous Service-Book, so they then termed it, to be read in any Place within their Bounds, and to recal their banished Ministers.

It was in vain, that the Lords, in the Privy-Council-Chamber, sent Expresses to the Town-Council-House to the Magistrates, to come and rescue them; who could only make Return, by telling, that they were in the same Condition, and what they had been obliged to do: The Lords had then no Remedy but to send to some of the better Sort of those of the other Side, to come and relieve them: Upon this Request, several Lords and Gentlemen, of good Quality, of those who opposed the Service-Book, came and spoke to the People, and desired them to let the Bishops and Lords quietly depart.

To these the People immediately yielded, and they guarded their Enemies to their own Houses through

through the Rabble. And now it was easie for them to see that the People were no more to be imposed upon ; for the very next Day a Petition was presented to the Privy Council against the Service-Book : And this was not a Petition of the Rabble ; but sign'd by Nineteen Noblemen, Three Hundred Gentlemen, of good Note, and by the principal Inhabitants of the City of *Edinburgh*.

This Petition was sent up to the King, but no favourable Answer was obtained ; but to shew the Resentment of the Court against the Citizens of *Edinburgh*, the Session was removed to *Sterling*, by Proclamation ; and another was published, to forbid all tumultuous Resorts or Meetings, on Pain of Rebellion.

This serv'd to unite the People, who, having made themselves obnoxious, by appearing in these Things, were obliged, for their own Security, to go thorough with their Work ; and therefore taking no more Notice of the Council than as Enemies that did them ill Offices with the King, and resolving to defend their Liberties at whatever Hazard, they now began to form themselves, and to consider their Strength, the Generality of the Nation being really on their Side: In the first Place, the Earl of *Hume*, the Lord *Lyndsay*, and Abundance of Lords and Gentlemen drew up a Protestation, under their Hands, against these Proclamations, and having sent it to the Council, they from that Time met in a Body, *de die in diem*, to consider the State of the Nation.

Here the famous *TABLES* were formed, of which our Histories are so full ; by the Order of which every Degree sat by themselves. (1.) The Nobility. (2.) The Gentlemen. (3.) The

Burroughs. (4.) The Ministers. And yet all communicated their Resolves; so that every Thing was done with Unanimity and Agreement.

They were no sooner put into this Posture, but being sure of the Concurrence of the People, they took no Notice any more of the persecuting Council; no, nor of the King himself as to his Menaces or Missions; but taking the Administration so far into their Hands, they proceeded to redress the Grievances of the State.

They began, *a fove principium*, with the Restoration of the Church: All the Episcopal Pomp and Ceremony vanish'd at once: The Bishops stood at Gaze, or fled, not daring to shew their persecuting Faces, and the Meeting of the general *TABLE* renewed the ancient Confession of Faith and Presbyterian Church-Government, entering into a solemn *COVENANT*, one with another, to defend and preserve the said Profession of the true Protestant reformed Religion, and likewise the Person of the King.

The King had a particular Account of all these Things laid before him, and they were let to know that his Majesty resented it highly, which was nothing more or less than to animate them in the Prosecution of their new Undertaking.

They proceeded therefore with all the Resolution and Vigour possible, to settle and establish the Liberties and Constitution, both of Church and State; and that in such a Manner as not to be again supplanted or disappointed by their Enemies. In order to this the imprisoned Ministers were every where set free, the Banished called home, and all restored to their Livings, to the inexpressible Joy of the People  
of

of *Scotland*, who forbore not, upon all Occasions, to express their Detestation of the Innovations which had been put upon them before.

It would take up a long History by it self to record the restless Endeavours of the Bishops, and their Dependants ; as also the Episcopal Clergy in *England*, by any Means to bring themselves in again ; but alas ! there was not the least Room to thrust the Notion of it into the Peoples Heads : They were every where overjoyed to see their poor banished Ministers return, the Church restored to her Liberties, and to enjoy her General Assemblies, regular Judicatories, publick Communions, &c. without Disturbance, as before.

The other Party had but one Way left, which was to provoke the King to the highest Resentment, SO to embark the Power of *England*, in Support of that Resentment, and to bring down a formidable Army to chastise them as Rebels against his Royal Authority. This they threatned the Covenanters with, so the Presbyterians were then called in *England*, because of the Covenant taken, as above.

It was certain, that a King of *England* at the Head of all the Powers of that oppulent Nation, was a most formidable Thing ; and as the King had Troops ready about him, these People perfectly naked, unprovided, undisciplin'd, and the like ; the Resentment of the King was the more terrible, and it occur'd often from *Solomon's* Words, That *the Wrath of a King is like the roaring of a Lion*.

But the covenanted Lords, far from being dismay'd at all these Threats, stood boldly to what they had done ; and when the Marquess of *Hamilton*, whom the King sent to them, proposed

posed Two Things, their Answer will sufficiently acquaint us, that they acted as Men under no Apprehensions of the Power of their Enemies.

The Marquess, vested with the Power of High Commissioner to settle the Peace, entred into a Treaty with them on Two Heads, (*viz.*)

1. *What it was they expected from the King, in Satisfaction of their Grievances.*
2. *Whether they would, after such Satisfaction, return to their Obedience, and renounce their Covenant.*

To the first they answered, *They expected a free Parliament, and a legal General Assembly, and to that they were willing to refer all their Demands.* To the second, *That they had not forsaken their Obedience, and therefore needed no Terms of Return; but that as to their Covenant, they would as soon renounce their Baptism: Nor would they enter into any Treaty, if it were mentioned to them a second Time.*

There were long and tedious Debates between them upon these Things, and many Expedients the Commissioner offered, in the King's Name, to keep, if possible, the Bishops in their Seats. He went back to the King, return'd again with new Concessions: He offer'd a Declaration from the King, consisting of Eleven Heads, all granting Things to the Covenanters, which they would have rejoic'd at a little before; but now rejected. In this Declaration. The King granted,

1. To annul the Service-Book.
2. The Book of Canons.
3. The high Commission.
4. The Five Articles of *Perth*.
5. That all Persons, whether Ecclesiastical or Civil, should be liable to Censure of the Parliament and General Assembly.
6. That no Oath be imposed upon Ministers at their Entry; but what was contain'd in the Act of Parliament.
7. That the ancient Confession of Faith should be renewed, and subscribed as it was in his Father's Reign, with the Band thereto annex'd.
8. That a General Assembly be holden at *Glasgow* the 21<sup>st</sup> of *May*.
9. And a Parliament at *Edinburgh* the 14<sup>th</sup> of *May* after.
10. That therein a general Pardon of all Offences shall be granted.
11. That he will appoint a general Fast.

These were great Things; but as the main Thing was left behind, *viz.* That Episcopacy was left in the Church, the Bishops to remain and to sit in Parliament, and those Things left to the King's Nomination, which, of Right, belong'd to the Church, nothing could be done: They protested against these Concessions, as King-Craft, to delude them; and claiming the Right to call a General Assembly themselves, as by Act of Parliament *formerly mentioned*, then in Force: They rejected any Accommodation without a perfect restoring the Church of *Scotland* to all her Powers and Privileges, and the total abolishing Episcopacy in that Nation; choosing to run all Hazards, and to put Things  
to

to the last Extremity, rather than abate one Tittle of it.

Such Zeal and such Faithfulness to the Principle they profess'd, could not fail to prompt them to all proper Means to support what they had undertaken ; wherefore the Marquess of *Hamilton* being gone back in Disgust, and having used some threatenng Speeches at his parting, they resolv'd not to be surpriz'd ; but immediately to put themselves in a Posture of Defence, that they might be able to go thorough with what they had undertaken.

Accordingly they began to lay Taxes for raising Money, gave out Commissions for levying 12 Regiments of Foot and 8 Regiments of Horse, making in all 18000 Men, sent over into *Sweden*, and the low Countries, to invite home the old experienced Generals and Officers of their Nation, whom they could confide in, to come and take Pay in the Service of their Country, and in a Word, made all necessary Preparations of War.

As this arming in *Scotland* was not without very good Intelligence from *England*, of the Resolutions taken there to reduce them by Force, and the Threats of the Marquess of *Hamilton* to their Faces, when he went from them, who told them, insulting, *That they must not think to use their Kings now as they did formerly, when they were only Kings of Rebels ; that the King had another loyal and warlike Nation at his Command, and that they should soon feel it to their Cost.* As, I say, these Things went before their arming, the *English* Historians are manifestly partial, who say the King armed only in his own Defence, and in charging the *Scots* with a Design to begin the War ; it being manifest

nifest they were capable of no other Design than of securing themselves against being trampled on by a bigotted Court and an incens'd Clergy.

It is also evident, that this Vigilance was, under God, the Means of their Preservation ; for that when the King advanc'd forwards to *York*, and from thence to the Border, they were ready in the Field before him, and that with such a resolute Countenance, as that the *English* Army cared not to attack them ; and when the Earl of *Holland*, General of the Horse to the King, advanc'd in a Bravado with a strong Brigade of Horse and a Detachment of Foot, he was driven back faster than he came, by half the Number of the *Scots* Cavalry, with Musketeers in their Intervals ; a Manner of fighting which the *English* had not seen, and which some *Scots* Officers had learn'd under the great *Gustavus Adolphus* ; it would make too much Sport with the *English* Courage and Bravery, which is so well confirmed in the World, to give an Account how like Scoundrels this Army behaved. An *English* Historian of Note says, in a Manuscript which I have seen, they were raised by the Clergy, and imitated their Masters ; for as the Clergy, who prompt'd this War, accompanied the King to *York*, but left him when he came into the Field ; so the raw and undisciplin'd Army accompanied him to the Field, but left him when they should have engaged ; in a Word, none of the Troops, after the first Skirmish, car'd to engage, or to look the *Scots* in the Face ; who, on the other Hand, tho' they would not attack the King, yet stood ready, and shewed all the Forwardness in the World to give Battle.

The King's Generals finding the Disposition of their Men, told the King very plainly, it was

was not his best Way to engage: Upon which Notice was given the *Scots* Army, that they might send some to treat with his Majesty upon their Demands, which was done, and in which all possible Artifice was used to make a superficial Agreement, that the *Scots* might be obliged to disband, and so might be surpriz'd again unarm'd.

However, they made a Pacification, and according to the Terms they broke their Army; but having certain Intelligence from *England*, of the treacherous Design, they kept the Officers and Generals in Half-pay, a Practice to this Day used when Nations put an End to a War with no very great Assurances of preserving the Peace.

As they had been inform'd, so it prov'd; for the King, fired by the Clergy, sought Occasions of new Quarrels, and declined establishing their Civil and Ecclesiastick Liberties according to their Model, and then pretending the *Scots* had not kept their Articles, denounced them Rebels both in *England* and *Ireland*.

This obliged them to restore their Troops, with all possible Expedition, and so soon were they compleated, the Zeal and Alacrity of the common People furnishing Men even faster than they required, that they were in the Field 20 Days before the King: And now they used no more Ceremony about advancing beyond their own Borders, *as before*; but finding no Army ready, they entered *England* in Order of Battle, and advanc'd to *New-Castle upon Tyne*, before any Enemy appear'd.

Here the Royal Army fac'd them, and it was thought impossible the *Scots* should pass the *Tyne*, without fighting; but General *Lesly*, an old Soldier, resolving to put it to the Issue of

a Battle, pass'd the River at *Newbourn*, in the Face of a strong Body of the *English* Army; beat them fairly by plain Fighting from their Post; and killed 300 of their Men; which Action so frightened the King, and his whole Army, that they would not strike a Stroke more; but shamefully retreated to *York*, leaving *New-Castle* and *Durham* in Possession of the *Scots*.

Here began the *English* Troubles and Civil War, which, as they belong not to our Story, I shall mention no farther than to make good what I observ'd before, *viz.* That God so ordered it even from the Beginning of the Reformation in *Scotland*, that no Men, or Party of Men, have ever yet fallen upon the Church of *Scotland*, but it has been at length their own Destruction; the Church has been like the Stone in the Gospel, and on her religious Establishment may be written, as is upon her Banners, *Nemo me impune lacessit*. Ever may it be so, and may her Enemies take the Warning, that they never more make the Attempt.

Now the Church of *Scotland* was arriv'd to her full grown State indeed: Her Enemies were not only subdued, but all in her Power; her Assemblies were now reviv'd, the Covenant which had been the Band of all this Steadiness, was renewed, all her Church-Judicatories were restored, Episcopacy was entirely abolish'd, and all her Persecutors fled; for Fear of falling into the Hands of that Justice which they had before exercised to Tyranny and Oppression.

A few Words will finish this Part of her Story: The King, and his High-Church Army being retreated, after the Action at *Newbourn*, it is impossible to express the Consternation they were in: The *Scots* Army being advanc'd to

*Durham*, were now entire Masters of *England*: If they had pleased to advance, nothing could have stood before them. They were entirely possess'd of all the Counties of *Northumberland*, *Cumberland*, and *Durham*, and began to extend themselves towards the *West*, and as they received daily Supplies of Men from *Scotland*, they would, in Six Days more, have been possess'd of *Westmoreland* and *Lancashire*, there being no Forces to oppose them but at *York*, and those under the terrible Apprehension of being attack'd by our whole Army, which, God and a just Quarrel being on the *Scots* Side, they were in no Condition to oppose.

The King, in the utmost Distress, here summoned a great Council of his *English* Nobility to consult what to do; they advise him to what, for 14 Year, had been his Aversion; namely, the calling a Parliament, and to send to the *Scots* to treat of a second Pacification, which they, in the greatest Prosperity of their Affairs, readily consent to: This was the famous Treaty of *Rippon*, where, granting a Cessation of Arms, contrary to the Practice of all victorious Armies, rating their Contributions that the Country might not be oppress'd, and limiting their Army to the Banks of the River *TEES*, they sat still, waiting upon Providence, and to see what would be the Issue of those great Things which were then in view.

I mention this as it concurs with what is observ'd before, (*viz.*) That this arming in *Scotland* had nothing in it of what the Enemies of the Church of *Scotland* charg'd upon them, *viz.* Of a Design against either the Person or Government of their Prince; but was nothing more or less than what the evident Necessity of their  
 their

their Circumstances led them to, in Defence of their Civil and Religious Rights, which were illegally overthrown by their Enemies; which Enemies had sollicit'd a *FOREIGN AID*; for such even their own King, at the Head of the English Forces, was; to subdue and destroy them: nor was their Practice in this Case any thing but what has been practis'd and allowed to be agreeable to the Laws of Nature, and of our Country, by both Nations, on several Occasions, less urgent than this, as will, in Part, appear in this Account.

It remains only to observe, that on the Meeting of the Parliament in *England*, the *Scots* being fairly treated with, their just Demands granted, and afterwards confirm'd, they quitted *England* in *August 1640*; intermeddled not then with the Quarrels and Divisions which, from that Time, began to encrease; but retir'd within their own Borders, and laid down their Arms, till the Flame of Civil War, which afterwards broke out in *England*, involv'd them of Course in the Share of it, which they felt to their great Loss and Oppression, on many Accounts.

But the Story of those Things not relating to the Church-Affairs, I pass over, referring to the Histories of both Nations. I have only to conclude this Part with saying, that from this Time to the Restoration of King *Charles II*, the Church of *Scotland*, being uninterrupted as to her Ecclesiastick Jurisdiction, subsisted in her full grown State; enjoying the full Liberty of her Constitution, both in Worship, Discipline, and Government: In Civil Affairs, their Country was often involv'd in War and Confusion enough; but as to the Church, which is the proper Business of this Tract, it suffer'd no considerable Interruption.

○

Her

Her next Appearance will be a State of Trial, the Return of her implacable Enemies the Bishops and their Hierarchy, where we shall see her again overwhelmed in Blood, and Suffering the most cruel and merciless Persecution that ever Protestant Church endured : Her Neck being for Eight and Twenty Years continually under the Feet of Tyranny and Oppression.

### C O N C L U S I O N.

From this whole Account, this just Observati-  
on presents it self to our View.

1. That as the Church of *Scotland* reform'd at first from Popery into Presbyterianism, so when the Invasions of Episcopacy, supported by the Tyranny of Princes, had reduced her to the lowest Ebb, yet whenever the Hand of Tyranny was taken away, and the People of *Scotland* were left to the Freedom of their own Choice in Matters of religious Worship, they never fail'd to demonstrate, that Episcopacy was their Aversion; and that they still retain'd a sincere Affection to the Model of their first Reformers; that the Presbyterian Church was truly National, and that they would always, by their Choice, embrace the same, both in Doctrine, Discipline, Worship, and Government.

2. That Episcopacy never got Ground in *Scotland*, but by Violence; and never fail'd to exercise what Power it had there, to oppress and destroy its Opposers; being always animated with a Spirit of Persecution in the Church, and absolute Tyranny in the State, as will still more fully appear in that Part of this Work which is still behind.

*The End of the SECOND PART.*



# ADDENDA.

---

Here follows some original Papers and Accounts of Things, which are referred to in the foregoing Part.

---

## No. A.

*The Protestation of Mr. Andrew Hunter, against the absolving the Bishop of St. Andrews, without Repentance.*



IN Respect that the Provincial Assemblée of the Kirk gathered in Christ's Name, holden at St. Andrews the Twelfth Day of April 1786, For manifest Crimes and open Contumacie, hath justly and formally, according to the Word of God, and sincere Custom of this Kirk, excommunicated Mr. *Patrick Adamson*; and that in this General Assemblée they take upon them to absolve the said Mr. *Patrick* from the Sentence of Excommunication, the Process not being tried nor heard in publick, the Person excommunicated declaring no Signs of

O 2

true

' true Repentance, nor craving the said Absol-  
 ' viture by himself, nor by his Procurators, be-  
 ' fore the very Time, wherein they absolve  
 ' him: I therefore for my Part, and in Name of  
 ' all the other Brethren and true Christians, who  
 ' will be participant with me, take God to Re-  
 ' cord of the Dealing of that provincial Assem-  
 ' blie, and this Assemblie General; protesting al-  
 ' so before the Almighty, his holy Angels, and  
 ' Saints here convened, that I have no Assurance  
 ' in God's Word to my Conscience, to assent,  
 ' allow or approve this his Absolviture: And  
 ' therefore until the Time I perceive his Conver-  
 ' sion to be true and effectual, I cannot but hold  
 ' him as one justly delivered to Satan, notwith-  
 ' standing of the said Absolvitur.'

And this his Protestation, subscribed with his  
 Hand, he desired to be registred *ad perpetuam rei*  
*memoriam*; and withal gave his Reasons moving  
 him thereto.

## No. B.

*The Recantation of Mr. Patrick Adamson, Bishop*  
*of St. Andrews, directed to the Synod convened at*  
*St. Andrews 8. Aprilis 1591.*

' Brethren, understanding the Proceed-  
 ' ings of the Assembly in my contrare, and  
 ' being now withholden by Sickness, to pre-  
 ' sent my self before you, that I may give  
 ' Confession of that Doctrine, wherein I hope  
 ' God shall call me, and that at his Pleasure I may  
 ' depart in the Unitie of the Christian Faith; I  
 ' thought good by Writ to utter the same unto  
 ' your Wisdoms, and to crave your godly Wis-  
 ' dom's Assistance, not for the Restitution of any  
 ' worldly Pomp or Preeminence, which I little  
 ' respect; but to remove from me the Slanders,  
 ' which are raised in this Country, concerning  
 ' the

' the Variance of Doctrine, specially on my Part ;  
 ' wherein I protest before God, that I have only  
 ' a single Respect to his Glorie, and by his Grace  
 ' I shall abide herein to my Life's End.

' *First*, I confess the true Doctrine of Christian  
 ' Religion to be publickly taught, and rightly  
 ' announced within this Realm, and detest all Pa-  
 ' pistrick and Superstition ; like as (blessed be God)  
 ' I have detested the same in my Heart the  
 ' Space of Thirtie Years, since it pleased God to  
 ' give me the Knowledge of the Truth, wherein I  
 ' have walked uprightly, as well here, as in other  
 ' Countries, as the Lord beareth me Record ; un-  
 ' till these last Days, wherein, partly for Ambi-  
 ' tion and vain Glory, to be preferred before my  
 ' Brethren ; and partly for Covetousness, to pos-  
 ' sess the Pelf of the Kirk, I did undertake  
 ' this Office of Archbishoprick, wherewith just-  
 ' ly the sincerest Professors of the Word have  
 ' found Fault, and have condemned the same, as  
 ' impertinent to the Office of a sincere Pastor of  
 ' God's Word. And albeit Men would colour the  
 ' same, and the Imperfections thereof, by divers  
 ' Cloaks ; yet the same cannot be concealed  
 ' from the Eyes of the Faithful ; neither yet can  
 ' the Men of God, when they are put to their  
 ' Conscience, dissemble the same.

' *Next*, I confess I was in an erroneous Opini-  
 ' on, that I believed the Government of the  
 ' Kirk to be like unto the Kingdoms of the  
 ' Earth, plain contrary to the Command of our  
 ' Master *Christ* (as it is ; ) but also in Ministers,  
 ' who are nothing, but Vassals under him in an  
 ' Equality among themselves.

' *Thirdly*, That I married the Earl of *Huntlie*,  
 ' contrair the Commandment of the Church,  
 ' without the Confession of his Faith, and Pro-

‘ fession of the sincere Doctrine of the Word, I  
 ‘ repent and crave God Pardon.

‘ That I travelled both by reasoning, and o-  
 ‘ therways, to subject Kirkmen to the King’s  
 ‘ Ordinance, in Things that appertained to Ec-  
 ‘ clesiastical Matters, and Things of Conscience;  
 ‘ whereupon fundrie great Enormities have fallen  
 ‘ forth in this Country, I ask God Mercie.

‘ That I taught, Presbyteries to be a foolish  
 ‘ Invention, and would have had it so esteemed  
 ‘ of all Men, which is an Ordinance of Christ, I  
 ‘ crave God Mercie.

‘ *Farther*, I submit my self to the Mercie of  
 ‘ God, and Judgment of the Assemblie, not mea-  
 ‘ suring my Offences by my self, nor Infirmities  
 ‘ by my own Ingine, but by the good Judgment  
 ‘ of the Kirk, to which always I subject my  
 ‘ self, and beseech you to make Intercession to  
 ‘ God for me, and to the King, that I may have  
 ‘ some moyen to live, and consume the rest of  
 ‘ my wretched Time, for winning of whose Fa-  
 ‘ vour (which foolishly I thought thereby to  
 ‘ obtain) I committed all these Errors.

‘ Whereas I am burdened to be the Setter  
 ‘ forth of the Book, called *The King’s Declaration*,  
 ‘ wherein the whole Order of the Kirk is con-  
 ‘ demned and traduced, I protest before God,  
 ‘ that I was commanded to write the same by the  
 ‘ Chancellor for the Time; but chiefly by the Se-  
 ‘ cretar, another great Courtier, who himself  
 ‘ penned the second Act of Parliament, concern-  
 ‘ ing the Power and Authority of Judicature to  
 ‘ be absolutely in the King’s Power; and that it  
 ‘ should not be lawful to any Subject to reclaim  
 ‘ from the same, under the Penaltie of the Act,  
 ‘ which I suppose was Treason.

‘ *Item*, Where it is alledged, that I should have

' condemned the Doctrine, announced and taught  
 ' by the Ministrie of *Edinburgh*, concerning Obe-  
 ' dience to the Prince, I confess and protest be-  
 ' fore God, that I never understood, nor yet  
 ' knew any Thing, but Sinceritie and Upright-  
 ' ness in the Doctrine of the Ministers of *Edin-*  
 ' *burgh* in that Point, or in any other.

' Farther, I confess I was the Author of the  
 ' Act discharging the Ministers Stipends, that  
 ' would not subscribe the Acts of Parliament,  
 ' wherewith God had justly recompenced my self.

' As for any violent Course, it is known well e-  
 ' nough, who was the Author thereof, and my  
 ' Part was tried at the Imprisonment of Mr.  
 ' *Nicol Dalgleish*, Mr. *Patrick Melvine*, Mr. *Tho-*  
 ' *mas Jack*, and others.

' Moreover, I grant I was more busie with  
 ' some Bishops in *England*, in Prejudice of the  
 ' Discipline of our Kirk, partly when I was  
 ' there, and partly by mutual Intelligence since,  
 ' than became a good Christian, much less a  
 ' faithful Pastor. Neither is there any Thing  
 ' that more ashameth me, than my often decei-  
 ' ving and abusing of the Kirk heretofore, by  
 ' Confessions, Subscriptions, Protestations, &c.  
 ' which be far from me now and ever hereafter.  
 ' Amen.

' Your Brother in the Lord

' *M. Patrick Adamson.*

' Where your Wisdomes desire to have my  
 ' own Opinion, concerning the Book of the De-  
 ' claration of the King's Intention; the same is  
 ' at more length declared in the Confession,  
 ' which I have exhibited already, wherein I have  
 ' condemned all the Articles therein contained;  
 ' like as by these Presents I condemn the same.

' Where you require, what became of the  
 ' Books of the Assemblie ? I reserved them whole,  
 ' until the returning of the Lords and the Mini-  
 ' strie out of *England* ; and if I had not preserved  
 ' them, my Lord *Arran* intended to have made  
 ' them to be cast in the Fire. And upon a cer-  
 ' tain Day in *Falkland*, before they were deliver-  
 ' ed to the King's Majesty, the Bishop of *N.* ac-  
 ' companied with Mr. *Henry Hammiltoun*, rent  
 ' out some Leaves, and destroyed such Things as  
 ' made against our Estate, and that not without  
 ' my own special Allowance.

' As for the Books which I have set forth, I  
 ' have set forth nothing, except a Commentary  
 ' upon the first Epistle of *Paul* to *Timothy*, which  
 ' shall be directed to the King's Majesty, and  
 ' kept no Exemplar beside me ; and I under-  
 ' stand that Mr. *John Geddie* got the same from  
 ' the King, and lent it to Mr. *Robert Hepburn*.

' Farther, I wrote nothing, but only made  
 ' mention, in my Preface upon the *Apocalypse*,  
 ' that I should write a Book called *Pfillus*, which  
 ' (being prevented by Disease) God would not  
 ' suffer me to finish, and the little Thing that  
 ' was done I caused destroy it. I have set forth  
 ' the Book of *Job*, and the *Lamentations* of *Jer-*  
 ' *emie*, all in Verse, to be printed in *England*.

' As for my Intention, I am not disposed, nor  
 ' of Abilitie to write any Thing at this Time ;  
 ' and if it please God I were restored to my  
 ' Health, I would change my Stile, as *Cajetanus*  
 ' did at the Council of *Trent*.

' As for *Sutlivius's* Book against the Form  
 ' and Order of the Presbyteries, so far am I  
 ' from being Partner, in that Work, that as I  
 ' know not the Man, nor had ever Intelligence  
 ' of the Work, before it was done ; so if it  
 ' please

‘ please God to give me Days, I will write in  
 ‘ his contrarie.

‘ Prays the Brethren to be at Unitie and Peace  
 ‘ with me, and in Token of their Forgiveness,  
 ‘ because my Health suffereth me not to go over  
 ‘ to the Colledge, where ye are presently assem-  
 ‘ bled, which I would gladly do, to ask God and  
 ‘ you Forgiveness, that it would please you to  
 ‘ repair hither, that I may do it.

‘ Moreover I condemn, by this my Subscripti-  
 ‘ on, whatsoever is contained in the Epistle De-  
 ‘ dicatorie to the King’s Majesty before my Book  
 ‘ upon the *Revelation*, that is either slanderous,  
 ‘ or offensive to the Brethren. Also I promise  
 ‘ to satisfie the Brethren of *Edinburgh*, or any o-  
 ‘ ther Kirk in this Realm, according to good  
 ‘ Conscience, in whatsoever they find themselves  
 ‘ justly offended, and contrare to the Word of  
 ‘ God, in any of my Speeches, Actions or Pro-  
 ‘ ceedings, which have past from me.

‘ And concerning the Commentary upon the  
 ‘ first Epistle of *Paul* to *Timothy*, because there  
 ‘ are diverse Things therein contained offensive,  
 ‘ and that tend to allow the State of Bishops,  
 ‘ otherways than God’s Word can suffer, I con-  
 ‘ demn the same.

‘ The Pages before written, dictated by me Mr.  
 ‘ *Patrick Adamson*, and written at my Com-  
 ‘ mandment by my Servant Mr. *Samuel Cuning-*  
 ‘ *hame*, I subscribe with my own Hand, as ac-  
 ‘ knowledged by me, in Sinceritie of Conscience,  
 ‘ as in the Presence of God, before these Wit-  
 ‘ nesses, directed to me from the Synodal Assem-  
 ‘ blie, because of my Inabilitie to repair towards  
 ‘ them, *James Monipennie* younger of *Pitmillie*,  
 ‘ *Andrew Woode* of *Stravethie*, *David Murray*  
 ‘ Portioner of *Ardeit*, Mr. *David Russel*, Mr.  
 ‘ *Wil-*

† *William Murray* Minister at *Dysert*, *Mr. Robert Wilkie*, *David Ferguson*, with diverse others.

## M. P. A D A M S O N E.

*David Ferguson* witness. *David Murray* with my  
*M. Nicol Dalgleis.* Hand witness.  
*James Monipennie* of *Pit-* *M. David Ruffel.*  
*millie* witness. *M. David Spence.*  
*Andrew Woode* of *Strave-* *M. John Caldcrough.*  
*thie* witness. *M. William Murray.*  
*M. Robert Wilkie* witness.

*Mr. Patrick Adamson's own Answer to and Refutation of the Book, falsely called, The King's Declaration.*

‘ I have enterprised of meer remorse of Con-  
 science, to write against a Book, called, *A De-  
 claration of the King's Majesty's Intention*; albe-  
 it it containeth little or nothing of the King's  
 own Intention, but my own at the Time of the  
 Writing thereof, and the corrupt Intentions of  
 such as for the Time were about the King, and  
 abused his Minoritie. Of which Book, and  
 Contents thereof, compiled by me at the Com-  
 mand of some chief Courtiers for the Time  
 (as is before written) I shall shortly declare my  
 Opinion, as the Infirmitie of Sickness, and  
 Weakness of Memory will permit.  
 ‘ *First*, in the whole Book nothing is contained,  
 but Assertions of Lies, ascribing to the King's  
 Majesty that whereof he was not culpable:  
 For albeit, as the Time went, his Majesty  
 could have suffered these Things to have been  
 published in this Realme; yet his Majesty was  
 never of that Nature, as to have reviled any  
 ‘ Man's

Man's Person, or to upbraid any Man with Calumnies, whereof there is a Number contained in that Book.

Secondly, In the Declaration of the *second* Act of Parliament, there is mention made of Mr. *Andrew Melvins* and his Preachings, most wrongfully condemned, in special as factious and seditious; albeit his Majesty hath had a lively Trial of that Mans Fidelity and Truth, in all Proceedings from Time to Time. True it is, he is earnest and zealous, and can abide no Corruption (which most unadvisedly I attributed to a fiery and salt Humour) which his Majesty findeth by Experience to be true. For he allowed well of him, and knoweth Things, that were alledged upon him, to have been false and contrived Treacheries.

There are contained in the *second* Act of Parliament, and Declaration thereof, diverse other false Calumnies, to defame the Ministrie, and to bring the Kirk of God in Hatred and Envy with their Prince and the Nobility, burdening and accusing falsely the Ministers of Sedition, and other Crimes, whereof they were innocent. As likewise it is written in the same Act and Declaration thereof, that sovereign and supream Power, in Matters Ecclesiastical, pertaineth to the King; which is worthy to be condemned, and not to be contained among Christian Acts, where the Power of the Word is to be extolled above all the Power of Princes, and they are to be brought under Subjection to the same.

The *fourth* Act condemned the Presbyteries, as a Judgment not allowed by the King's Law, which is a very slender Argument. For as concerning the Authority of the Presbyterie, we have

‘ have the same warranted in the Gospel, *Matth.*  
 ‘ *Ch.* 18. where Christ commanded to tell the  
 ‘ Kirk. Which Authoritie being commanded  
 ‘ by Christ, and the Acts of Parliament forbid-  
 ‘ ding it, we should rather obey God than Man.  
 ‘ And yet the Presbyterie wanted never the  
 ‘ Kings Authoritie for Allowance thereof from  
 ‘ the Beginning; saving only at that Hour of  
 ‘ Darkness, when he was abused with evil Com-  
 ‘ panie. As for any other Thing that is contain-  
 ‘ ed in this Act, against any Order or Proceeding  
 ‘ of the Presbyterie, it is to be esteemed, that no-  
 ‘ thing was done by the Presbyterie without Wis-  
 ‘ dom, Judgment, and Discretion; and so hath  
 ‘ received Approbation again by the Kirk,  
 ‘ whereunto also I understand his Majesty hath  
 ‘ given Allowance, hath ratified and approved  
 ‘ the same, which should be a sufficient Reason  
 ‘ to repress all Mens Curiositie, that either have,  
 ‘ or yet would find Fault with the same.

‘ The *last* Act containeth the establishing of a  
 ‘ Bishop, which hath no Warrant in the Word  
 ‘ of God, but is grounded upon the Policie of  
 ‘ Man’s Invention, whereupon the Primacie of  
 ‘ the *Pope* or *Antichrist* is risen, which is worthie  
 ‘ to be disallowed and forbidden: Because the  
 ‘ Number of the Eldership, that hath Jurisdicti-  
 ‘ on and Oversight, as well of Vistation, as of  
 ‘ Admission, will do the same far more authen-  
 ‘ tically, godly, and with greater Zeal, than a  
 ‘ Bishop; whose Care commonly is not upon God  
 ‘ and his Dutie, but upon the World, whereupon  
 ‘ his chief Attendance is. Consider how that  
 ‘ Office hath been used, these Five Hundred  
 ‘ Years bygone, with what Crueltie and Tyrani-  
 ‘ nie it hath been exercised; ye shall find it to  
 ‘ have

have been the chief mean, that hath in every  
 Countrey suppressed the Word of God; which  
 shall be evident to all that read the Storie of  
 the Kirk. As for my own Opinion, it seem-  
 eth to be nearest to the Truth, and farthest  
 from all kind of Ambition, that the Brethren  
 in equal Degree assemble themselves under the  
 Head Christ, and there every Man discharge  
 his Office carefully, as he is commanded. And  
 because Weakness of Memorie and Sicknes suf-  
 fereth me not at length to discourse upon these  
 Matters, as I would, I must request the good  
 Reader to assure himself, that I have written  
 these, without Compulsion or Persuasion of any  
 Man, with an upright Heart; and have deli-  
 vered the same with perfect Sinceritie of Mind,  
 so far as Infirmitie of Flesh and Blood did suf-  
 fer, as God shall judge me at the latter Day:  
 And that the same Reader account, that what-  
 soever Things are omitted, is to be imputed to  
 the Imbecillitie of my Memorie, and the present  
 Sicknes; and not to any good Will, which, I  
 protest, was to have condemned every Point, yea  
 even to the false Narration of the Banquet, and  
 all the rest contained in the little Treatise call-  
 ed, *The Declaration of the King's Majesty's In-*  
*tention*, as I acknowledge they deserve to be  
 condemned by the Censure and Judgment of  
 the Kirk, to the which also I submit my  
 self, in whatsoever Thing, I have either in  
 Word or Writ attempted in that foresaid De-  
 claration, or otherways. By these Presents  
 subscribed with my Hand at St. *Andrews* the  
 Twelfth of *May*, 1591. Before these Wit-  
 nesses Mr. *David Black* Minister at St. *Andrews*,  
 Mr. *Robert Wilkie* Principal at St. *Leonard's*  
 Col-

College, Mr. *John Aitoun* of *Enmath*, Mr. *William Ruffel*.

PATRICK ADAMSONE.

M. *David Black* witness. *William Learmonth*.  
*George Ramsay*. *Patrick Gutrie*.  
M. *John Auchinleck*. *Charles Watson*, Scribe.

‘ I M. *Patrick Adamson* declare, that this Confession and Declaration before-written, is my own Confession, given with my Heart, and subscribed with my Hand, before these Witnesses underwritten, under subscribing with me at my Request and Desire, at *St. Andrews* the 10. of *June* 1591.

PATRICK ADAMSONE.

*David Carnegie* of *Colla-Abbotshal* witness.  
*William Scot* of *Abbotshal* witness.  
*William Learmonth*.  
*Thomas Kingzo*.  
M. *Kobert Wilkie*.  
M. *Andrew Montreis*.  
*Alexander Bruce* of *Earlshal* witness.  
*Borthwick* of *Gordonshal*.  
M. *William Ruffel*.  
M. *David Black*.  
M. *Andr. Hunter*, Scribe of the Provincial Assembly.

No. C.

Here follows the Account which the Episcopal Party themselves give of the Proceedings of the Scots Bishops and Presbyterian Ministers, mentioned in this Work, before the King at Hampton-Court.

‘ The first Audience was at *Hampton-Court* the 22 of *September*; at which, besides the Bishops and

and Ministers from Scotland, were present the Earls of Dunbar, Argyle, Glencarne, Sir Thomas Hamilton Advocate, and Sir Alexander Straiton: Of the English Dr. Montague Dean of the Chapel was only admitted to stay: There the King declaring the Purpose for which he had called them, spake a few Words to this Effect: *That having left the Church of Scotland in Peace at his parting forth of it, he did now hear of great Disturbances in the same; whereof he desired to understand the true Cause, and to have their Advice, how the same might be removed.* This being said he, *the Errand in general for which I have called you, I should be glad to hear your Opinions touching the Meeting at Aberdeen, where an Handful of Ministers, in Contempt of my Authority, and against the Discharge given them did assemble; and though they were neither a sufficient Number, nor the accustomed Order kept, they would take upon them to call it a General Assembly; and have since proudly maintained it by declining my Council and such other Means as they pleased to use. The rather I would hear your Minds, because I am informed that divers Ministers do justifie that Meeting, and in their publick Preachings commend these Brethren as Persons distressed, which in Effect is to proclaim me a Tyrant and Persecutor.*

Mr. James Melvill answering first, said; That there was no such Discharge given to those Ministers that met at Aberdeen, as was alledged, adjuring Sir Alexander Straiton, who was said to have given the Charge, to declare in his Majesty's Presence how that Matter was carried. As to the Absence of Moderator and Clerk, he said, that none of these were essential Parts of an Assembly, and that the Moderator absenting himself of Purpose and  
 “ the

“ the Clerk refusing to serve, the Brethren  
 “ convened might lawfully create others in  
 “ their Places, so as the Ministers having War-  
 “ rant to convene from the Word of God, and  
 “ from his Majesty’s Laws, as also coming thi-  
 “ ther by Direction of their Presbyteries, he  
 “ could not in his Conscience condemn them.

“ Well then, said the King, I shall desire you to  
 “ answer me Three Things, that I will ask: First,  
 “ if it be lawful to pray publickly for Persons con-  
 “ victed by the lawful Judge as Persons being in Di-  
 “ stress, and afflicted? 2. Whether I may not be-  
 “ ing a Christian King, by my Authority Royal, con-  
 “ vocate and prorogue, and desert for just and neces-  
 “ sary Causes known to my self any Assemblies or  
 “ Meetings within my Dominions? 3. Whether or  
 “ not may I by my Authority call, and convene before  
 “ me and my Council, whatsoever Person or Persons,  
 “ Civil or Ecclesiastical, for whatsoever Offences  
 “ committed by them in whatsoever Place within my  
 “ Dominions, and if I may not take Cognition of  
 “ the Offence, and give Sentence therein? And fur-  
 “ ther, whether or not are all my Subjects being cited  
 “ to answer before me and my Council, obliged to  
 “ compear and acknowledge me or them for Judges in  
 “ these Offences?

“ Mr. James answering, said that the Questions  
 “ were weighty, and craved a great Deliberati-  
 “ on; wherefore he would humbly entreat his  
 “ Majesty to grant them a Time to confer and  
 “ advise together, that they might all give one  
 “ direct Answer. This Desire granted, they  
 “ were commanded to advise and meet together  
 “ that Night, and be ready to answer the next  
 “ Day. At this Meeting the Earls of *Salisbury*  
 “ and *Northampton*, with divers of the *English*  
 “ Clergy were present. The Ministers desiring

to have the Meeting more private, requested  
 the Earl of *Dumbarre* to move the King therein,  
 and that none but *Scotsmen* should be present ;  
 fearing (as they said) that some unseemly Words  
 might escape them. But this was denied, and  
 they warned to speak with that Respect which  
 became Subjects. It was believed that the King  
 should have begun with the Questions proponed  
 in the former Meeting, but his Majesty taking  
 another Course, required them to declare one  
 by one, their Judgments touching *Aberdeen*  
 Assembly. The Bishops (being first ask'd) did  
 all condemn the Meeting as turbulent, factious,  
 and unlawful.

Mr. *Andrew Melvill* then being enquired  
 made Answer, " That he could not condemn  
 the Assembly, being a private Man ; that he  
 came into *England* upon his Majesty's Letter,  
 without any Commission from the Church of  
*Scotland*, and though he had Commission in *di-*  
*sta causa*, and not hearing what they could  
 say for themselves, he could not give his  
 Judgment ; Sentence he said was given against  
 them in a Justice-Court ; how justly, he did  
 remit that to the great Judge ; but for him-  
 self he would say as our Saviour did in another  
 Case, *Quis me constituit judicem ?* "

Mr. *James Balfoure* being next asked, " Did  
 pray his Majesty not to press him with any  
 Answer, for that he knew nothing would be  
 well taken, that proceeded from his Mouth,  
 and that Mr. *Andrew* had answered his Mind  
 sufficiently. "

Mr. *James Melvil*, without giving a direct  
 Answer, began to tell, " That since his coming  
 to *London* he had received divers Letters, and  
 with them a Petition, that should have been

“ presented to the late Parliament in behalf of  
 “ the warded Ministers, which he was desired to  
 “ offer unto his Majesty, and as he thought, the  
 “ Petition would make all their Minds known. ”  
 ‘ The King taking the Petition and falling to  
 ‘ read the same, willed the Advocate to go on  
 ‘ and receive the Answer of the rest. And as the  
 ‘ Advocate was questioning Mr. *Williams Scot*, and  
 ‘ urging him with a distinct Answer (for he used  
 ‘ many Circumlocutions, according to the Cu-  
 ‘ stom) Mr. *Andrew Melvill* in a great Passion said,  
 ‘ *That he followed the Instructions of Mr. John Hamil-*  
 ‘ *ton his Uncle, who had poisoned the North with*  
 ‘ *his Papistry, and that he was now become κατήγο-*  
 ‘ *ρος τῶν ἀδελφῶν.* Northampton asking what he  
 ‘ meant by that Speech? The King said, he  
 ‘ calleth him, *the mickle Devil*: And then fould-  
 ‘ ing up the Petition, said, *I see you are all set for*  
 ‘ *maintaining that base Conventicle of Aberdeen?*  
 ‘ *But what Answers have you to give to the Questi-*  
 ‘ *ons I moved?* it was answered, “ That they had  
 “ conferred together, and finding them to con-  
 “ cern the whole Church, they would not by  
 “ their particular Voices prejudge the same. ” But  
 ‘ you will not I trust, said the King, *call my Autho-*  
 ‘ *rity in Question, and subject the Determination of*  
 ‘ *the same to your Assemblies.* “ This they said  
 “ was far from their Thoughts, but if his Maje-  
 “ sty should be pleased to set down in Writing  
 “ what he required, they should labour to give  
 “ him Satisfaction. ”

‘ Thus were they dismissed for that Time, and  
 ‘ being the next Day called before the *Scottish*  
 ‘ Council (for after this they were no more ad-  
 ‘ mitted to his Majesties Presence) they were en-  
 ‘ quired, whether they had in their publick  
 ‘ Prayers prayed for the warded Ministers, as

Persons afflicted, and Sufferers for God's Cause? Some of them confessed that they had prayed for them, as Persons in Trouble, and Distress: Others, that they had commended them to God, but remembered not in what Words.

The 20 of October, they were again brought before the Scots Council, and had the Three Questions delivered to them in Writing; which they were commanded to answer severally: Mean while they were discharged to return into Scotland without his Majesties License, and prohibited to come towards the Queen and Princes Court. The Bishops and others of the Clergy that assisted them, were permitted to return.

Having thus given a Summary of this eminent Story on one Side, it follows to see how the other Side relates it.

#### No. D.

Here follows the Account which the Presbyterian Party give of the same Conference, extracted from the Memorials of some of the Persons present, and from *Calderwood's History of the Church, &c.*

Upon the 22d of September they were sent for to the King, and when they came, they were admitted to the Chamber of Presence, where they were courteously received by the Bishop of Canterbury. The King came to the Chamber of Presence, accompanied with the Earls of Dumbar and Orkney, Lord Fleeming, the Laird of Laurestoun, Sir Thomas Hamilton the King's Advocate, Mr. John Spotswood Bishop of Glasgow, Mr. George Gladstones Bishop of St. Andrews, Mr. James Law Bishop

of Orknay, Mr. James Nicolson, Mr. Robert  
 Howie, Mr. Patrick Sharp, Mr. Andrew Lamb.  
 None were suffered to stay within, but the  
 Scottish Counsellors and Ministers, except only  
 that of Montague, who kepted the Door. The  
 King opened up the Causes, which moved him  
 to write for them, almost conform to the  
 Tenor of the Proclamation, and the Missive  
 sent unto them. In end, he gathered all his  
 Speeches to two Heads, wherein he said, he  
 would be through with them for the Peace  
 of the Church. The one about the pretend-  
 ed General Assembly (so he termed it) hol-  
 den at Aberdeen, and the Proceedings, which  
 followed thereupon. The other, how there  
 might be an ordinary and peaceable Assembly  
 holden, to set all Things in Quietness and  
 good Order. They had agreed among them-  
 selves to give no present Answer, but to take  
 all to Advise. Mr. James Melvine was  
 chosen to be their Spokesman. After he had  
 expressed, in a complementing Manner, their  
 Joy for his Inclination to intertain Peace, &c.  
 he desired Time to advise; because his Maje-  
 sty's Letter did bear no Particular, neither  
 heard they of any before that Time. There-  
 after there was much Time spent, upon send-  
 ing of Commissioners from Presbyteries, after  
 receiving of his Majesty's Commissioners Let-  
 ter, discharging any Assembly to be holden  
 at Aberdeen. Item, upon the Proceedings of  
 the Synod of Fife; praying for the convicted  
 Brethren in Prison; and upon Mr. James Mel-  
 vin's Letter directed to the Synod of Fife.  
 For the present they answered thus much:  
 Many of the Presbyteries had not received Ad-  
 vertisement before the Day; these who had

received, considering that there were weighti-  
 er Reasons for holding the Assembly, than  
 for deserting of it, resolved to send their  
 Commissioners to keep the Day appointed by  
 his Majesty the Law standing, which is the  
 most authentick Testimony that a King can  
 give, as his Majesty himself declared in open  
 Assembly holden at *Dundie*: For the Enemies  
 were bold and busie: Many References, Ap-  
 pellations, and other Matters were lying not  
 taken Order with, which could not be order-  
 ed without a General Assembly. The great-  
 est Motive was a Fear to lose the Right and  
 Possession of a General Assembly, which would  
 expire of it self, if there were not a set Day  
 appointed. The Words of the Letter, sent  
 by the Synod of *Fife* to other Synods, were,  
 in their Judgment, so conceived, that it could  
 neither prejudice the General Assembly, nor  
 his Majesty's Royal Power, nor the Brethren  
 who were in Ward under his Majesty's Mer-  
 cy. They confessed, they prayed for the im-  
 prisoned Brethren; and professed, they could  
 not omit that Duty to their Brethren, which  
 was extended even to Malefactors for their  
 Amendment. As for Mr. *James Melvin's* Let-  
 ter, the King said, I heard, Mr. *James*, you  
 wrote a Letter to the Synod of *Fife*, holden  
 at *Couper*, where there was much of Christ,  
 and little good of the King. By God, I  
 trow, ye were raving or mad; for ye speak  
 otherwise now. Was that a charitable Judg-  
 ment ye had of me? *Sir*, said Mr. *James*, I  
 was both fore and sick in Body, when I wrote  
 that Letter; but sober and sound in Mind.  
 I assured my self, and the Brethren, that these  
 Articles, a Copy whereof came in my Hands,

could not come from your Majesty, they were so strange. Sundry of the Bishops and Commissioners of the General Assembly, that were present, confessed, that many wrong Copies were sent abroad, and some very odious, whereof one might have come in Mr. James his Hands. The King, resuming the first two Heads, willed them to advise upon an Answer, against the next Day.

They were scarce entred into their Lodging at *Kingstoun*, when they received a Letter from Mr. *Alexander Hay*, Secretary for the *Scotish Affairs*, warning them in the King's Name to come to Sermon to morrow. So upon *Tuesday* the 23<sup>d</sup> of *September*, they went to *Hampton-Court*, and sat in the Place appointed for them in the Chappel, the King and Queen being present. Doctor *Buckerage* taught upon *Rom. 13. 1.* He joined Pope and Presbyteries together, diverse Times, as Enemies to the King's Supremacy.

After Dinner, they resolved upon this Answer to the first Head, which they appointed Mr. *James Melvin* to deliver. They could not judge of the Assembly of *Aberdeen*, for these Reasons. 1. His Majesty had indicted by Proclamation a General Assembly, wherein his Majesty expected a Reparation of all Disorders, in so far as belongeth to the Censures of the Church. If they should now condemn, or resolve, having committed such a Prejudice, they could not be heard. They called to Remembrance his Majesty's Practice, at the Assembly holden at *Montrose*, where the Commissioners of *Lothian* and *Merce* were rejected, upon the like Ground. 2. *Res non erat integra*, but judged already by the Council: But they

' they would be loath to contradict. 3. The  
 ' Judgment thereof could not appertain to them :  
 ' *Nam quis constituit eos iudices?* 4. Put the Case  
 ' they could be Judges, and that the Matter  
 ' might be committed to them, they could not  
 ' do it *indicta causa, & reis non citatis nec au-*  
 ' *ditis.* But the King took another Course,  
 ' which was to pose every one in particular,  
 ' and so to catch Advantage, if it were possi-  
 ' ble.

' The Ministers were sent for after Dinner.  
 ' The Prince stood at the King's left Hand,  
 ' with the abovenamed *Scottish* Noblemen, Coun-  
 ' sellors, Bishops, and Commissioners of the Ge-  
 ' neral Assembly. The Archbishop of *Canter-*  
 ' *bury* stood at the King's right Hand, the Earls  
 ' of *Salisbury, Suffolk, Worcester, Nottingham,*  
 ' *Northampton,* Lord *Stennop,* Lord *Knolies,* and  
 ' sundry other Noblemen. Some Bishops and  
 ' Deans stood at the Door, behind the Tape-  
 ' stry, who now and then discoverd themselves.  
 ' Mr. *Andrew Melvin* desired the Earl of *Dum-*  
 ' *bar,* to request his Majesty that the *English*  
 ' might be removed, lest his Majesty should of-  
 ' fend at any Thing spoken in a homely Man-  
 ' ner in their Presence: But it was not granted.  
 ' The King, after resuming of the Points left the  
 ' last Day, came at last to be resolved in this  
 ' Particular; whether the Assembly holden late-  
 ' ly at *Aberdeen,* was a lawful Assembly, or not?  
 ' And whether the Proceedings of the Ministers  
 ' at it, and afterward, were justifiable, or not?  
 ' Mr. *George Gladstones, John Spotswood, James*  
 ' *Law, Andrew Lamb,* Bishops; Mr. *James Ni-*  
 ' *colson, Patrick Sharpe, Robert Howie* and *Lau-*  
 ' *restoun* were first asked, and answered, they  
 ' ever damned that Assembly, and the Proceed-

ings of these Brethren, as unlawful: Then  
 the King demanded at Mr. *Andrew Melvin*,  
 what say ye; whether think ye, that where  
 a few Number of Eight or Nine do meet,  
 without any Warrant, wanting the chief  
 Members of an Assembly, as the Moderator  
 and Scribe, conveying unmannerly without  
 a Sermon, being also discharged before by o-  
 pen Proclamation, may make an Assembly, or  
 not? He answered to the first Objection thus;  
 That in an Assembly of the Servants of Christ,  
 whereof the Number is not prescribed by a  
 Law, it is not lawful for any to disallow there-  
 of for the Number, seeing two or three (which  
 is the smallest Number) convened in the  
 Name of Christ, have the Promise of his Pre-  
 sence, who is their Lord and Ruler. Beside,  
 Rareness maketh not Unlawfulness in an or-  
 dinary Meeting, established by Law and Pra-  
 ctice. Lastly, all that was done, might law-  
 fully have been done by a fewer Number, au-  
 thorized with Commission, as they were: For  
 Continuation requireth not full Conventions.  
 As for their Warrant. 1. They have War-  
 rant from God's Word. 2. Your Majesty's  
 Laws. 3. Their Presbyteries sent them in  
 Commission to that Effect; and therefore ap-  
 proved the prorogating of the Day; which  
 was all they did: And therefore these Presby-  
 teries were to be blamed, if any thing was  
 done amiss; and not the Persons, who were  
 Executors only of their Presbyteries Will and  
 Commission. To the *Second* he answered, that  
 the Absence of a Moderator and Clerk were  
 not *de essentia Synodi*: And therefore the one,  
 to wit, Mr. *Patrick Galloway*, the Moderator of  
 the former Assembly, absenting himself; the  
 other,

other, to wit, Mr. *Thomas Nicolson* being present, but craving Leave to be absent for that Time, because of his weighty Affairs, they might create others in their Places, according to the Practice of the Church of *Scotland*, as is to be seen in the Register of the General Assembly. To the *Third* he answered, his Majesty was misinformed: For the ordinary Pastor of *Aberdeen*, to wit, Mr. *James Ross* had a Sermon before the Meeting. As for the pretended Charge, given the Night before, turning himself to *Laurestoun*, he said, I adjure thee, in the Name of the Kirk of *Scotland*, as you will answer before the great God, in the Day that Christ shall appear to judge the Quick and the Dead, to declare the Truth, and to tell, whether there was any such Charge given, or not. *Laurestoun* answered not one Word. Then the King asked, what Reasons he had not to condemn the Ministers. He answered, if it please your Majesty to hear, I have these. 1. I am but a private Man, come upon your Majesty's Letter, without any Commission from the Church of *Scotland*; and therefore, seeing *nemo constituit me judicem*, I cannot take upon me to condemn them. 2. Your Majesty, by Virtue of your Proclamation, dated here at *Hampton-Court* (which he then produced) hath remitted their Trial to the General Assembly, expecting Reparation of wrongs, if any be done: I cannot therefore prejudice the Church and Assembly of my Vote there, which if I give now, I shall be sure to have my Mouth shut up then, as by Experience I and other Brethren have found before. 3. *Res est hactenus judicata* by your Majesty's Council, whether rightly, or not,

that

that I remit to the Lord the Searcher of all  
 Hearts, before whom one Day they must ap-  
 pear, and answer for that Sentence : Shall I  
 then take upon me to contradict your Maje-  
 sty's Council, and their Proceedings? I think  
 your Majesty would not be well content with  
 it. *Lastly*, how can I condemn them *indicta*  
*causa*, not hearing their Accusers objecting  
 against them? This was the Substance of his  
 Answer, which he uttered after his own Man-  
 ner, roundly and freely. Mr. *James Balfour*,  
 standing next in Order, was urged to declare  
 his Mind. He answered in Effect as Mr. *An-*  
*drew* did. Mr. *James Melvins* answered; their  
 Proceedings are already censured by your Ma-  
 jesty and Council, wherein I am resolved with  
 the Peril to obtemperate, either by Obedience  
 or Patience. If your Majesty be pleased to have  
 it farther judged by an Assembly of the Church,  
 which is our Wish, I cannot prejudge the  
 Judgment of the Church. If in the mean  
 Time your Majesty will urge me to deliver  
 my Judgment of the Matter, according to my  
 Conscience; unless the Wrongs done to them,  
 and given in Writ to your Majesty's Estates,  
 at the last Parliament holden at *Perth*, be con-  
 sidered and discussed, I would not for all the  
 World condemn them. A Copy of the  
 Wrongs we have earnestly desired of them-  
 selves, that we might present them to your  
 Majesty, with this he stepped forward, and  
 delivered them to the King in his Hand.  
 While the rest were sporting, the King read  
 them over, and smiling in discontented Man-  
 ner, he said, he was glad they were given in.  
 Mr. *Robert Wallace* followed. He regrated  
 some Delations that were given in against him,  
 and

and then answered as the former did. Mr. *William Watson* was sharp against *Laurestoun*, and laid the Burden of all upon him: But he never replied one Word. Mr. *William Scot* delivered his Judgment in few Words, agreeable with these that preceeded. The Advocate craved Licence of the King to deal with him: But Mr. *William* had the upper Hand to his Shame. Because much Time was spent, Mr. *John Carmichael* and Mr. *Adam Colt* were desired to be short. They answered in few Words, conform to the rest. Their Harmony moved the *English* and others to Admiration. In end Mr. *Andrew Melvin* brake out, in his own Manner, and plainly avowed the Innocency of the Brethren, in all their Proceedings at *Aberdeen*. Thereafter he recounted the Wrongs done to them at *Linlithgow*, whereof he was an Ear and Eye-Witness. He laid to the Advocate's Charge his favouring and sparing of Papists, his crafty and malicious dealing against the Ministers. So that *κατήγορος τῶν ἀδελφῶν* could not have done more against the Saints of God, then ye did at *Linlithgow* against the Ministers. Ye would do God and his Majesty better Service, my Lord, if you bended your Forces and Speeches against your Uncle Mr. *John Hamilton* a seminary Priest, and Mr. *Gilbert Broun*, Abbot of *Newabbay*, who have infected a great Part of the Country with Popery. But these Mens Heads ye have clapped, and shut up the faithful Servants of Christ in Prison; and still ye shew your self possessed with the same Spirit: For ye think it not enough to have pleaded against them in *Scotland*, with all the Cunning and Skill ye had, but still continue

‘ *κατὰ γὰρ τῶν ἀδελφῶν.* At which Words the  
 ‘ King turning him about to the Archbishop of  
 ‘ *Canterbury*, said, what is it he saith? I think  
 ‘ he is calling him out of the Revelation *Anti-*  
 ‘ *christ*; nay, by God, he calleth him the very  
 ‘ Devil. Well boured, Brother *John*, said the  
 ‘ King. In end he demanded, what Overture  
 ‘ they would give him for the other Point.  
 ‘ They answered, their best Overture was to  
 ‘ have a free General Assembly, by which all  
 ‘ Jars would be removed, and quickly quieted.  
 ‘ The King riseth, and they were dismissed,  
 ‘ not without great Applause of the *English*,  
 ‘ for their Gravity and Boldness in the Cause  
 ‘ of God. The Truth was cleared unto them,  
 ‘ which before was obscured by Misreports.  
 ‘ What was omitted by one, was remembered by  
 ‘ another, every one of them having a pretty  
 ‘ Space to advise upon his Answer.

‘ When the Ministers were gone out of the  
 ‘ Palace, and a little on their Way to *King-*  
 ‘ *stoun*, Mr. *Alexander Hay* sent for them, read-  
 ‘ eth to them a Charge from the King, not to  
 ‘ return to *Scotland*, nor to come near the *King’s*,  
 ‘ *Queen’s*, or *Princes Court*, without special Li-  
 ‘ cence and calling for.

‘ Upon the 24. of *September*, M. *Alexander Hay*  
 ‘ willed them to return to Court with all conve-  
 ‘ nient speed. When they came, he shewed to  
 ‘ Mr. *James Melvine*, that he was directed by his  
 ‘ Majesty to crave his Subscription to the Sheet  
 ‘ of Paper, which was given-in by him to his  
 ‘ Majesty concerning the Cause, and Manner of  
 ‘ the Delivery. So he gave him it to peruse,  
 ‘ which being done Mr. *James* wrote the An-  
 ‘ swer, and Manner of the Delivery of them in  
 ‘ the Kings Hand. Within an Hour after, the  
 ‘ Earle

Barle of *Glencarne* and Mr. *John Gordoun* came to them, directed from the King, desiring their Answer in Writ, and subscribed, to his Question; what the King may do in Matters Ecclesiastical? And whether or not he had wholly the Power of conveening and discharging of Assemblies? They craved the Question to be set down in Writ, and subscribed as from his Majesty, and sufficient Time to advise, and so the Matter deserted at that Time.

Upon the 28. of *September*, they were again written for to come to Court. The End was to hear Doctor *Andrews* Bishop of *Excester*, who, teaching upon the *Tenth* of *Numbers*, discoursed upon the Two Trumpets, and proved, as he could, the conveening and discharging of Councils and Assemblies to belong to Christian Kings and Emperours.

At Supper, they were again warned to be at Court, the Day following by Eight a Clock; because the *Scotish* Council was to deal with them. But when they came, they were warned by the King's express Command, to come to the King's Chappel, namely Mr. *Andrew Melvine* and Mr. *James Melvine*. Mr. *James* warned Mr. *Andrew* by the Way, that they were to be trapped, and to have their Patience tried. There they saw the King and Queen offer at the Altar, whereupon were set Two Books, Two Basons, and Two Candlesticks with Two blind Candles. This was a Day solemnly kepted, in Honour of *St. Michael*. A *German* being present, said, *ego nunquam vidi talem cultum: nihil hic presecto deest de solenni missa, prater adorationem consecrati panis*. Upon the Occasion of this Solemnitie,

Mr.

Mr. *Andrew Melvine* made the Epigram, for which he was afterward troubled.

That Day afternoon, the Earles of *Argile*, *Glencarne*, *Orkney*, *Wigton*, *Dumbar*, the Comptroller, the Advocat, the Abbot of *Lindorse*, Mr. *Peter Young*, the Laird of *Kilsyth* convened, in the Earle of *Dumbar*'s Lodging. When the Ministers compeared, *Dumbar* shewed unto them, that it was his Majesty's Will, that the Council there convened should deal with them severally, and crave their Answer to certain Heads, whereunto they prayed them to give clear Answers, for Satisfaction of his Majesty, and to go forth, and come in, as they were called on. Mr. *James Melvine* was first called on, and being demanded by the Advocat; 1. Whether he prayed for the imprisoned Brethren? 2. Whether he allowed the holding of the Assembly at *Aberdeen*, and the Declinature given in to the Council by them who held it? 3. Where was his Letter, written to the Synod of *Fyfe*, &c. He answered, I am a free Subject of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, which hath Laws and Priviledges of their own, as free as any Kingdome in the World, to which I will stand. There have been no Summons lawfully execute against me. The Noblemen here present, and I, am not in our own Countrey. The Charge *super inquirendis* was declared long since to be unjust. I am bound by no Law to accuse my self, neither to furnish Dittay against my self. He desired the Noblemen present to remember what they were; and to deal with him, howbeit a mean Man, yet as a freeborne *Scottishman*, as they would be content to be used themselves, that is, according to the Lawes of the Realme of

‘ *Scotland.* The Advocat notwithstanding urg-  
 ‘ ed him to answer, with whom he interchan-  
 ‘ ged some sharp Speeches ; and told him, that  
 ‘ howbeit he had not studied the Lawes, as he  
 ‘ had done, yet he had learned his Logick, and  
 ‘ taught it in the Schooles. Will ye not daigne  
 ‘ his Majesty with an Answer? said *Dumbar.*  
 ‘ With all Reverence, said Mr. *James*, if I  
 ‘ might know the Question, and have Time to  
 ‘ advise upon a good Answer. Ye shall have  
 ‘ that, said *Dumbar*; and desired him to give  
 ‘ in his Supplication, which the Ministers im-  
 ‘ prisoned had sent to the King, which Mr.  
 ‘ *James* delivered unto him, and intreated him  
 ‘ to present it to the King, and to assist it. He  
 ‘ was removed, and the rest were called on by  
 ‘ Course. At last Mr. *Andrew Melvine* was call-  
 ‘ ed, and told them plainly, they knew not  
 ‘ what they were doing; they had degenerated  
 ‘ from the ancient Nobilitie of *Scotland*, who  
 ‘ were wont to hazard their Lives and Lands,  
 ‘ for the Freedom of their Countrey, and the  
 ‘ Gospel, which they were betraying and over-  
 ‘ turning. Night drawing on they were dis-  
 ‘ missed.

‘ Upon the *Thirty of September*, they were a-  
 ‘ gain called on to Sermon. Doctor *King* had a  
 ‘ most virulent Invective against the Presbyteries,  
 ‘ crying to the King, *down, down with them.*

‘ Upon the *Second of October*, the Eight Mini-  
 ‘ sters were again called before the *Scottish* Coun-  
 ‘ cellours. Three Articles were delivered to  
 ‘ them in Writ, whereunto they were called to  
 ‘ give Answer in Writ, every one of them sever-  
 ‘ rally; and to take as much Time to advise, as  
 ‘ they pleased, and indeed the chief Drift was  
 ‘ to drive Time, till the Convention at *Linlith-*  
 ‘ go:

' *gone* were past. It was permitted to them to  
 ' go where they pleased, provided they went  
 ' not far from Court, and made the Place of  
 ' their Abode known, that they might be found,  
 ' when it pleased his Majesty. The Tenor of  
 ' the Articles, subscribed by Mr. *Alexander Hay*,  
 ' here followeth.

' 1. Whether they had not transgressed their  
 ' Dutie, in making publick Prayers for the Bre-  
 ' thren in Ward, as being afflicted : And are  
 ' willing to crave his Majesty's Favour for the  
 ' same ; seing their said Brethren abide in ward  
 ' for just Causes, and by a just Sentence of a law-  
 ' ful Judge, standing unquarrelled and unreduc'd ?

' 2. Whether they acknowledge his Majesty by  
 ' the Authoritie of his Prerogative Royal, as a  
 ' Christian King, to have lawful and full Power  
 ' to convocat, prorogat, and cause desert, upon  
 ' just and necessare Causes known to him, the Af-  
 ' semblies of the Kirk, within his Majesty's Do-  
 ' minions.

' 3. If his Majesty by his Authoritie Royal,  
 ' hath not sufficient and lawful Power to call,  
 ' and convene before him and his Council,  
 ' whatsoever Person or Persons, Civil or Ecclesi-  
 ' astical, for whatsoever Faults, and give Sen-  
 ' tence thereanent ? And if all his Majesty's  
 ' Subjectes be astricted to compear before his  
 ' Majesty and Council, to answer, acknowledge  
 ' and obey his Majesty and Councils Judgment,  
 ' in the said Offences ? 2. *October* 1606.

' The Articles abovewritten, appointed by his  
 ' Majesty's Council to be delivered out of  
 ' my Hand to the Ministers abovemention-  
 ' ed, by his Majesty's special Commandment.

' *Alexander Hay.*

' Upon

‘ Upon the *Fourth* of *November*, *Mr. William Scot* and *Mr. John Carmichael* went to *Westminster*, and conferred with *Mr. James Nicholson*, whom they found to be a Man far changed, and resolved to accept the Bishoprick of *Dunkelden*, bought to him by the King from *Mr. Peter Rollock* for Twenty Thousand Pounds. They delivered to him their Answers to the Three Articles, and with all their Grievance, which the King desired them to give-up. They agreed in Substance; howbeit some were more ample than others. *Mr. James Melvine* answered thus.

‘ With all Submission, Humilitie and Reverence to the King’s Majesty, and with all hearty Affection to his Grandour, *James Melvine* giveth Answer to the Questions proponed by his Majesty’s most honourable Council.

1. ‘ I cannot conceive a Transgression of Dutie, in praying for our Brethren, the Command and Warrant being so clear in the Word of God, 1 *Tim. 2. 1. 1 John 5. 16. Heb. 13. 3.* And if I could conceive any; prostrat at his Majesty’s Feet, I would most willingly crave Pardon and Favour.

2. ‘ The Lawes of the Realme, the Judgment, Practice and Constitution of our Kirk are clear hereanent; and if there remaine any doubt, let it be resolved in the next General Assembly, to the which by the whole Synod it is referred.

3. ‘ The *Third* is Civil, for the most Part of many Interrogations; and cannot therefore be simply answered; and if to be doubted of, it is to be resolved by Lawyers and the Estates of the Realme. And as for judging of Ministers in Matters meerly Spiritual or Ec-

' clesiastical, such as concerne their Calling, and  
 ' Points of their Ministrie, which they have of  
 ' and in *Christ Jesus*, and of his Kirk allanerly,  
 ' together with the Jurisdiction of the Kirk,  
 ' what it is, and how it differeth from the Juris-  
 ' diction and Power of Civil Magistrats, the  
 ' Statutes of the Realme, the Judgment, Pra-  
 ' ctice and Constitutions of our Kirk, the Kings  
 ' Majesty's Declaration at *Linlithgow*, and at di-  
 ' verse General Assemblies, are most clear and  
 ' evident ; to which I stand, till God teach my  
 ' Conscience better. Protesting before that great  
 ' God of Heaven and Earth, that if I thought it  
 ' not a Sinne against Christ, the Lord of Lords,  
 ' and King of Kings, and so most dangerous to  
 ' the Kings Majesty's Person, Crown and Estate,  
 ' to ascribe and give any farther to him, there is  
 ' none living would be glader, according to his  
 ' Abilitie, for avouching, maintaining and stand-  
 ' ing for the same to the uttermost, than poor  
 ' *James Melvine*.

## No. E.

The first Commission of the King, called, *The High Commission*.

*James, by the Grace of God, King of Great Bri-  
 tain, France and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, to  
 our Lovits, &c. Messengers, our Sheriffs in that Part  
 conjunctly and severally, specially constitute, greeting.  
 Forsameekle as Complaint being made to us, in the  
 Behalf of the Ministry of this our Kingdom, that the  
 frequent Advocations, purchased by such as were either  
 erroneous in Religion, or scandalous in Life, not only  
 discouraged the Ministry from censuring of Vice ; but  
 emboldened the Offenders to continue in their Wick-  
 edness, using their Advocations as a Mean to delay  
 and*

and disappoint both Trial and Punishment: We, for  
eschewing of this inconvenient, and that the Number  
of true Professors may be known to increase, the An-  
tichristian Enemy and his Growth suppressed, and all  
sorts of Vice, and scandalous Life punished; and that  
neither Iniquitie, nor Delay of Trial and Punishment,  
be left by this subterfuge, or discouraging of Ecclesi-  
astical Censures to proceed, in Things so meet and pro-  
per for them, have, out of our Dutie to God, and Love  
to his Kirk, being the Nourish-Father of the same in  
Earth, within our Dominions, given Power and Com-  
mission to the Reverend Father in God, and our trustie  
and welbeloved Counsellour George Archbishop of St.  
Andrews, Primat and Metropolitan of our King-  
dom, and to our right trustCusine and Counseller Alex-  
ander Earle of Dumfermline Lord high Chancellour  
of this our Kingdom, George Earle of Dumbar Trea-  
surer, George Earle Marchal, John Earle of Mar,  
John Earle of Montrose, Patrick Earle of King-  
horne, to the Reverend Fathers in God, Alexander  
Bishop of Dunkelden, Peter Bishop of Aberdeen,  
Alexander Bishop of Murray, Andrew Bishop of  
Breachon, David Bishop of Ross, George Bishop of  
Dumblane, Alexander Bishop of Cathness, and  
James Bishop of Orknay: To our trustie Cusins and  
Counsellours Lord Lindsey, Simon Lord  
Frazer of Lovat, David Lord of Scoone; and to  
our trustie and welbeloved Counsellours Mr. John  
Prestoun of Pennicook President of our Colledge of  
Justice, Sir Richard Cockburne of Clerkingtoun  
Knight Lord Privie-Seal, Sir Alexander Hay  
Knight our Secretarie, Sir James of  
Kingaskon Comptroller, Sir Thomas Hammiltoun  
of Binning Knight our Advocate, and to our lovit Sir  
David Carnegie of Kinnard Knight  
Dundas of that Ilk, Alexander Iruing of Drumme,  
Bamsy of Balmaine, Mr. John

Arthure, *Mr. Thomas Henrison, Mr. Adam King and Mr. James Bannatine Commissars of Edinburgh, Mr. John Weemes Commissar of St. Andrews, Mr. James Martine Rector of the Universitie of St. Andrews, Mr. Robert Howie Principal of the new Colledge there, Mr. David Monipennie Dean of Facultie, Mr. Patrick Galloway, Mr. John Hall, Mr. Peter Hewat, Mr. John Mitchelson, Mr. Robert Wilkie, Mr. John Strauchan, Mr. Andrew Leitch, Mr. Henry Phillip, Mr. Arthure Futhie, and Mr. Patrick Lindsey Ministers, or to any Five of them, the Archbishop being always one, within the whole Bounds of the Province of St. Andrews. And to the Reverend Father in God, and our trustie and welbeloved Counsellor John Archbishop of Glasgow, Alexander Earle of Dumfermline, George Earle of Dumbar, John Earle of Cassils, James Earle of Glencarne, John Earle of Wigtoun, James Earle of Abercorne ; and to the Reverend Fathers in God Gawin Bishop of Galloway, John Bishop of Argyle, Andrew Bishop of the Isles ; and to our trustie Cousine and Counsellour Walter Lord of Blantire, and to our Lovits Mr. John Arthure, Mr. Thomas Henrison, Mr. Adam King, Mr. James Bannatine Commissars of Edinburgh, David Forsyth Commissar of Glasgow, Mr. James Halyday Commissar of Dumfreis, Mr. John Hammiltoun Commissar of Hammiltoun, Mr. J. Hammiltoun, Commissar of Lanerk, Sir George Eldhinstoun of Eastwood Knight, Mr. Patrick Sharpe Principal of the Colledge of Glasgow, Mr. William Birnie Minister at Lanerk, Mr. John Hay Parson of Ranfrew, Mr. James Hammiltoun Dean of Glasgow, Mr. David Sharpe, and David Walkinshaw Subdean of Glasgow, Mr. Thomas Ramsey Minister at Dumfreis, Mr. John Bell Minister at Glasgow, and Mr. Walter Stewart Minister at  
 or any Five of them, the said Arch-  
 bishop*

bishop being always one, within the whole Bounds of the Province of Glasgow; To call before them, at such Times and Places as they shall think meet, any Person or Persons, dwelling or remaining within their Provinces respective abovescriben, of St. Andrews or Glasgow, or within any Diocies of the samine, being Offenders either in Life or Religion, whom they held any ways to be scandalous; and that they take Trial of the same, and if they find them guiltie and impenitent, refusing to acknowledge their Offences, they shall give Command to the Preachers of that Parish where they dwell, to proceed with the Sentence of Excommunication against them, which if it be protracted or delayed, and if their Command by that Minister be not presently obeyed, they shall conveen any such Minister before them, and proceed in censuring of him for his Disobedience, either by Suspension, Deprivation, or Warding, according as in their Discretion they shall hold his Obstinacie, and refuse of their Direction, to have deserved. And farther, to fine at their Discretions, imprison or ward any such Persons, who being convicted before them, they shall finde upon Trial to have deserved any such Punishment: And a Warrant under the Hand of any Five abovenamed, of every Province respective abovescriben, the said Archbishop of the Province being one, shall serve for a sufficient Command for the Captains, Constables of our Wards and Castles, and to all Keepers of Ales and Prisons, either in Burgh, or Land, in any Part of the Provinces respective abovescriben, for receiving and detaining such Persons, as shall be unto them directed to be kept by them, in such Form as by the said Warrant shall be prescribed, as they will answer upon the contraire at their Perils: And of all such Fines, as shall be imposed upon any Offender, the one Half to pertain to Our self, and the other Half to be employed upon such necessary Things, as our said Commissioners shall be forced

ced unto; by charging of Parties and Witnesses to compear before them, and the superplus to be bestowed at the Sight of the said Commissioners, by Distribution among the Poor : Commanding the Lords of our Privie Council, upon Sight of any Certificate, subscribed by any Five of the said Commissioners within every Province, as said is, the said Archbishop of the Province being one, either of any Fine imposed by them upon any Party compearing, and found guiltie ; or of the Contumacie and Refusal of any to compear before them, that the said Lords of our Privie Council direct a summar Charge of horning upon Ten Days only; and that no Suspension, nor Relaxation be granted, without first a Testificat under the Hand of the Archbishop of the Province, containing the Obedience and Satisfaction of the Partie charged, be produced. And in Case of farther Disobedience or Rebellion of the Partie, who shall be charged for his Fines, or not Compearance, the said Lords of our Council are then to prosecute the most strict Order, as is usual against Rebels for any Cause whatsoever; with Power to our said Commissioners to proceed herein : As also to take Trial of all Persons, that have made Defection; or otherwise are suspected in Religion; and as they find any just Cause against them, to proceed in Manner foresaid. And also whensoever they shall learn or understand of any Minister, Preacher, or Teacher of Schools, Colledges, or Universities, or of exhorting or lecturing-Readers, within these Bounds, whose Speeches in publick have been impertinent, and against the established Order of the Kirk, or against any of the Conclusions of the bypast General Assemblies, or in favour of any of those, who are banished, warded, or confined for their contemptuous Offences; which being no Matter of Doctrine, and so much idle Time spent without Instruction of their Auditorie in their Salvation, ought so much the more severely to be punished ;

in Regard that they are Ministers, who of all others should spend least idle Talk, and specially in the Chair of Veritie: And therefore after the calling of them before the said Commissioners, they are to be questioned and tried upon the Points of that which is laid against them, and punished according to the Qualitie of their Offence: And whereas Complaint shall be made unto them by any Partie, that shall be convenenced before any Ecclesiastical Judicatorie, for any such Crime as he shall be then suspected of, or that the Partie doth alledge always the Matter it self to be improper to their Judicatorie, or the Proceeding to have been informal, or that the Judicatorie it self hath been too partial; and when the Commissioners shall see any just Cause, they are then to take Trial and Cognition thereof themselves, and to discharge the said Judicatorie of all farther Proceeding. Giving Power also to the said Commissioners to make Choice of a Clerk, and other Members of Court; and to direct Precepts in Name of the said Archbishop and his Associates within every Province, for Citation of any Parties before them, within the Bounds of the said Provinces, in any of the said Causes abovementioned; which Precepts to be sealed with a special Seal, containing the Armes of the said Bishoprick. Giving also Power to charge Witnesses to compear before them, under the Pain of Fourtie Pounds Scottish Money; and upon the Certificat of the said Commissioners, that any of the said Penalties are incurred by them, the said Lords of our Council are to direct the like Charges for Payment of the same, as is appointed for the Fines, as in the said Commission past our great Seal, containing diverse other Heeds, Clauses, Articles and Conditions, and bearing Date at our Court at Roystoun the 20. Day of January last, at length is contained; whereof necessare it is that Publication be made to all our Lieges, that none pretend Ignorance thereof.

thereof. **OUR WILL IS** herefore, and we charge you straitly, and command, that incontinent these our Letters seen; ye pass to the said Burrowes, within the Provinces abovementioned, and there by open Proclamation, that ye make Publication of the Premises, that none pretend Ignorance. And also that ye, in our Name and Authoritie, command and charge all our Lieges and Subjects to reverence and obey our said Commissioners, in all and every Thing tending to the Execution of this our Commission, and to do nothing to their Hinder or Prejudice, as they and each one of them will answer to Us and our Council, upon their Obedience at their highest Charge and Peril. The which to do, &c. Given under our Signet at Edinburgh, the Fifteen of Februar, and of our Reigne the 47. Year 1610.

Per Actum Secreti Concilij.






---

 PART III.
 

---

O F T H E  
**C H U R C H**  
 I N H E R  
 P E R S E C U T E D S T A T E.



Bishop *Spotswood* in his History of *Scotland* says, That the *PERSECUTION* of *Dioelesian*, was a great means to farther the first Propagation of the *GOSPEL* in *Scotland*; which *Persecution* being but in the *South* Parts of *BRITAIN*, it brought a great many *CHRISTIANS*, as well *Preachers* as *Professors*, into *Scotland*, where they were kindly received by King *Cratlinth*, and the Isle of *Man* given them for their Retreat, where he erected a magnificent Church, and called it, *THE TEMPLE OF OUR SAVIOUR*. This is said to be in the Year, 277.

Like Instances might be found in all the Tracts of Antiquity from thence to the present Time, where *Persecution* has spread and establish'd the *True Religion*; but no where so eminently, as the *Persecutions* of *PRESBYTERIANS* has done in *Scotland*.

It was with Respect to the several Troubles, Divisions, Wars, and Interruptions, which the Establishment of the Church of *Scotland* met with, even in her most flourishing Condition, that the last Part of this Work was call'd, *The growing Estate of the Church*,

I would have been very well pleased to have call'd it, *The compleat, or finish'd State*, and to have represented the Church in the Perfection of her Desires, arriv'd to the Top of her own Views, and in the full Enjoyment of her just Privileges, supported by her own Power, and the Majesty of her Constitution.

But the Divine Wisdom which has always thought fit to exercise his Church with Tribulation and Affliction, as the best Foundation whereon to build her temporal Establishment, had otherwise determin'd; and all that Strength which the Church of *Scotland* had gain'd in the short Intervals of Peace which she had enjoy'd, in the last Period of her Circumstances, was little enough to carry her thro' the fiery Tryal she had now to endure.

No sooner was the Restoration of *K. Charles II.* brought to pass in *England*, but the Enemies of the Church of *Scotland* began to lift up their Heads, and the black Cloud which did but hover over them, as it were for a while, and threaten'd them with Destruction, being big with Storms and furious Thunders, broke upon them all at once.

There

There had some Things pass'd in the *English* Parliament, which had deeply affected the People of *Scotland*, and had given them a clear View of what they were to expect, tho' it was not yet fallen upon them, and this is what I mean by the black Cloud which hover'd over them for a while.

These were ( 1 ) The declaring the *Solemn League and Covenant* to be unlawful, and obliging all People who held any Office, &c. to subscribe to the said *Declaration*, 13 *Car. 2, cap. 1.* (2) The Act of *Uniformity*, and by which the Episcopal Hierarchy in *England* was restored, and the Ministers who would not conform to the Liturgy and Ceremonies of the Church of *England* before *Bartholomew Day*, 1662, were depriv'd of their Livings, 13 *Car. 2, cap. 11.*

These were Preludes to what was to be expected in *Scotland*, and yet albeit, the Acts in *England* were made before those in *Scotland*, yet the Privy Council or Council of State in *Scotland*, took upon them to begin with the *Presbyterians* as soon, or rather sooner, than the Parliament in *England* began there: So that the Church of *Scotland* saw early what they had to expect; and thus we are led, without any other Need of Introduction, into the History of Fact.

When the King was restor'd, the Church of *Scotland* was in its best and fullest Possession of Legal Power. The Professors of the *Presbyterian* Doctrine, had by their Adherence to the Royal Family, laid in as good a Loan of Obligation upon the Generosity of the King, as any Party in their Circumstances could have done: And if but the Interest of that Debt had been paid, or, if Gratitude had been the Fashion of the Times, they had some Reason to expect a little Consideration to be had for them.

It was indeed upon some Expectation of such a Return, that immediately, on the first News of the King's Restoration, the Ministers in Conjunction with some of the Nobility and Gentry, resolv'd to present a Paper to him, which was called, *A Monitory Supplication*. It was a new Term, perhaps, made for the Occasion: And they did the *Presbyterians* much Wrong, who told King *Charles*, that it was a *Minatory Supplication*; for the Contents of it prove the contrary, which are too long for the Brevity of this Tract, but in a Word, is contained as follows,

- I. A very hearty and solemn Congratulation of his Majesty's Restoration to the Throne of his Ancestors, recognizing his Right, and extolling the Goodness of God, in returning him to his People, praying, that it may be a Blessing to his Majesty and the whole Nation, and assuring him of their ready and dutiful Submission to his Authority.
- II. Reminding his Majesty with great Humility of his COVENANT Engagement, *mark that*, to God, and the Nation, and his solemn Promises to put forward the *Work of REFORMATION* in the Kingdom, as the *only* Thing in which his Majesty might expect the Blessing of God upon his Reign and upon his People.

This *Supplication* was never presented, nay, it was not sign'd by many of the Persons who had promoted and recommended it: But while it was a meer Embrio the Council of State sent their Officers, and as if it had been an Act of Rebellion, surpriz'd and seiz'd upon such as they had

had Information were concerned in it, and clapt them in Prison, having no other Pretence against them but this *Supplication*, which they told them, was seditious, and tended to disquiet the Minds of the Leiges, and render his Majesty's Government uneasie to them. Most of those they seiz'd upon were Eminent Ministers.

It was alledged by the Persons that were thus taken up, *That there was no Law against supplicating their Prince, and that where there was no Law there could be no Transgression; that they had not acted unpeaceably or undutifully to his Majesty in any Thing, and desir'd to know upon what Law they were committed to Prison:* The Council let them know, no other Law at that Time but their Arbitrary Pleasure, against which the poor Gentlemen had no Remedy but Submission.

And this was the first Article of Persecution in that Reign (*viz.*) *Imprisoning without a Law*, a Thing they reduc'd into a most general Practice presently after.

The Government themselves acknowledged the Injustice of this afterwards by procuring an Unrighteous Law, to be made to take away the Subjects Liberty of Petitioning the Sovereign, declaring it Unlawful and Seditious, *Vid. 2 Sess. of the 2d Parliament of King Charles 2. Act. 2.* by which Act, even Prisoners were deny'd the Liberty to Petition for their Deliverance; nay, or a Condemned Person for his Pardon, or his Life; a cruelty scarce heard of in any Nation before; which made many good People afterwards endure the most intollerable Cruelties in their Imprisonment, for fear of having them Doubled by the Crime of Petitioning for Mercy: But this was but the beginning of the Afflictions of the Church of *Scotland*.

In the beginning of the Year 1661. the First Parliament of King *Charles II.* Sate down, and that they might lay a Ground Plot of that Bloody Persecution, which they had resolv'd to raise, so they immediately applied themselves to make such Laws, and make void such already made, as they well knew would be intollerable to the *Presbyterians*: They knew, the *Presbyterians* would neither obey the one or bear the other, and consequently would render themselves obnoxious to the Penalties and Punishment of those Laws, and give the People in Power a sufficient Pretence for falling upon them, with all that Violence and Inhumanity, which they had resolv'd to treat them with.

To bring the Account into some Method, it will be needful at once to give a Detail of these Persecuting Laws, as they came to be made, or at least of so many of them, as were made upon these Occasions: And this I shall do in Order to enter into the History of the Suffering of the People in the Consequence of those Laws, the more regularly: And this Method I shall repeat again, as other and subsequent Laws were made for the like purposes.

Some of the several New Laws, made after the Restoration, which were the beginning of the persecution were as follows.

1. Act Imposing the Oath of Supremacy: This was directly contrary to the *Presbyterian* Principle, *Note*, This was the very first Act pass'd after the Restoration, and it was call'd the Oath of Allegiance, only to render the refusing it the more odious, but it contained also the Oaths of Supremacy in express Words, and without the Antient Limitations formerly granted: 1. Act. 1. Par. K. Char. 2.

2. Act

2. Act Obliging all People in Office, to acknowledge the Prerogative of the King, Note, this was in such Terms, as they had then advanc'd; above and against all former Engagements, and which they knew Conscientious People could not comply with.

3. Act Declaring Void, and Dissolving the Obligation of the Solemn League and Covenant. This the Nation having Sworn to, the good People could not be convinc'd, that an Act of Parliament could dispence with the Obligation of their Oath, in the Sight of God; and therefore chose Death, rather than comply with it, *Par. 1. Sess. 1. Act. 11. Car. 11.*

4. Act Declaring the National Covenant, to be an Unlawful Oath, and that the same is not of any Force to bind those that have taken it, *Par. 1. Sess. 2. Act. 2. Cha. 11.*

5. An Act not of Parliament, but of Council, to burn both the said Covenants, by the Hand of the common Hangman.

6. Act to restore Episcopacy in *Scotland*: Striking at the Root of the *Presbyterian* Church, and Overthrowing all the Settlement and Establishment of the said Church at one blow.

First Act of the Second Session of the first Parliament of King *Charles 1. Anno 1662.*

It may be truly said, that some of these Acts not only surpriz'd the *Presbyterians*, but even fill'd the whole Nation with Horror, partly at the Unheard of Attack made upon the Solemnity of the National Covenant, which most People there Esteem'd Sacred, and wondred how their Temporal Power, or indeed any Power upon Earth could take upon them to Discharge the People of the Obligation of an Oath; and partly

at the Dreadful Things, which they evidently foresaw would be the Consequence of such Proceedings.

It is not my business here to enter into the Question, whether the Parliament could dispence with the Obligation of this Oath or no, much less will I offer, till I see the Affirmative better proved, to Condemn the Opinion of those, who think the Nation of *Scotland* guilty by that Act of a most horrid National Perjury.

Having gone this length on the one Side, let us see what Course the poor People took, who were to suffer for the least Step they took in Opposing these furious Proceedings.

The first Thing I find which the Government laid any hold on, was the Ministers Preaching against them: This was the least Thing they could expect, and yet for some Time was the greatest Opposition they met with, and which way to deal with this they hardly knew; for it would seem exceeding Tyrannical, to Attack the Ministers for Words spoken in their Pulpits, which it would be hard to ascertain, and against which there was yet no Law: Besides having put so many hardships already upon them, it seem'd very unlikely, but these losers would have leave to speak, and very hard to deny it.

But they soon got over this: and being resolv'd to use no Ceremony, but to fall upon the Kirk by all the violent Methods they could Devise, they published a Proclamation, *Discharging* as they call it, that is, prohibiting and forbidding *Every one to speak against the Proceedings of the State.*

This open'd a Door to fall upon the Ministers, for many of them being Zealous for the Reformation, and for the Covenant, which they

they believed was an *Oath of God*, and could not be Dissolv'd by Man ; could not therefore in Conscience but declare against the Attempt made in the aforesaid Law, to set up the Power of Man, to dispense with the Authority of God: For maintaining this and opposing the Act of the Kings Supremacy, a Thing which they believ'd was no less than a Rebellion against the Regal Authority of Christ Jesus, the only Head and Government of his Church ; Many of the Ministers were Imprison'd, and some without Hearing, or leave given them to make their Defence were *Indicta Causa*, Sentenc'd to Banishment.

The Number of these was Seven at one Time, they were not indeed sent or Transported to any particular Place into Slavery, as was afterwards practis'd. But they were obliged by Sentence, to quit the Country in a certain Time, upon pain of Death, and never to return upon the like Penalty ; and accordingly they took Shipping for *Holland*, to the great Grief of their Flocks, who mourned for the loss of them, being left destitute as Sheep without a Shepherd ; but one was singled out from the rest to bear his Testimony against them in another manner ; this was Mr. *James Guthrie* the *Proto-Martyr* of this Persecution, who was Condemn'd to Death, and accordingly was Hang'd at *Edinburgh* as a Traitor ; whose Behaviour during his Imprisonment and Tryal, before those Tyrannical Judges, and afterwards at the place of Execution, might have convinc'd them, that the Blood of these Men, would be the Seed of the Church of *Scotland*, and that Torments and Death, would not weaken the Cause of Religion in *Scotland*, or advance them one step towards the Conquest they aim'd at.

Having

Having now Tasted Blood, their Fury seem'd to encrease, and now in Consequence of the Act for restoring Prelacy mention'd before, they advanc'd such Principles as they knew were directly contrary to the *Presbyterian* Doctrin, and such as they knew no Bonds, no Affliction, no nor Death it self, would ever bring them to comply with.

These were,

1. A Declaration in the Preamble to the Act for Establishing Episcopacy, signifying, that *the Disposal of the Government of the Church, is in the King, as an Inherent Right of the Crown.*

2. Depriving the Church of the Freedom of Calling and Chusing their own Pastors : This was included in an Act for restoring Patronages.

3. Dispossessing the Ministers, who would not Conform to Episcopacy, and this without Legal Prosecution, by a meer Act of Council, pass'd in *October, 1662.*

I think it is very necessary to set down these first Measures of the Persecutors of the Church, in Order to remove a certain Slander rais'd by the Enemies of these poor Suffering Christians, and which too many good People are Prepossess'd in this Nation, (*viz.*) that the *Scots Presbyterians* suffer'd upon Trifling Pun-tilio's, not Essential to Religion, or upon Points which the Christian Church have in all Ages submitted to, even under the Government of Heathen Emperors and the like ; such as acknowledging the King, Swearing Allegiance to him, living peaceably, paying Taxes, Tythes, &c. Whereas on the contrary it is Evident, that the Sufferings of the Church of *Scotland*, and the Persecution which her Faithful Confes-

sors have Labour'd under, have been occasion'd for maintaining the Essential Points, both of Doctrine and Government, which she has held ever since the Reformation, and without which no true Church can be Established, (*viz.*) Such as the refusing all Usurpations upon the Sovereignty of Christ, as King and Head of his Church, in Opposition to Erastianism, and Episcopal Supremacy. (2.) The Insupportable Yoke of what they call'd Unscriptural Prelacy, which neither they or their Fathers were able to bear. (3.) The right of calling their own Ministers in Opposition to the Pretences of Lay Patronages, &c. and the like, and (4) for Opposing the Tyranny and Injustice, of the Proceedings of those in Power, who Condemn'd Men unheard, Sentenc'd Men at Pleasure, without Examining into the Facts, or hearing Legal Witnesses; and punish'd Men to Death, for such Crimes as were not punishable with Death, by the Laws of the Land.

These and such as these, were the Points upon which the People of *Scotland* suffer'd the most Bloody Persecution, that has been heard of in this Age, or for the last 100 Years pass'd in the World. The Persecution of the *Protestants* in *France*, being in proportion to this Country, and the Number of People, and the Blood spilt, no way to compare to it.

But to come now to the Suffering Party: The Government having thus by their Unrighteous Laws, made way for all the Oppressions which they design'd, having Establish'd Prelacy, and Dispossest'd the *Presbyterian* Ministers of their Kirks, filling their Places with a Race of Men, who for Ignorance and Wickedness, were scarce to be equall'd in the World; I mean as Ministers

sters. The poor People were immediately scatter'd and dispers'd in a Dreadful manner: The new Set of Men, were so weak in Capacity, and so abominable in their known Practice and Conversation, (speaking without the least prejudice of the most of them), that the People abhorr'd to hear them, or to come into the Churches where they were.

This occasion'd them to follow their own Ministers, tho' Dispossess'd, into private Places and Corners, and to hear the Word Preached, and have their Ordinances Administred in private Houses and Meetings, as was soon after the practise in *England*, by the Dissenters here.

The Ministers on the other Hand, thinking it their Duty not to forsake their People, kept themselves Concealed and Retired, and went from House to House, Preaching and Praying, Visiting, Baptizing, and in a Word performing all the Duties of their Office, as opportunity would allow.

This the Episcopal Party could not bear; and therefore in the first place, fell to their former custom of making Laws against it in Parliament, and Enforcing those Laws by Proclamations, and Acts of Council, which they soon brought to be of equal Force with Acts of Parliament, tho' by Law it was quite otherwise, *Vid. 3d. Act 1. Sess. 1. Par. Car. 11. Entituled ACT Asserting his Majesty's Royal Prerogative in making Laws.*

These Laws against Non-Conformity, are so Extraordinary, and Savour'd so much of a true Spirit of Persecution, were in themselves so Unjust, and in some things so Unnatural, that none can wonder if the Execution of them sometimes, drove the poor People to Desperation,  
and

and made, as in far less moving Cases has been said, *Nature Rebel against Principle*, and drove the People, made thus Distracted by their oppressions to Tumult and Rebellion.

And because they have in these Things, also been rashly censur'd by some among us, as a People suffering as Evil doers. It must be useful in their Vindication, to expose a little the Inhumanity and Barbarity of their Persecutors; and this can be done in nothing better than in giving a Brief Account of the Laws now made; which they expected, and rigorously exacted Obedience to; and which it was impossible for that Poor People to obey, without *making Shipwreck of Faith and a good Conscience*, abandoning their Profession, Inverting the Rule of the Apostle, and obeying Man rather than God.

*These Acts are as follow.*

1. ACT discharging, *i. e.* forbidding all Writing, Remonstrating, Printing, Praying or Preaching in such manner as should shew any dislike, (1) Of the King's Supremacy in causes Ecclesiastick, (2) Of the Kings absolute Prerogative, in appointing such Government of the Church as he thought fit, and (3) Of the Government of the Church by Bishops: *Act. 2. Sess. 2. Parl. 1. Carol. 2.*

2. ACT Prohibiting any Ministers to Preach in Churches Publickly; or Privately in Families, without Licence first had from the Episcopal Ministers call'd Curates, and forbidding all House Meetings for Religious Exercise. *Act. 4. Sess. 2. Parl. 1. Car. 2.*

Both these Acts were so directly contrary to the Principles of the *Presbyterians*, and it was so well

well known, that they could not in Conscience comply with them, that they were very justly call'd the persecuting Laws, together with the following Act, which gave the Finishing Stroke to the rest, *viz.*

‘ 3. ACT Declaring, that all Non Conforming Ministers that shall presume to Exercise their Ministry in any manner whatsoever, shall be Punished as Seditious Persons; requiring all Persons in Obedience to his Majesty’s Government Ecclesiastick, to give their Countenance to the Establish’d Worship, by attending, &c. Ordaining Penalties to all that should withdraw from the Publick Worship, as follows *viz.*

‘ Every *Nobleman, Gentleman, or Heretor*, one Fourth part of his Yearly Revenue.

‘ Every *Yeoman*, one fourth part of his Moveable Goods.

‘ Every *Burgess* the loss of his Freedom, or Burg-Ship, and a fourth part of his Moveable Goods.

Leaving it also to the Council, to Inflict farther Punishment, and to provide for the most effectual Execution, which they did by Proclamations, of the most Arbitrary, Illegal, and Tyrannical Nature imaginable, *viz.*

‘ *Proclamation* requiring all to keep to their Parish Churches, under Penalty of 20 s. every Omission; they knowing at the same time, the poor People could not in Conscience spend the Lords Day in such a manner.

‘ *Proclamation* Prohibiting all Preaching, Praying, or hearing in Families, if above Three, more then the Domesticks of the Family were present; punishing those who had more, as Unlawful Conventicles.

*Proclamation*

‘ *Proclamation* appointing all such Meetings  
 ‘ not Authoris’d, as aforesaid, to be punished  
 ‘ either by Pecuniary or Corporal Punishments,  
 ‘ at the pleasure of the Council.

‘ *Proclamation* Commanding Landlords, Ma-  
 ‘ sters of Families and Magistrates, to cause  
 ‘ their Tenants, Children, Servants, Depen-  
 ‘ dents, Taxmen, or Farmers of Duties and  
 ‘ Revenue, and all under their Charge, to Sub-  
 ‘ mit and Conform to the Episcopal Government  
 ‘ and Worship, and making the said Landlords,  
 ‘ &c. answerable for the Default of their Ser-  
 ‘ vants, &c. the Punishment here also being left  
 ‘ to the pleasure of the Council.

*Note*, They reserv’d here the Cruelty of Pu-  
 nishment to themselves; to be inflict’d, not as the  
 Laws or the Nature of the Offence should Direct,  
 but as the Person who they should have before  
 them, stood more or less in or out of their Fa-  
 vour.

Now to finish all, and Enforce these Laws and  
 Proclamations, the King Erected a High Com-  
 mission Court, consisting of a Medley of Clergy,  
 Nobility, Magistrates and Soldiers. This Body  
 were Empower’d to hear and determine Causes,  
 without Appeal, to Execute Civil and Ecclesia-  
 stick Authority; they could Suspend and Deprive  
 Clergy Men; Excommunicate like Bishops; Com-  
 mit to Prison like Justices of the Peace; Sentence  
 like Judges; and put to Torture and Death like  
*Hangmen*: In a Word, as a known Scots Author  
 calls them, *they were a Hotch-potch-Mongrel-Monster*  
*of a Judicatory, Authoriz’d by the Prerogative, against*  
*the Laws of GOD and MAN, Illegal in its Consti-*  
*tution, and Arbitrary in its Procedure, whereby Per-*  
*sons brought before them, were made to Answer*  
*SUPER INQUIRENDIS, without either Accusa-*

*tion or Accuser, contrary to an Express standing Law,*  
A<sup>c</sup>t. 13. Parl. 10. Jac. vi.

It is scarce to be related, what Innumerable Oppressions fell upon the People, but especially upon the poor Ministers, in the Prosecution of these Laws; for the Ministers finding themselves bound in Conscience, not to abandon their Flocks, for any Persecution or Bodily Sufferings whatsoever, exposed themselves freely to the worst that their Enemies could do, and failed not at the greatest and utmost Hazard, to discharge their Duty; and the People flocking after them, they Preached to them with what Privacy and Caution they were able, but at the Extremest Hazard. Nor was it possible, but that many would be daily falling into the Hands of their Persecutors; insomuch, that the Prisons were every where full of Faithful Ministers; whereof abundance dyed, thro' the length of their Confinement, and severity of their Usage; some thro' Cold and Evil Lodging, having Contracted Diseases and Infirmities, and others for want of Conveniences, and even Necessaries; whose Blood is no doubt to be Esteem'd, as shed in the Cause of Religion, as much as if they had been brought out to Execution, as several of their Brethren afterwards were.

By this Scandalous Judicatory, call'd the High Commission Court, many Innocent Men, as well Ministers as others, were prosecuted even after a manner, near a Kin to the *Spanish* Inquisition; and as an Author well observes, having no other Precedent in the *Christian* World, but the said *Spanish* Inquisition, being neither suffred to know their Crimes or their Accuser; never suffred to come to a Hearing, or to make any Legal Defence. But when they demanded their Accusation, or  
Judicature

indictment, and leave to Answer to the same; they were told they could not be admitted to any Defence, unless they would first take the Oath by which they were to acknowledge and submit to the Jurisdiction of their Judges; and then without hearing their Offence, or having leave to Answer, they were sentenc'd to Scourging, Stigmatizing, Banishment, Transportation, to Slavery in *Barbadoes*, perpetual Imprisonment and the like; as the Commissioners thought fit, and this to such a Degree, that the People fled before them, and the whole Country-sides, *as they are called there*, became depopulate, for Non-Conformity. As this High Commission Court is justly represented to be the most Arbitrary, Illegal, Cruel, and Unjust Judicatory, that ever was set up in a *Protestant* Nation, and imitated by none, but the Bloody Inquisition aforesaid, so it cannot be Unacceptable in our relating the Sufferings of the Good People of *Scotland*; to give some few Instances, *Out of an Innumerable Crowd of oppress'd Suffering Christians*, of the vexations, Barbarities, Inhuman and Illegal Practises of this Court, in pursuance of the Commission given them, to put the aforesaid Acts in Execution.

The Author of a Book Entituled, *The wrestlings of the Church of Scotland*, has toucht at the Irregularities and Inhumanities of their Proceedings; but Alas! What are they to the Innumerable Examples, which living Testimony are yet able to give, and which the Collector of these particulars, has receiv'd from the Mouths, of many of the Sufferers themselves.

I have already mention'd, how Persons were brought before these new Judges without any Notice, without Information, Accusation, Witness, or Accuser: But being fetch'd in, were instantly

*Charg'd by way of Inquiry*, and therefore was it that this Court was not improperly call'd a Court of Inquisition. The Arch-Prelate, or Bishop of St. *Andrews* the same who was afterwards kill'd, presiding therein.

Upon the bringing any Person before them, he was requir'd immediately to Answer such Questions as were propounded to him, being allow'd neither Council to advise with, or time to consider; if he answer'd satisfactorily to one Question, they would still find others to Ensnare him; if he refused to Answer, and pleaded the Great Law of Nature, *Nemo tenetur Seipsum accusare*; they set him by Instantly as Convict, and proceeded to Sentence; if he answer'd boldly and perhaps smartly, they immediately Sentence him for Contumacy and Disrespect: A Minister was Sentenc'd to Banishment, for calling the Archbishop, Sir, And not my Lord. One Mr. *Porterfield*, a Gentleman of a Loyal Family, was brought before them, and ask'd why he did not come to his Parish Church, to hear the Curate; to which he gave them a very pertinent Answer, *viz.* Because the Curate had abused him, and slandred him, in such a manner, as was both Scandalous to him as a Minister, and just Ground of Resentment to any thing of a Gentleman. The Court upon his exposing and proving the Fact, were asham'd of the Curate, but being resolv'd to Revenge it on the Gentleman, they put several other Questions to him, all which he answer'd, so as no Advantage could be gain'd of him, at which the Archbishop being Enrag'd, ask'd him if he would take the Oath of Supremacy, which when he modestly declined, they immediately Sentenc'd him to Banishment and Confinement, to the

Town of *Elgin* far North, and Fin'd him almost to the full value of his whole Estate; and this was the constant Method when any Person Conven'd before them, Could no other way be laid hold of; nor in their Sentence did they confine themselves to suit the Punishment to the Offence, or consult the Power of their Commission; but frequently Sentenc'd People to the severest Punishment, for the smallest Offences; and frequently pass'd such Sentences, as they had no Power by their Commission to pass: one Famous Example, among a great Multitude is left upon Record, as follows.

Mr. *John Levingston*, a most Eminent and Reverend Minister, particularly famous in the Church of *Scotland*, had been Banish'd the Kingdom for no other Reason, but his refusing the Oath of Supremacy; there was Collated to that Benefice, a Curate or Episcopal Minister, one Mr. *Scot*, who it seems stood Excommunicated before, and continued under that Sentence; besides that, the People had other Objections against his Morals and Good Name, insomuch, that they publickly opposed him, at his coming to Preach; and it seems, there were some warm Expressions used by some of the People against him, which he complain'd of to the High Commission Court. Four poor Men of the Parish, where hereupon Conven'd before them, and being not charg'd with any thing by the said *Scot*, but being Interrogated, they acknowledg'd they were present, when the Parishioners did declare their Dissatisfaction at Mr. *Scots* coming to their Kirk, but said, that they did not speak what was said.

This the Commissioners, contrary indeed to several of their own Body, Vote to be a Confes-

sion of Guilt, and immediately gave this Barbarous Sentence.

That the Four Men should be Scourged thro' the Town, Stigmatiz'd on the Forehead with the Letter *T.* at the Cross of *Edinburgh*, and be Transported to the Island of *Barbadoes*; all which was rigorously Executed: Nor was this enough to satisfy the Rage of the *Persecutors*, even in so trifling an Offence. But a few Days after, two Brothers, and a young Maiden their Sister, Inhabitants of the same Parish, were sentenc'd on the same Account, the two Men to be Banish'd to *Barbadoes*, and the young Woman to be whipp'd thro' the Town of *Jedburgh*; all which Sentences were Executed accordingly.

Two more Examples we have of their Justice, which are very eminent; the One, of Mr. *Smith*, a Learned *Nonconforming* Minister, who was brought before them for *Praying* and *Preaching* to a few of his Friends, met privately in a Friend's House; they had, it seems, no Evidence of the Fact, much less any Thing to object against what he had spoken.

When he came before the Commissioners, he did not speak disrespectfully at all, but he declin'd giving the Arch-Bishop the Title of *Lord*: At which, one of the Bench ask'd him very scornfully, if he knew who it was he was speaking to, and what Character he bore; to which he answer'd, he did know him to be Mr. *James Sharp*, once a Minister, as he himself then was, and that he knew no higher Character any Christian Man could bear, than to be a Minister, and Ambassador of *Jesus Christ*: This he spoke, directing his Words to that Commissioner who had reprov'd him, and gave him the Titles he was known by. This

This so enrag'd the Arch-Bishop, that he knew not how with Violence enough to wreak his Malice on the poor Man. But to shew his Willingness to destroy him, he sentenc'd him, besides his Sentence for *Conventicling*, as they call'd it, to be led by the Hangman to the Place in the *Tol-Booth* call'd the *Thieves Hole*, and there laid in heavy Irons, there being a raving Creature who was an Idiot, and furious, confin'd in the same Place, and left loose with him. Here the godly Minister lay some Days in Danger of being destroy'd by the poor demented Wretch, who every Moment threaten'd to kill him. But God, that stopped the Mouths of *Daniel's Lyons*, restrain'd him so that he hurt him not: And these merciful Judges hearing, that by the Grate of this Hole which look'd to the Street, he was reliev'd and comforted by the Charity and Compassion of many good People of the City, many were threaten'd for relieving him; and at length the poor Man was carry'd away to a Place call'd the *Iron House* in the same Prison; where none could come at him. Here he continued close Prisoner, and in Irons, for many Days. Besides this, they sentenc'd him for his private Preaching to *perpetual Banishment* to the Island of *Shetland*, the coldest, and most inhospitable of all the *Caledonian* Islands; where his only Relief, as to this World, was the Society of other blessed Sufferers banish'd thither for the same *Good Cause*.

The next Instance of their Cruelty was one Mr. *Black*, a Lay-Man, charg'd by the Commissioners, with having been at a Meeting of a few Christians in a private Way, for Prayer; whether any Minister was with them, or not, was not alledg'd, neither had they any Thing

else to charge upon him of any Kind whatever. They could not prove his being at the Meeting; but would have him confess, which he declin'd: Then they demanded him to give them an Account upon his Oath, who was at the said Meeting. This he declar'd was against his Conscience; and he would not be an Accuser of *Innocent Men*: For denying this, they sentenc'd him to be *scourged thro' the Town*; which he very patiently submitted to, and chearfully suffer'd.

It would be endless to enumerate the Names of the Sufferers in this Case, and it has not been possible for the Author of these Collections to come at the certain Number of those Ministers, or Others, who dy'd in Prisons and Banishment, upon Account of these *Persecuting Laws*, there being no Record preserv'd of their Prosecution in any Court of Justice; nor could any Roll of their Names be preserv'd in those *Times of Confusion* any where, but under the *Altar*, and about the *Throne of the Lamb*, where their Heads are crown'd, and their *White Robes* seen, and where an exact Account of their Number will at last be found.

But, according to the Reports of Creditable and Impartial People, who, upon our earnest Enquiry, have from their Memories, as well as they could, recollected these Things, and putting their several Relations together, comparing them with what has been made publick. We shall at the End of this Part give the Calculations which such have made of the Numbers of those suffering Christians, who falling into, or flying from the Hands of their Cruel Persecutors, perished in Prisons, and went into Banishment, without any legal Proceis; most of whom perished

rished by the Distresses and Extremities they were reduc'd to by those Means. And a surprizing Number it will be to those who have not enquir'd into these Things, or discoursed with the People of *Scotland* about them; and all this before the Year 1666. A Time made remarkable upon the following Occasion, and to which Occasion these Things have been the unhappy Introduction.

If the poor People were by those insupportable Violences made desperate, and driven to all the Extremities of a wild Despair, who can justly reflect upon them, when they read in the Word of God, *That Oppression makes a wise Man mad?* and therefore, were there no other Original of the Insurrection, known by the Name of *The Rising of Pentland*, it was nothing but what the intolerable Oppressions of those Times might have justify'd to all the World; Nature having dictated to all People a Right of Self-Defence, when illegally and arbitrarily attack'd in a manner not justifiable either by the Laws of Nature, the Laws of God, or the Laws of the Country.

But besides all this it is evident, that this Insurrection was no premeditated Design, but began in the Violence of Military Execution committed by four Soldiers commanded by Sir *James Turner*, who falling into some Houses in *Galloway* without Commission, or without Order from their own Officers, as Sir *James* afterwards alledged, were opposed, and driven out of their Doors by four or five honest Men of the Inhabitants, in the just Defence of their Wives, Children and Goods unjustly insulted and offer'd to be plundered by the said Soldiers. The more particular Relation of this Part is recorded as follows.

Sir *James Turner* was an Officer of Dragoons, who was sent with his Troops by Order of the Council, to quarter at *Discretion* upon the poor *Western People of Scotland*, because there they found the chief Body of the constant Sufferers for, and Adherers to the *True Religion* were to be found.

This Sir *James* was a Tool to their Minds, a Stranger in the Country, being an *English Man*, bred to Plunder and Rapine in the Service of the *French*, perfectly void of the Fear of God, or Man, and unacquainted either with Religion, or Humanity. He had made three Invasions into this Part of the Country, where his Cruelty and Exactions had been such as had almost stript the Country, not of its Substance only, but even of its Inhabitants, who were obliged to quit their Habitations to avoid the Fury and Brutality of the Soldiers.

It is impossible to give the Detail of the Cruelties and inhuman Usage the poor People suffered from this Butcher, for such he was rather than a Soldier; neither is it the present Purpose but to introduce what follow'd at this Time.

The poor People had patiently suffered the merciless Treatment this Man shew'd them above seven Months, and thereby testify'd more *Passive Submission*, than most of those who have since upbraided them with *Resistance* can pretend to; when Sir *James Turner* put an End to their Patience by the following Occasion.

On the 13th Day of *November*, 1666, he sent four Soldiers from *Dumfries*, where he quarter'd, to a Town call'd *Dalray*, in the Shire of *Galloway*, with Orders to seize upon a poor Man's Goods, who, he pretended, to have *broken the Laws*

by

by not coming to his Parish-Church ; and if he had no Goods, to take the Man, and bring him Prisoner to *Dumfries* : The Soldiers , as Sir *James* alledg'd after, beyond their Instructions, not only seized his Goods, but his Person too ; and binding the poor Old Man Hand and Foot, like a Beast, brought him out, and laid him on the Ground 'till they rifled his House.

The Neighbours moved with Compassion at the Indignity of the Usage, and at seeing a poor Ancient Man lye on the Ground, bound like a Beast, to be carry'd away to the Slaughter ; and with just Indignation at the Insolence of the four Soldiers, came to the Soldiers, and calmly entreated them to unbind him, and to let him go with them like a Prisoner, and like a Man, not like a Beast.

The insolent Soldiers pretend to be affronted at this Motion, and fall immediately upon the People with their Swords, wounding two or three. This so enraged the rest, that they attack'd the Soldiers immediately, wounded one, and made the rest throw down their Arms, and beg *Quarter*.

This Breach, thus purely accidental, and by an unforeseen Provocation being begun, the Soldiers vowing Revenge, and preparing to fall upon the whole neighbouring Part of the Country, drove the innocent People to the Necessity of gathering together, and standing upon their own Defence : So that when Ten or Twelve Soldiers return'd with their bloody Resolution of Plunder, and Desolation, they were likewise disarm'd, and made Prisoners, and when after this Three Troops were sent, they found the People too strong to be attack'd, upon which, they cryed presently, *A REBELLION*;  
and

and sent for more Forces, which of course obliged Others to run in to the Aid of their Brethren, all which was purely casual, 'till finding themselves reduc'd by this last gathering together to a Circumstance which *stay* or *go*, would be fatal to them if they fell into the Hands of the Government, they saw no Remedy but to stand to it, and inviting all the Injur'd and Oppress'd People to joyn with them, they declar'd *for Liberty and the Kirk of Scotland*; upon this, marching to *Dumfries*, they there seiz'd their great Persecutor Sir *James Turner* in his Quarters: Afterwards they march'd to *Kirkubright*, to *Air*, and from thence to *Lanerck*, where they solemnly renew'd the COVENANT, and resolv'd to seal it with their Blood, as we shall immediately find they were oblig'd to do.

The brief History of this Rebellion is such, as it can be no considerable Interruption to our Story, and is much to the Purpose, to relate it. The Occasion being as above; the People having by Necessity been driven to repel unjust Violence by Force, and seeing no Room for Mercy, but a certain Destruction at Hand from the Troops which were drawing about them, they resolv'd to stand to it; they were not encreas'd to above Four Hundred Men, but those very well arm'd when they march'd to the Town of *Dumfries*, where, as I have said, they seiz'd upon Sir *James Turner*, who was the Commanding Officer of the persecuting Troops which had oppress'd them; him they carry'd away Prisoner, tho' as he confess'd they us'd him very civilly. From thence gathering and encreasing in Number, they march'd to *Kirkubright* and *Air*, principal Towns and Sea-ports on that Side the Country, where they seiz'd upon all the Arms  
and

and Ammunition they could find, but in no other Thing offer'd any Injury to any Man. From hence they advanc'd, being (as was reported) encreas'd to the Number of above Two Thousand, tho' *that* was a great Mistake, to the Town of *Lanerck*, where on the 26th Day of *November*, they had a great Meeting, and in a solemn Manner fasted and humbled themselves in Behalf of the Nation of *Scotland* for the great Sin of National Perjury in making void the COVENANT; and there in the most solemn Manner possible they renew'd the said COVENANT with their Hands and Eyes lifted up to Heaven. From hence they advanc'd still towards *Edinburgh*, where they arriv'd the 27th of *November*, 1666, but being not strong enough to attack the City, they posted themselves at the Foot of *Pentland Hills* on the *South-West* of the City, waiting the Conjunction of other Friends who they expected from the Border and from the City of *Edinburgh*.

Here they were attack'd and surpris'd the next Day by General *Dalziel*, even during a proclaimed Cessation, with a Body of the King's Forces, and after a very bold and resolute Defence, they were at length overpower'd and broken: Many escaped, having dispers'd themselves the Two Days immediately before the Fight, about Fifty were kill'd upon the Place, Eighty were taken Prisoners, and the rest sav'd themselves by Flight.

For this Action, besides those slain, Ten were executed at *Edinburgh*, *December* the 7th, and the 11th, *Thomas Paterson* by Name, who was condemn'd with them dy'd in the *Tolbooth* before Execution being grievously wounded. Five more were likewise condemn'd the 10th, and four of them executed the 14th. Four more were

were executed at *Glasgow* the 19th of *December*, six more at *Edinburgh* the 22th, eight more at *Air*, two at *Dumfries*, and two at *Irvine*; Five and Fifty who had made their Escape, were *Fore-Faulted*, as they call it, or Outlaw'd, and Proclamation with Reward made for apprehending them, declaring it Treason to harbour, relieve, receive, or so much as to see and speak to them. Among these were several Ministers, of whom more hereafter.

It will hardly be allow'd us in *England* to call this *Persecution*, or, that the Sufferers here put to Death should be reckoned among the Martyrs of *Scotland*, because (say they) these were Men taken in Arms against the King, and executed as Traytors. But we leave all those who afterwards thought it lawful to joyn in the *Revolution*, and in taking up Arms against the Oppressions and Arbitrary Government of King *JAMES*, to judge, whether these good Men had not the same individual Reasons and more for this *Pentland Expedition*; and it is Answer enough to all that shall read these Sheets, to say, that these Men dyed for that lawful resisting of Arbitrary Power, which has been justified as legal, and acknowledg'd to be justifiable by the Practise and Declaration of the respective Parliaments of both Kingdoms: But we leave all those Disputes to the Readers to determine, as Truth and Justice shall guide them, and return to the History of Fact.

Besides the Death of these poor Men, we find upon Record above Eight Hundred Men proscrib'd, and driven from their Families by the Violence of the Proceedings of this *High-Commission-Court*, who, besides those afterwards fallen upon, of whom more remains to be said, these

these suffered in their Flight all the Miseries that Tongue can express, even beyond what we read of in the 11th of the *Hebrews*. They wander'd about in *Sheeps Skins, and Goat Skins, in Dens, and Caves of the Earth, being destitute, afflicted, tormented*. They suffer'd Extremities that Tongue cannot describe, and which Heart can hardly conceive of, from the dismal Circumstances of Hunger, Nakedness, and the Severity of the Climate; where it is known how unsufferable the Cold is; lying in damp Caves, and in hollow Clefs of the naked Rocks, without Shelter, Covering, Fire, or Food: None durst harbour, entertain, relieve, or speak to them, upon Pain of Death: Many, for venturing to receive them, were forced to fly to them, and several put to Death for no other Offence; Fathers were persecuted for supplying their Children, and Children, for nourishing their Parents; Husbands, for harbouring their Wives, and Wives, for cherishing their own Husbands; the Tyes and Obligations of the Laws of Nature were no Defence, but it was made *Death* to perform natural Duties, and many suffer'd Death for Acts of Piety and Charity, in Cases where humane Nature could not bear the Thoughts of suffering it. To such an Extreme was the Rage of these Persecutors carried on.

Besides these Eight Hundred Families, who I call *proscrib'd*, and were oblig'd to fly from their Habitations to avoid the Cruelty and Rapine of their *Persecutors*; there were Fifty five Eminent Persons who were *Pannell'd*, or as we call it in *England*, Arraign'd, as being actually in Arms in the *Penland Expedition*; and being prosecuted by the Advocate, were sentenc'd respectively to be

*Executed to Death when Apprehended: And in the mean*

mean Time their Estates to be forfeited, and seiz'd upon to the KING's Use. Among these were the following *Ministers*; of whom more is to be said,

Mr. John Welch,  
 Mr. James Smith,  
 Mr. John Cunningham,  
 Mr. Gabriel Semple,  
 Mr. John Guthrie,  
 Mr. Alexander Peddin,  
 Mr. William Veach,  
 Mr. John Crookshanks,  
 Mr. Gabriel Maxwell,  
 Mr. John Cairstaires.

But GOD, in his infinite Goodness, deliver'd *these all* out of their Hands. Also it is very observable, that some of the above-nam'd Fifty two *Out-law'd Persons* being Gentlemen of good Estates, their said Estates were seiz'd on, and given by the King to the most violent of their *Persecutors*, as an Encouragement to Others to imitate the Inhumanity and Butchery by which Things had been thus brought to Extremity.

Nay, some of them thought, that the *Council* had it in their real Design, to drive the poor People to the *Necessity of Taking Arms*, in Hope of getting their Blood and Estates more in their Power.

Never more let us talk of *Popish Cruelties*, or give the *Romanists* the Title of BLOODY; let not the Rigour of the *Inquisition* any farther engage our Pens, 'till the Barbarities of this *Protestant Inquisition*, the merciless, unrelenting Fury of these *Protestant Persecutors* has been expiated, by their being abhorr'd by all Mankind.

But

But to leave the Generals, and descend a little to Particulars as they occur historically to our View.

It is proper to mention here, because we shall have Occasion to speak of their Names again, that, amongst the rest of the Ministers who fled on this unhappy Affair, Mr. *John Welch*, and Mr. *Gabriel Sample* were two, whose Zeal and Sincerity in the Cause of Religion occasion'd their being more eminent than their Brethren. These fled to the Borders, where they found Shelter, and Friends to harbour them in an unexpected Manner; and where they were made wonderful Instruments in God's Hand, to plant the Gospel and the Fear of God in the Hearts of the most bloody and barbarous of Men, who were before Robbers and Murtherers, who, by the Preaching of these banished Ministers became Eminent Converts, and both them, and their Posterity were made Eminent in the Knowledge of God, and in their Love to his Ways, in so much, that to the Praise of soveraign Grace, those rude and unguided Borderers are now the most zealous Professors of the True Religion in *Britain*; and those Places which were Dens of Robbers, and Receptacles of Thieves and Murtherers, are now become some of the best planted, and most flourishing Congregations of serious Christians, perhaps, in the World.

It must not be forgotten here to mention the Methods taken after this to prosecute, and follow those that fled; which (it was said) was owing to the mercilefs Disposition of the Arch-Bishop of *St. Andrew's* (*viz.*) publishing a Proclamation, prohibiting the concealing, or corresponding with any of those who had escaped; and this

this on *Pain of High-Treason*. In this *Proclamation* the Fifty seven *Gentlemen* and *Ministers* mention'd before were particularly nam'd.

Thus the *Persecution* of God's Servants in one Country has often been the Means of calling of Others ; and perhaps is yet to be the Means of spreading and planting the EVERLASTING GOSPEL in all Corners of the World, of which this Border of *Scotland*, and the Colony of *New-England* has been such Noble Examples, as we need look no farther into History to multiply Particulars.

But before I quit this Part, one Thing cannot be omitted, with Relation to the good Men who dyed thus on Account of this Rebellion. The *Persecutors*, for such this very Thing will prove them to be: As if they were fond of having it said, That these Men dyed for Religion, and not for being in Arms ; and as if they scorn'd the Excuse which the Affair of *Pentland* put into their Mouths for putting them to Death, causes several of them to be offer'd their Lives, if they would take, and subscribe the *DECLARATION* to renounce the COVENANT. Whether they did this fraudulently or sincerely, Providence never gave them an Opportunity to discover. Nor, whether if the Weakness of any had brought them to yield, they would have perform'd their Promise to them, or no. For, not a Man they ever offer'd it to (I mean of those condemn'd to dye for the Rebellion of *Pentland*) but receiv'd it with Indignation, and chose to dye, rather than to yield to that *Unconscionable Proposal*. So that in that Point they gain'd an *Undeniable Testimony*, that they suffer'd for Religion, *Not accepting Deliverance*: For none of them

them esteem'd *Renouncing the COVENANT* to be any Thing more, or less, than *Renouncing GOD and his CHURCH*, to whom, and for which, that *COVENANT* was first enter'd, and engaged in

The Cruelty of these Executions was attended with one Piece of Inhumanity, which we believe no *PROTESTANT* ever practis'd before; nor was it practis'd in all the *Popish Persecutions* in *England* in *Queen Mary's Days*: A Barbarity beyond the Cruelty of Death (*viz.*) causing the Drums to beat round the Scaffold all the while the Executions lasted, that the People might not hear what the Sufferers had to say to them, and to discompose and disorder them as much as possible in their last Moments.

It is very remarkable, that the like of this was never read of in any modern History, except in the History of that *Bloody Tyrant and Persecutor* the Duke d' *Alva*, Governour of the *Netherlands* for the King of *Spain*.

From this Time we may date the *Persecution* to be in its *Heighth of Fury*: For the Rage of the *Persecutors* extended every Way, provok'd by the Constancy of the Sufferers; till it came to such a *Heighth*, as was never yet heard of in any *Protestant Country* in the World.

The *Poor People* were driven from their Habitations and from their Families: This was indeed in their Power, and they did it with the utmost Cruelty; but they could never drive them from their *Principles*. Nor while *Ministers* were to be found, who durst preach to them, was it ever possible to prevent the *People* assembling to hear them, were the *Pe-*

nalty Loss of Goods, Liberty, Imprisonment; nay, even Death itself. And which was still wonderful, the more their *Persecutors* multiplied *Laws* and *Penalties* against them, and the more they were punished by those *Laws* for those *Assemblies*, the more numerous they grew, and *Multitudes* were added to the Church every Day by the *Sufferings* which they met with.

But the subtil Enemy finding this, fell upon a Stratagem which did more Harm to *RELIGION* in *Scotland*, as it made a Breach and Division among the Sufferers, than all the *Cruelty* of the *Persecutors* could ever do; and this was what they called *The INDULGENCE*. The History whereof is necessary to the Justification of the suffering People, as well against the Reproaches of their Friends, who were not rightly inform'd of their Circumstances, as against the Slanders of their Enemies.

The short Account of the Affair is thus.

‘ **K**ING CHARLES II. was a Prince,  
 ‘ not naturally enclin’d to *Cruelty*, not  
 ‘ a *Man of Blood* by his Disposition; and had, it  
 ‘ seems, some about him, who had taken the  
 ‘ Freedom to let him know more of the In-  
 ‘ humanity and Barbarity of the *Arch-Bishop*  
 ‘ and his Accomplices, than these were desirous  
 ‘ he should have heard of: And particularly,  
 ‘ what was alledg’d by the Friends of the  
 ‘ Kirk against that *Prelate’s Conduct*, when  
 ‘ the KING had once before, upon the like  
 ‘ Representation, sent an *Express Order* to the  
 ‘ Council, That no more should be put to Death  
 ‘ (viz.)

(viz.) That the Arch-Bishop kept that ORDER in his Pocket, 'till he had seen the Execution of the last Nine or Eleven of the Pentland Men who were Condemn'd.

This being represented to the King, his Majesty began to resent it; and spoke some Things, which gave them Reason to think that he would some Way or other put a Stop to their Proceeding, if they did not find out some new Method to impose upon him: This they wickedly, but effectually did, at the same Time, and in the same Act, and Deed, by which they very fatally divided the Church of Scotland against it self in the manner following.

First, They told the King, That they (the Council) were not at all prosecuting the Whole Kirk; but only some few Men that were Enemies to humane Society, and not safe to be suffer'd in a Civil Government, who denyed even the Ordinance of Magistracy it self; and would neither acknowledge, or submit to His Majesty's Authority, or the Laws of the Kingdom; a few Obstinate Rebels, who would neither Obey the Laws of GOD, or submit to the Government of Man. That to convince His Majesty of the Truth of this, they had resolv'd to publish an ACT OF INDULGENCE to all those who would submit to the Civil Magistrate, and give Assurances of their Fidelity to His Majesty's Person and Government, allowing them the Exercise of Religion, according to their Consciences; and then His Majesty would see, that those People who would stand out, were not fit to be suffer'd in a human Society, were Irreconcilable Enemies to His Majesty, and such, as no Government could be safe, 'till they were rooted out and destroy'd. With this Hypocritical Shew of CLEMENCY they satisfy'd that Easie Prince, a Man given up to his

his Luxury and the Effeminacy of his Vices, and who suffer'd the Mildness of his Disposition to be deluded with false Pretences under the shadow of Lenity, to all that were proper Objects of Compassion; and leaving those who were misrepresented by his Flatterers, to the matchless Rage of their irreconcilable Enemies.

To carry on this Farce, they pass'd an Act of *Indulgence*, as they call'd it, *Anno 1669*, after they had wasted the *West of Scotland* by their Soldiers, even worse than an Enemies Army would have done in Time of War; and after the Sufferers were so entirely scatter'd, that few were to be found, and very little Plunder left to satisfy the Rapine of their Dragoons: By their Act of Council, *for they caus'd their Acts of Council to bear the Authority of Laws*, they proclaimed, ' That  
' all such Outed Ministers as should take License  
' from the Council, or the Bishop of the Diocess, *which Licenses also had several Limitations annex'd, all of them directly contrary to the Presbyterian Principle, and Homologating, as they term it, the Authority of the Civil Magistrate in Ecclesiastick Affairs, even to the Height of Erastianism:* ' All such  
' Ministers were allowed to preach, and exercise  
' the Ministerial Functions in private Houses or  
' Meetings, and their People allowed to attend  
' them with a *Non obstante*, to all Acts of Parliament then in Force to the contrary.' So that here was not only an Invasion of the Church, but the Exercise of the Dispensing Power in the Extremity, setting aside the establish'd Laws made in Parliament, by the Authority of the Council.

This *Indulgence* kindled a terrible Flame of Division and Breach of Charity among the suffering good People, a *Schism* that is really such, carried on even to Excommunicating one another,  
and

and the Effects of which is felt even to this Day.

Many Ministers upon Principles to themselves, perhaps satisfactory, came in, and accepted this *Indulgence* ; being willing to go any Length that their Consciences could be satisfy'd with, in Order to preserve the Priviledge of exercising their Ministry, and preaching the Gospel to their People.

But the persecuted People, whose Zeal commanded them not to do the least Evil to reap the greatest Good, began to protest against this Compliance of their Brethren, as wicked and detestable ; declaring not only against the *Indulgence* itself, but against all those who submitted to it, as guilty of yielding to the Power of the Prelate's *Homologating* the Supremacy, forsaking their Principles, and breaking the *Covenant*. In a Word, they not only refused to accept such a *sinful Toleration*, but protested against the making it, as void in its own Nature, and this in the warmest Manner ; and being thus effectually secluded from the Advantage of worshipping G O D in their Houses, even in the most secret Manner possible, they *took to the Fields*.

Now their Persecutors obtain'd what they desired : For, now they thought they might with Assurance boast to the King, of having made a right Judgment in these Affairs ; and having said many favourable Things of those they call'd the *Sobber Presbyterians*, whom now they cajol'd, in Order to bring them to accept of the *Indulgence*, and to take *Licenses* ; they represented those who remain'd, who were now call'd WHIGGS, as a Party, who were not to be suffer'd in any Government, but that ought to be rooted off from the Face of the Earth ; and this is the first Time that the Name of a WHIGG was used in

the World: I mean, as applied to a Man, or to a Party of Men; and these were the original primitive WHIGGS, the Name for many Years being given to no other People. The Word is said to be taken from a mixt Drink the poor Men drank in their Wanderings compos'd of Water and sour Milk; *but that by the Way.*

At the same Period began the *Field-Preachings*, or *Field-Conventicles*, of which I shall have frequent Occasion to speak more largely.

And at the same Period also, the People frequenting these Meetings, or Field-Preachings, were first call'd *Cameronians*, from one Mr. *Cameron*, a zealous Assertor of the *Sovereignty of Conscience over the Laws of Men*, of whom also we shall have Occasion to speak hereafter.

If the Persecution was cruel and furious before, it was now raging and unsufferable, carry'd on with such Madness, and with such an unsatisfy'd Thirst of Blood, that I believe, none of the *Heathen Persecutions* in the primitive Times could go beyond it in all its Parts. It is true, they did not immediately torment the Body by Fire, by Racks, and a vast Variety of instrumental Tortures; tho' they had Cruelty enough that Way too, as in those barbarous Engines of Cruelty call'd the *Boot* and the *Thumbkins*, than which a more exquisite Torture could not easily be devised.

But they had Torments beyond the Cruelty of Death, which they drove the poor persecuted People to suffer (*viz.*) the driving them from their Habitations into Mountains and Hills, into Dens, and Holes, and Caves of the Earth, attended with unsufferable, unsupportable Hunger and Cold, in a Climate the most inhospitable, and Places most barren, and empty of Sustenance

nance or Relief of any in these Parts of the World.

It is not to be calculated how many were starv'd in this Manner, and whose Bones, *many of them*, were found afterwards, who had perished in the most deplorable Circumstances, and were not discover'd by any other Remains; it would make the Heart of any considering Christian bleed, to contemplate the Miseries of those People who perished in this deplorable Manner, when such was the Cruelty of their Persecutors, that even the Parents durst not relieve, or entertain their Children, or Children harbour, or nourish their Parents: But, if the Person was accused of having been at one of these *Field-Meetings*, they were immediately *proscrib'd*, and *intercommuned*, by which it was made Death for any one so much as to speak with them, much more to harbour, or relieve them.

It has been enquir'd, why these People would so obstinately continue to assemble in these *Field-Meetings*; and I have heard them censur'd by many, who did not understand the Circumstances which they were reduced to; which therefore, it is necessary a little to describe.

It is mentioned before, how severe the Laws they had already made, were against those who *did not come to Church*: And how none were permitted to exercise the *Ministerial Office*, but upon such and such Limitations. This they found embarrass'd them, with the whole Body of the Kirk, and begun to appear too rigid and severe: And for this Reason, as before, the *Indulgence* was set on Foot. After which *Lenity*, as it was call'd; they suppos'd nothing would be call'd *Cruelty* upon those, whowould not accept of *Liberty* upon their Terms; and therefore,

no sooner was the *Indulgence* granted, but they began to persecute with the utmost Fury all those, who either would not, or did not accept of their *Benevolent Indulgence*.

Immediately Sanguinary Laws were made to fall upon those they had now doom'd to Destruction, for *not complying with their most merciful TOLERATION*; and *First* as such, who thought fit to take *Licenses from the Bishops*, were admitted, or indulg'd to Meet, &c. in such and such Places. So all other were immediately sentenc'd, by a Law to *suppress Conventicles*; whereby all those *Ministers*, who presum'd to *Preach, Expound, or Pray* in any House where were more than the Family, were to be imprison'd 'till they gave Security never to offend again, or to depart the Kingdom; and every Person *presented* in such House to be fin'd a fourth Part of their Annual Rent, if Gentlemen; and in Proportion for others: But for *Field-Conventicles*, the Preacher was to be put to Death, and his Goods Confiscated, and 500 Marks Reward was given to the Person that should apprehend them; the Hearers also to be fin'd double to what the Hearers in House-Conventicles were fin'd. This is that Famous Persecuting Law, entituled, *Act against Conventicles*, 6. Act. 2d. Sess. 2d. Parl. Cha. II. Anno 1670. and was continued afterwards for Three Years more, and after that continued again, and the Fines doubled.

The *Ministers* who could not accept of this *Indulgence*, had now their Sentence; if they thought fit to lay aside their Office, and neither be *Minister, or Hearer*, they were indeed tolerably safe; but this they could not yield to. What was then before them, as *Ministers*, was clear; for *House-Meetings, Imprisonment and*  
Banishment;

Banishment; for *Field-Meetings*, immediate Death. This however did not deterr the poor People to assemble themselves together, or the Ministers to attend and perform the Duty of their Office, at first, in Houses, but afterwards, their Numbers encreasing, they assembled in the Fields, or Mountains rather; and that in such Numbers, and so well prepar'd, as that their Persecutors often paid dear for falling upon them.

But this enrag'd them the more, and occasion'd the Persecution to rise to such a Height, as can scarce be equall'd for its Cruelty and Variety in any History.

As I have said, the Numbers of the People flocking to the Ministers were not to be concealed, indeed not to be contained in Houses; so that it presently became so dangerous to meet in that Manner, that few, if any such Meetings could be held, without being discover'd, in which Case the Minister was sure to suffer Imprisonment and Banishment, and the poor People were as sure to be ruin'd by Fines.

This caused them to quit their Houses, and go to the Hills, the Beginning of *Field-Conventicles*, as I said before, where they had both Convenience of Meeting, were much easier conceal'd, and had more Opportunity to make their Escapes, if discover'd: Before this had been long practis'd, the Council took the Alarm; It is true, as soon as ever the poor People took to this Method, their Numbers encreas'd to a prodigious Degree; for Thousands of People, who durst not distinguish themselves in appearing at House-Meetings, finding more Safety, and almost an Impossibility of being discover'd in these *Field-Meetings*, crowded thither; so that it was very frequent to have 7, 8 to 10000 People at a Time at those Meetings. Upon

Upon this Method, the Council being, as I said, alarm'd, resolv'd to raise Forces, and to put the Kingdom to the Expence of keeping, and supporting a *Standing Army*, on Pretence of suppressing the *Cameronians*; a People, who all that while desir'd no more than a quiet, peaceable enjoying the *Liberty of serving GOD, free from the Impositions of Men*; and who, altho' they had already suffered all kinds of Oppressions and Injustice, yet offer'd Violence to none; what provok'd their Enemies on this Occasion was, that they could not fall upon them now in the usual Manner by their Civil Officers and Persecutors; for the People having been before dispers'd from their Habitations, and not daring to appear where they were known; yet now gather'd together from all Parts to the *Solemn Occasions* of worshipping GOD without any Fear, and in a Posture not to be easily disturbed. This their Persecutors presently call'd *REBELLION*, and represented it as well to the *Parliament* there, as to the *King* Himself, in the most formidable Appearances, as a Thing threatening a *Civil War*; and which, if not timely suppress'd, would embroil the whole Kingdom.

As it was easy for them to impose by these Things on the most credulous Prince in the World; so they had their Agents ready at Court to aggravate, and expatiate upon every Article: And by this Means they brought the Court into all their most sanguinary Resolutions, and having, as is said, obtained an Act of Parliament, whereby they made it Death, and Confiscation of Goods, for any Minister to Preach, or Pray at these *Field-Meetings*. They had this specious Pretence to raise Forces to put that Law in Execution. The Number of Soldiers they rais'd was not great,

great, at first, amounting in the whole, not to above 2500 Men, most Dragoons; but they afterwards thought fit to joyn 3000 *Highland* Thieves to them, by which they completed the Ruin of the Country. With these Forces they pursued these poor People thro' the Hills and Mountains, to disturb and separate their Assemblies; to which Purpose, they were order'd to seize, secure, and apprehend all they could lay Hold on, to murder, and destroy all that made Resistance; and to plunder, and waste the Goods of those, who they could not apprehend: Nor was any Cruelty omitted by these Dragoons, which it was in their Power to inflict, 'till their Masters obtain'd by them the great End, which they always aim'd at, (*viz.*) to make the poor People desperate, and drive them to *take Arms*. This was the Case, and this issued in the *Rising* of *Bothwell*: Of which in its Place.

These Troops were immediately dispers'd over the *whole* Country: I mean that Part of the Country where the Things were chiefly transacted, (*viz.*) the *Western* and *Southern* Shires. They were empower'd to apprehend, and bring dead, or alive, such *Ministers* as they had given them by Name: And at length, they had a Power to apprehend all People, that they had Reason to suppose were present at any of those Meetings, or were going to them, or coming from them. This last Clause gave them such an unlimited extensive Power, that no Person was exempt from their Enquiry, and if they found any Person upon the Road, that had but a *BIBLE* in their Pockets, they took it for a sufficient Proof, that they either had been at, or were going to one of those *Meetings*; and accordingly they

they sent them to Prison, where they seldom fail'd of finding some Pretence or other, to ensnare them, and draw them in to some Acknowledgment of what they call'd a Crime, so to keep them in Custody : For, as the honest People would not lye to save themselves, they failed not to purge them with Questions, whether they had been, or intended to be present at any *Field-Conventicles* : And many Times the People so question'd would boldly acknowledge, tho' to their own Hurt, That they *both had been at them, and intended as often as might be to be present again at them*, defying the Power of their Enemies, and bidding them *do their Worst*.

By these Things the *Prisons* were fill'd with great Numbers of Faithful Confessors ; and many were confin'd in the Island of the *Bass*, the Castles of *Dunmottor*, *Blackness*, and other unwholesome Places ; where they perish'd with Distempers, and in Misery, occasion'd by Want of Conveniences, by Severity of Cold, and Length of Time, and Others languish'd without Hope, or at least, without Prospect of Deliverance 17 or 18 Years, 'till their *Persecutors* were supplanted by Heaven at the *Glorious Revolution*, effected by King *William*. Many likewise were banished in this Part of the *Persecution*, and Hundreds, nay Thousands were driven from their Dwellings, *Out-law'd*, and *Intercommuned*.

The Reader is desir'd to observe now, that the *Persecutions of the Church of Scotland* may be divided into Two Parts, and they have their respective *Periods of Time*. To wit, (1.) *The Persecution of the Whole PRESBYTERIAN Church*, as described from the Time of the Act,  
restoring

restoring *EPISCOPACY*, Anno 1662 : Of which Mention has been made. And (2.) *The Persecution of the Cameronian Presbyterians*, (so they were then call'd,) which begun at, or immediately after the *Declaration of Indulgence* : To wit, in the Year 1670. This *Indulgence* was called a *Declaration*, because it was not done by *Act of Parliament*, but by the *King's Council*, upon a *Letter from the King Himself* : And to give it an equal *Sanction* as a *Statuted Law*, an *Act* was immediately pass'd in the *Parliament*, by which it was Enacted, That the *Government of the Church*, and the *Ordering thereof* does of *Right* belong to *His Majesty*, and *His Successors*, by *Vertue of His SUPREMACY*, and is *inherent in the Crown*, and that the *King* may set forth such *Constitutions concerning Ecclesiastic Matters*, as He shall find proper, which are to be *Obey'd*, and *Observ'd* by all *His Subjects as Law*.

Upon this *Indulgence*, those *Ministers* who submitted to accept of *Licences* to preach from the *Bishop*, and to take the *Oaths* therein prescribed ; to wit, of *ALLEGIANCE* and *SUPREMACY*, were allow'd to set up *Meeting-Houses for Religious Worship*, and to exercise all the *Parts of their Ministerial Office* to such *Congregations* as gathered to them for that *Purpose*. And it is acknowledg'd, that in the *East* and *North* Parts of *Scotland*, many, perhaps, the greater Part of the *Presbyterian DISSENTERS* did comply, and accept of this *Indulgence*, esteeming it better so to do, than to leave the *People as Sheep without a Shepherd* ; and better than to be utterly depriv'd of the *Means of Preaching the Gospel* at all : For, tho' they should have suffred the greatest *Extremities*, and had been willing to have endured the worst their *Enemies* could inflict, yet could

could they not have had the least Opportunity to have preached, or the People to have heard them in those Parts, where the Country being fully inhabited, and chiefly by their Enemies, they would have been certain at all Times to have been disappointed, and fallen upon.

But, there were a Body of People, especially in the *West* and *Southern* Parts, whose Zeal carried them beyond all such *Compliances*, and who esteeming the accepting of the *INDULGENCE*, as *Homologating*, (to use their own Words) their *solemnly abjur'd Prelacy*, and detesting every thing that look'd like a *Yielding up the Cause of GOD*, as they really believed theirs to be, stood out, and would by no Means accept of Deliverance in a sinful Manner.

It is too long a Subject to enter upon in these Memoirs, to set down the Reasons, that one side gave for their complying with, and the other for their rejecting this Indulgence; it is sufficient to the Case in Hand, that these Men declar'd they thought the Terms Sinful; that the Good pretended, was by no means equivalent to the Evil that was to be committed; that it was against the Covenant, by which they were engag'd to God, to endeavour to their utmost, the Extirpation of Prelacy; that they ought to suffer the greatest Torment, rather than to commit the least Sin, and that as this was in their Opinion a great Sin, they could not in Conscience comply with it.

What they deny'd or refused to do, may be comprehended in these Heads, with the reasons they have for it.

1. They would not accept of an Indulgence for Worshipping God, by the Licence of the Bishops; because they said they had abjur'd Prelacy in the Covenant, and had declared *the Bishops* to be

Anti-scriptural and Anti-christian, and to take License from them, was to homologate their Authority as Legal, which they detested and abhorr'd.

2. They would not take the Oath of Supremacy, because they could not in Conscience allow any King or Head of the Church but *Jesus Christ*.

3. They would not Pray for the King, or Swear to him, because he was a Persecutor of the Church, and thereby an Enemy to God, because he had Renounced the Oath of God in the Covenant, and till he had repented, they would have nothing to do with him.

4. Being debarred all manner of Liberty to Worship God in Publick, and on the severest Penalties forbid to assemble themselves together, either in the Churches, or in private Families; and believing it at the same time their Duty according to the Scripture, *not to forsake assembling* &c. They could not satisfy their Consciences to obey Man rather than God.

These Things however Condemned by others, who thought the Suffering People strained their Matters too high; were yet Principles, which those People could not in Conscience abate, or go from; and it was apparent they would lay down their Lives, rather than abate, or go from them: And this makes the Proceedings of the Council against them be justly esteemed, the height of Persecution. Nor were the methods taken with them, such as could be justified, either by the Laws of God or Man, especially Christians, tho' their Principles had been really worse, than their Enemies ever pretended they were: For they were treated not only with all manner of Cruelty, Barbarity, and Inhumanity; but with Treachery, Perfidy, and breach of even the Laws of Nature: They were  
abandon'd

abandon'd to the Mercy of every common Soldier, to kill and destroy them, upon even Suspicion of Guilt, without Tryal, Evidence, or Examination; they were made Witnesses against themselves, and against one another, and Methods were taken to Try Convict, and Execute them in a few Moments, without Law, Order, Judge or Magistrate.

The Merciless rage of their Persecutors, was come to such a height, that they would frequently contrive to surprize them, so as that they might put them to Death, without giving them time so much as to pray to God, as if they thought their Rage could extend beyond Death, and that if possible, they would punish their Souls as well as their Bodies; and I think it is no Breach of Charity to say, that if they could have made an Act of Parliament, that they should have had no Mercy shewn them in the next World, any more than in this, they would not have fail'd to have pass'd it: Few Persecutions in the World, have ever been Circumstanc'd with such particular marks of Inveterate Malice, they have even Envyed them the Prayers of others, and if upon their Tryals any one had but said, *Lord Comfort them*, they were sure to be taken up and question'd for themselves.

Such Inhumanities have not been Parallel'd in the World, as has been used here, particularly, that when 250 of them were put on board a Ship for Transportation, and the Ship was cast away upon the Rocks, so hard hearted, so inhumanly Cruel was the Officer who Commanded, that he would not suffer the Hatches to be opened that they might be sav'd, tho' to be still banish'd according to Sentence; but stood  
over

over them till they were all Drown'd in the Hold of the Ship except 50 who Miraculously escaped, some of whom are alive at the publishing of this Account.

These however are Generals, I shall meet with them all again in their Course: I return to the Field Meetings, for it is of these and of the People frequenting them, that all that is now to be said is to be understood.

After the poor People had thus adjourn'd their Meetings to the Hills *as is said*, and the Council had obtain'd those Laws abovemention'd, declaring it Imprisonment, Death, &c. to be found at any of them, and Troops were Levy'd, to put those Laws in Execution; there could be nothing expected on any Side but Blood, and the Fire of Persecution was but then said to be Kindled.

The first Civil or pretendedly Legal Step was an Act of Parliament, *2. Sess. 2. Parl. Cha. 2. Anno 1670*, by which every Person, of what Quality, Age or Sex soever, was obliged to Answer upon Oath, and depose all that they knew of such Field Meetings, and of what Persons were thereat, and to answer to the Questions that should be ask'd them upon Oath, upon Pain of Imprisonment, Fine, Corporal Punishment, or Banishment, at the Pleasure of the Council. By this Act, Fathers and Mothers were oblig'd to Betray, and Accuse their own Children; and Children to Betray and Accuse their Parents; Husbands their Wives, and Wives their Husbands; and many for refusing thus to betray their nearest Relations, have been Transported to the Plantations from their Country, Relations, and Interest; where they have been sold for Slaves, and have perished by the se-

Y verit

verity of Labour, violent Cold, or violent Heat, not having been used to such hardships.

A Serious and Judicious Writer of those Times, says, such Havock was made by the cruelty of the Souldiers, and by the furious Executions of their Arbitrary and Tyrannical Laws, that greater could not be found in the Reigns of *Nero* and *Caligula*, Roman Emperors, most infamous for Cruelty.

Nor were these Violences Exercised for a little while, as in several of the most cruel of the Primitive Persecutions was the Case; but for Eighteen Years together, the poor People had no Redress, no Relaxation, but that every Day, matters grew worse and worse, and more and more desperate; their Enemies always contriving some new and unpractis'd Severity, and acting something never known before, in Order more and more to exasperate and oppress them. This Account of 18 Years *Persecution* is to be reckon'd from the Time of the *Indulgence*, or, at least, from the Year after (*viz.*) 1670: But, the whole *Persecution* continued 28 Years (*viz.*) from *May*, the Beginning of the Year 1660, being the first of the *RESTORATION*, to *November*, the latter End of the Year 1688, being the Beginning of the *REVOLUTION*.

Things were now come to the utmost Extremity, and the Sufferers being treated thus with all Manner of Cruelty, had, as is said, taken to the *Hills*, where they worshipped GOD with more Freedom, and with Gladness of Heart; but not with much less Hazard at the last; for they were then fallen upon as Rebels by Troops of Dragoons who executed the Bloody Orders of the Council with such Rage over the poor defenceless People, riding over the poor flying Women, and Children,

Children, and dragging them like Beasts up and down the Fields, 'till they brought them to Prisons; that it was no Wonder the Men took Measures, to meet together with more Safety to themselves. From this Time it was resolved, *That seeing Self-Defence was a Natural Law, and that every Man had a Right to preserve his own Life in the Performance of any lawful Action, and likewise that the Worship of God was not only lawful, but their indispensable Duty, which no human Power ought to restrain, or had a Right to forbid; it was lawful therefore for them to defend themselves from Violence, and preserve their Liberty in the Exercise, and during the Time of Worship: And therefore they resolved, That at their said Field-Meetings, as many of the young Men that had Fire-Arms, should come arm'd, not to use Violence against any, but to resist the Dragoons, in case they should fall upon the Meeting, or lay hold of any of the Peopls going to, or coming from it.*

This was the Famous Resolve of the great Meeting at LANERCK, and for a Time, was some Surprize to the Persecutors. For, indeed, after this they were often beaten back by the Courage of much inferiour Numbers of the People, notwithstanding their Rage and Fury: And at other Times the Persecuted appeared to guard their Meetings with such Numbers, and so skilfully posted, that the Dragoons durst not attack them: Tho' on all these Occasions the Persecuted kept themselves on the Defensive, never offering any more, than to stand firm, facing their Enemies, 'till the poor frighted Women and Children were separated, and gotten safe from the Place.

I cannot refrain from giving some few Instances of the Behaviour of these People, when Power was in their Hands; which may serve to

let Posterity see whether they were Rebellious by their Inclination, or, whether they were driven to take Arms in their Hands for their own just Defence, or not : And to prove, that even when it was in their Power to have cut their Enemies in pieces, who well had deserv'd it for their Cruelty ; yet they contented themselves with bare Rescuing their Brethren from the Butchery of the Dragoons, and let the Murderers escape.

There had been a Meeting in the Fields, in *Nithisdale*, not far from *Drumlanrig* Castle, the Seat of the late D. of *Queensberry*. The Assembly was very numerous, and there were about sixty Men with Fire-Arms, who placed themselves at convenient Distance, so as to keep off their Enemies, if they should come to disturb the Assembly, 'till the People might disperse : These also had Scouts out every Way at great Distance to discover, and give Notice, &c. It was not long before an Alarm was given, that *They were betray'd*, and that two Parties of Dragoons were marching to attack them. Upon this, the poor People, as was always the Method, separated, and went every one their own Way ; so that the Soldiers found them entirely dispers'd, and no Meeting in Appearance, except of about 300, who were gotten together, where their Men were posted that had Arms ; who presenting their Pieces at the Dragoons from the side of a steep Hill, where their Horses were useless, they did not think fit to dismount, and attack them.

The Soldiers however grown furious, and enrag'd, spread themselves over the Fields, in Pursuit of the poor straggling People, and seiz'd several of them : And amongst the rest, they unhappily fell upon six Men naked and unarm'd ;

one of whom was the Minister: These, they took and after having abused them, bruised, and wounded them, tho' they offered no Resistance, they bound, and dragg'd them along with them, making the poor Men go on Foot at their Horse-Heels, as fast as they rode. They carry'd these Prisoners directly for *Edinburgh*, where also they were sure to be put to Death as soon as they arriv'd.

As the Ministers, on these Occasions, were very free to hazard their Lives in the Work of their Office, and for the Comfort and Edification of their People: So the People again were remarkable for their Love to their Ministers, and their Concern for their Preservation: No sooner therefore was it known among them, that their Minister was taken, but the Men began to gather together in several Parties with their Arms. resolv'd, whatever it cost, to rescue their Minister; To this End they dispers'd themselves into all the Ways by which they thought the Dragoons might march, by which it happened, that the smallest Number of them not being above 37 Men, who lay on the side of *Entrekein Hill*, met with them, that being the Way the Enemy really went with the Prisoners.

This *Entrekein* is a very steep, and dangerous Mountain; nor could such another Place have been easily found in the whole Country for their Purpose; and, had not the Dragoons been infatuated from Heaven, they would never have entered such a Pass, without well discovering the Hill above them. The Road for above a Mile goes winding, with a moderate Ascent on the side of a very high, and very steep Hill, 'till on the latter part, still ascending and the Height on the left above them being still vastly great, the

Depth on their right below them makes a prodigious Precipice, descending steep and ghastly into a narrow deep Bottom, only broad enough for the Current of Water to run that descends upon hasty Rain : From this Bottom the Mountain rises instantly again steep as a precipice on the other side to a stupenduous Height. The passage on the side of the first Hill, by which, as I said, the Way creeps gradually up, is narrow ; so that two Horsemen can but ill pass in Front : And, if any Disorder should happen to them, so as that they step but a little a-wry, they are in Danger of falling down the said Precipice on their right, where there would be no stopping 'till they came to the Bottom. And the Writer of this has seen, by the Accident only of a sudden Frost, which had made the Way slippery, 3 or 4 Horses at a Time of Travellers, or Carriers lying in that dismal Bottom; which slipping in their Way, have not been able to recover themselves, but have fallen down the Precipice, and rolled to the Bottom, perhaps, tumbling 20 Times over, by which it is impossible but they must be broken to pieces, e'er they come to stop.

In this Way the Dragoons were blindly marching 2 and 2 with the Minister and 5 Countrymen, whom they had taken Prisoners, and were hauling them along to *Edinburgh* ; the Front of them being near the Top of the Hill, and the rest reaching all along the steep part; when on a sudden they heard a Man's Voice calling to them from the side of the Hill on their left a great Height above them.

It was misty, as indeed it is seldom otherwise on the Height of that Mountain ; so that no Body was seen at first : But the Commanding Officer hearing some Body call, halted, and

and call'd aloud, *What d' ye want, and who are ye?* He had no sooner spoke, but 12 Men came in fight upon the side of the Hill above them, and the Officer call'd again, *What are ye?* and bad *Stand*: One of the 12 answer'd, by giving the Word of Command to his Men, *Make ready*; and then calling to the Officer, said, *Sir, Will ye deliver our Minister?* The Officer answer'd with an Oath, *No, Sir, and ye were to be damn'd*. At which the Leader of the Countrymen fir'd immediately, and aim'd so true at him, tho' the Distance was pretty great, that he shot him thro' the Head, and immediately he fell from his Horse; His Horse fluttering a little with the Fall of his Rider, fell over the Precipice, rolling to the Bottom, and was dash'd to pieces.

The rest of the 12 Men were stooping to give Fire upon the Body; when the next Commanding Officer call'd to them to *hold their Hands*, and desir'd a *Truce*. It was apparent, that the whole Body was in a dreadful Consternation; Not a Man of them durst stir a Foot, or offer to fire a Shot. And had the 12 Men given Fire upon them, the first Volley, in all Probability, would have driven 20 of them down the side of the Mountain into that Dreadful Gulph at the Bottom.

To add to their Consternation, their 2 Scouts who rode before, gave them Notice, *That there appear'd another Body of Arm'd Countrymen at the Top of the Hill in their Front*; which however was nothing but some Travellers, who, seeing Troops of Horse coming up, stood there to let them pass, the Way being too narrow to go by them: It's true, there were about 25 more of the Countrymen in Arms, tho' they had not appear'd, and they had been sufficient, if they

they had thought fit, to have cut this whole Body of Horse in pieces.

But, the Officer having ask'd a *Parley*, and demanded, *What it was they would have?* they replied again, *Deliver our Minister.* Well Sir, says the Officer. *Ye's get your Minister, and ye will promise to forbear firing: Indeed we'll forbear,* says the good Man, *We desire to hurt none of ye: But Sir,* says he, *Belike ye have more Prisoners: Indeed have we,* says the Officer, *and ye mon deliver them all,* says the honest Man. Well, says the Officer, *Ye shall have them then,* Immediately the Officer calls to *Bring forward the Minister:* But the Way was so narrow and crooked he could not be brought up by a Horseman, without Danger of putting them into Disorder: So that the Officer bad them *Loose him, and let him go;* which was done: So the Minister stept up the Hill a step or two, and stood still: Then the Officer said to him, *Sir, and I let you go, I expect you promise to oblige your People to offer no Hindrance to our March.* The Minister promis'd them, *He would do so.* Then go Sir, said he, *You owe your Life to this Damn'd Mountain.* Rather Sir, said the Minister, *to that G O D that made this Mountain.* When their Minister was come to them, their Leader call'd again to the Officer, *Sir, We want yet the other Prisoners.* The Officer gave Orders to the Rear, where they were, and they were also deliver'd. Upon which the Leader began to march away, when the Officer call'd again, *But hold, Sir,* says he, *Ye promised to be satisfied, if ye had your Prisoners: I expect you'll be as good as your Word.* Indeed shall I, says the Leader, *I am just marching away;* it seems he did not rightly understand the

the Officer. *Well, Sir, but,* says the Officer, *I expect you call off those Fellows you have posted at the Head of the Way. They belong not to us,* says the honest Man, *they are unarm'd People, waiting 'till you pass by. Say you so,* said the Officer, *Had I known that, you had not gotten your Men so cheap, or have come off so free :* Says the Country men, *And ye are for Battle, Sir, We are ready for you still, if you think you are able for us, ye may trye your Hands; we'll quit the Truce, if you like. NO,* says the Officer, *I think ye be brave Fellows, e'en gang your Gate.*

The Case was very clear, and the Officer saw it plainly : Had those 37 Men, for that was the most of their Number, fir'd but twice upon them, and then fallen in Sword in Hand, or with the Club of their Musquets; not a Man of them could have escaped : Nay, they must have destroy'd one another; for they would have thrust one another down the Hill with but the least Offer to move, or turn, or do any Thing but go forward : Nor could any Dragoon apply himself to any Thing but to govern his Horse, so as to prevent his falling over the Edge of the Way down the Hill : Indeed the persecuted had them all at Mercy, and had they commanded them all to lay down their Arms, and surrender themselves Prisoners at Discretion, they must have done it. But these testify'd by their Moderation, that they sought no Man's Blood; and that they took Arms meerly for their own Defence, and yet four of these were afterwards Executed for this Fact.

This little Affair made a great Noise. The Officer of the Dragoons was threaten'd with a Council of War : And whether he was not broke for Cowardise I am not certain; but this

I am certain of, that had the best of them been upon the Spot, they must have done the same, or have resolv'd to have made a Journey head-long down such a Hill, as would have chill'd the Blood of a Man of good Courage but to have thought of. As to the Mistake, of not discovering the place before they enter'd the Pass. That Fault lay upon the Officer who was kill'd, who had already paid dear for his Omission.

There was another Occasion, in which the persecuted People had let the Soldiers know, that they were not always to expect their Blood so cheap as they had formerly had it. And this had been much to their Advantage, had they not carry'd it on afterwards to an Enterprize, which neither their Numbers, or Circumstances were by any means equal to.

*John Graham*, Laird of *Claverhouse*, the same who was famous afterwards by the Title of Visc. of *Dundee*, and was kill'd at the Battle of *Cillicranky*, in the Year 1689. was a Furious Persecutor, and an implacable Enemy of these poor innocent People upon all Occasions: He had, among the rest of his Cruelties, barbarously murther'd several of the persecuted People with his own Hands, as after this Action he did several more, particularly one of his own Name, (*viz.*) *Graham of Galloway*, who fled from him out of a House where the said *Claverhouse* had persu'd and beset him: The young Man being forced to quit the House, and run to save his Life, *Claverhouse* rid after him and overtook him; and tho' the young Man offer'd to surrender, and begg'd him to save his Life, he shot him dead with his Pistol. This, with several other like barbarous Things he practis'd upon the poor persecuted People. Of which hereafter. There

There was a very great Meeting of the persecuted People in the Fields near *Loudoun-Hill*; where, by Report, many Thousands were met together. I think, they had intended to have the Communion; and to have made it a Day, both of Humiliation and Rejoycing; a Day of Humiliation for the Apostacy of their Brethren, and for the Sins of the Land: And a Day of solemn Joy for the Liberty of, and Affection of the People to the Service and Worship of God.

As it was a very great Meeting, so the Number of Men was greater than were in Arms for their Defence, than was usual on other and ordinary Occasions; there being about 200 Men with Fire-Arms, prepar'd for, and resolv'd to do their Parts with the Enemy, if they came, as was threaten'd, to disturb them.

The Laird of *Claverhouse* having Information of this Assembly, prepar'd to attack them; and had boasted what Havock he would make of the *Cameronians* on that Occasion: *It seems he said*, that he heard they had some Fire-Men among them, but if they offered to make one shot at his Men, he would save the Council and Courts of Justice the Trouble of prosecuting his Prisoners with the Formality of the Law, for he would immediately hang up every one that fell into his Hands, if he should take 500. It was confidently reported, that some of the Soldiers of his own Troops gave private Notice of this, and of the measures he had taken for assaulting the Meeting: As also of the Menaces and Boasts he had made. Compassion indeed might move some of the Soldiers; for tho' generally speaking, the Soldiers were barbarous and cruel as their Officers could desire, yet oftentimes it was found they were less so than their Officers.

However

However it was, the persecuted had receiv'd Information, that *Claverhouse* with 300 Dragoons was resolv'd to surround the Meeting, and put them all to the Sword. This Account came not to them till after they were assembled, and their Worship was actually begun; whereupon the Men who had the Guard of the Meeting far from being surpris'd, consulted together what they should do, whether they should disperse for that Time, and appoint another Meeting at another Place and Time, or what Course they should take.

They had not many Hours to deliberate, much less to put in Execution what they should resolve on. But, in a Word: It was concluded the People should be desir'd to sit still, and compose themselves, whatever should happen, leaving the Event to the Providence and good Pleasure of God; and that they should send for Help to all the neighbouring Places, And in the mean Time to meet *Claverhouse* and his Men, if they came to attack them; and do as God should direct.

Upon mustering their Men, they found their Number encreas'd to about 250 Men well arm'd, besides several that came in afterwards: And before the Action began it's thought they were near 400. The Assembly was great, and the People sat all on the Ground on the side of a steep Hill: The Minister preaching to them from a little Tent near the Bottom of the Hill. The Laird of *Claverhouse* with his Dragoons came on with great Fury, like a Troop of Wolves to fall upon a naked and defenceless Flock of Sheep, and not expecting any Resistance, kept no Scouts out before him; when on a sudden they were challeng'd, and bid *Stand*, by an Out-Guard of the persecuted; who finding them  
come

come on, fir'd at them, and retreated to the main Body. But the Dragoons were a second Time surpris'd, when they found a large Body of Men advantageously posted, the first Line of whom fir'd a Volley of shot upon them, and kill'd and wounded them 16 or 17 Men, and some Horses.

This brought them to halt, and prepare for Battle : They took not much Time for it, but came on again with great Fury, but found that the persecuted had a large Ditch cast up in their Front, with a low old ruined Wall, which serv'd them as a *Parapet*, from whence they fir'd with more Security, and so well they plyed them with their shot, that after 2 or 3 Attempts they gave it over, and retreated, having lost about 30 Men kill'd and wounded ; and found that they had to do with Men resolv'd to die, and sell their Lives as dear as they could. There were some of the persecuted who signaliz'd themselves upon this Occasion ; and who leaping over their Works advanc'd so near them, as that once a young Gentleman laid Hands on the Bridle of *Claverhouse's* Horse, and had certainly taken him Prisoner, if he had been well seconded. This was Mr. *Cleeland*, who 18 Years after was Lieut. Col. to the Earl of *Argyll's* Regiment, which was rais'd among these very People at the *Revolution*, and was call'd, *the Cameronian Regiment*, being rais'd and completed in one Day without Beat of Drum. This was the same Regiment, now call'd *Preston's*, which was at the Attack of the late Rebels at *Preston* in *Lancashire*. And this Gentleman Lieut. Col. *Cleeland* was unhappily kill'd at *Dunkeld* against the same *Claverhouse*, then Visc. *Dundee*.

This Action began to make the persecuted terrible to the Council : And had they continued

tinued to have acted thus upon the Defensive only, it was thought they would in Time have ruin'd the Troops of their *Persecutors*. But their pushing Things to Extremity afterwards ruin'd them and all their Friends.

It is easie to believe, that this Check enrag'd the Soldiery to the last Degree : Many of the Persons who had thus appeared being known; were after this oblig'd to flye, for Fear of falling into the Hands of their *Persecutors*, but the Heads of the Actors, finding there was no going back to their own Houses, they unhappily resolv'd to keep together : *And this began the Rebellion of Bothwell-Bridge* ; For, encourag'd by Success, and made desperate by the Extremities they were driven to, they in less than four Days found themselves near 2000 Men, very well arm'd and furnish'd ; upon this they march'd to *Glasgow*, and were encreas'd in a few Days more to between 6 and 7000 Men.

Their Friends now began to be in pain for them, because *England* was more immediately concern'd to reduce them now, as well as *Scotland*. And the Duke of *Monmouth* was sent down from thence to command the Army.

This was, I say, that well known Insurrection of *Bothwell-Bridge* : And it was call'd *Rebellion*, because they Declar'd against the King : They were afterwards attack'd by the D. of *Monmouth*, while they were irresolute, and consulting whether to yield or defend themselves, and were defeated.

It is not any part of the present Work to give the Particulars of this Rising. From the Action mention'd to the Defeat, it is sufficient to observe, That in this Action there was between 3 and 400 kill'd, and about 1200 taken Prisoners. The rest escap'd, and dispers'd themselves

as well as they could; nor were the Persecutors at all satisfy'd with the Duke of *Monmouth's* Conduct, who refused, at their Request, to let the poor People be persued and massacred by the Dragoons: Not failing to make a Complaint against him to the Court of *England* on that Head, and to have it improv'd to his Disadvantage.

Many were the unhappy Consequences of this Insurrection, as well to those who were not concern'd in it, as to those who were: For tho' the Duke of *Monmouth*, as General of the Army, restrain'd the Rage of the Soldiery as above from the Inhumanity of a Hot-Blood Execution; yet his Command ceasing, and himself returning immediately after to Court, the Persecutors took pains to shew the World, that they could act with more Cruelty in Cold Blood, than Men of Honour, and of Christian Clemency could find in their Hearts to suffer, even in the Heat of Victory.

For now they gave themselves a full Swing in all their Bloody Measures, letting loose the most Bloody Agents of Tyranny to execute whatever their private Rage, as well as publick could dictate to them: Under the Pretence of rooting out Rebellion, and of executing Justice, they persued the Innocent as well as the Guilty; and put to Death Hundreds of People by all manner of Cruelties; and on the meanest Pretences imaginable: Nay often without any Pretence at all, and that in the most Barbarous manner.

It is impossible here to enter into the Particulars of the Murthers committed upon this occasion. And if I should take all the verbal Relations, that I have met with in conversing among those, that were Eye-Witnesses of the Cruelties of that Time, it would exceed, if we compare

compare the Smallness of the Country, and Numbers of the People concern'd, I say it would exceed all that ever was set down in any History of Persecutions, whether of *Popish*, or *Heathen* Tyrants.

The first Year after this Insurrection, was wholly taken up in searching after, and pursuing those who were actually in the Army; but had, by the Mismanagement, as they call'd it, of the Duke of *Monmouth*, made their Escape. For, by the Way, their Desire was, that when the Body that defended the Bridge were defeated, and the rest began to disperse and flye, they should have been all surrounded, and cut in pieces, or persu'd, and no Quarter given them, 'till not a Man of them had been left to carry News to *Glasgow* of the Defeat. And this having fail'd, they resolv'd, if possible, to find out every Man that had been at *Bothwell*, and put them to Death wherever they found them, upon the very Spot.

In Order to this, they neither requir'd much Evidence of the Fact, nor took the pains to examine the Persons themselves: But, if it was but said to them, that such a Man, or such Men had been at *Bothwell-Brigg*, they immediately sent the Soldiers to their Houses, who were to ask them no Questions, but seize upon them, drag them just out of the Doors, and shoot them dead in a Moment. How many poor innocent Men, after protesting in the solemnest manner, *That they had not been any Way concern'd in the Bothwell Affair*, have they shot to Death with those Protestations in their Mouths! and when they have fallen on their Knees, and begg'd but for 2 Minutes Time to recommend their Souls to G O D, have deny'd them, and shot them kneeling

kneeling as they were, with that Request in their Mouths.

It would make any Christian Man's Heart tremble to read the Blasphemies, the Oaths, the Cursings, and the Insultings of those People, over the poor Men and their Families, when they dragg'd them thus out of the Arms of their Wives and Children, to Massacre them.

Add to this, the Usage others meet with in Order to extort Confessions from them of their being at *Bothwell-Brigg* Rebellion; obliging Men by Horrible Tortures to accuse themselves, and weak Women and Children to accuse their Husbands, Fathers, Brothers, and nearest Relations; putting Fire-matches between their Fingers, or under their Joints; stripping stark naked the most modest and tender Women and Children, and thrusting them out in the Extremity of Cold; and a Thousand other Violences, too many to give an Account of, in Order to discover those who were at this Insurrection of *Bothwell*.

Of the Prisoners taken at *Bothwell*, and executed for Rebellion; I shall say the less, because putting Men to Death who are taken in Arms is nothing but what is usual in such cases: Not but that as the occasion of that Insurrection was merely the Cruelty and Violence of Persecution for Conscience. We must account those who were executed in cold Blood afterwards, as all dying by the Hand of Persecution, and for the Cause of Religion: And this was fully demonstrated by Mr. *John King*, and Mr. *John Kid*, 2 Ministers taken in the Action at *Bothwell*, and put to Death at *Edinburgh* on that Account.

But when we come to speak of the Usage given to the rest of the Prisoners, who they did think fit to put to Death by the Hangman: There we shall see the Spirit of Persecution in the Abstract; and such Articles of Cruelty as are not to be equall'd in *Dioclesian* or *Maximinian*; such as are not to be found in the *Irish* Massacre, or perhaps in any of the most Bloody and Barbarous Persecutors. No, not in *D'Alva* himself; or even in the *Spanish Inquisition*.

There was as is said, about 1200 Prisoners, few more, or less, taken at *Bothwell*. These were in general stript by the Soldiers of what Cloaths they had upon them, that were any Thing valuable, and driven like a Herd of Beasts, bound two and two to *Edinburgh*; where they were kept several Weeks in a Church-yard wall'd in, being strictly guarded, and allow'd no Lodging but the Earth; neither any Covering but the Heavens; either to shelter them from Wet, Cold, Sun or Wind, altho' many of them were very sore wounded. After this trifling Severity, a pretended Mercy was extended to them, *viz.* That such of them as would sign a Bond condemning their whole Cause, acknowledging it to be Rebellion, declaring it unlawful to Take Arms against the King upon any Pretence whatsoever; and binding themselves in a Penalty not to do so at any Time thereafter were let go.

Many took this Declaration, and sign'd this Bond, being not able to endure the Severity of that Usage which they were expos'd to in the Church-yard, which however others call'd Trifling. But many of them refused to accept of Deliverance, upon such Terms as were against their Principles, and as trampled upon the Blood of their Brethren who had dy'd in that Quarrel. These

These were near 400; and the *Council* not thinking it proper to set the Hangman to Work upon them all; above 50 having already been put to Death, found out new and unheard of Ways of Murdering the greatest Part of them altogether; About 300 of them having receiv'd a general Sentence of Transportation to the *English* Colonies in *America*; a Ship was found which as was pretended was bound to *Jamaica*, or rather was hir'd by the Government to Transport these poor Victims to *Jamaica*; where they were to be sold as Slaves. On board this Vessel these People were ship'd. Some have ventur'd to tell us, That so great a Number could not possibly have gone to *Jamaica* in that Ship; That the Vessel was by no Means able to have carry'd fresh Water and necessary Provisions for so great a Number, and so long a Voyage. And moreover, upon Examination we have been told that it did appear, That no proportion of Provisions for such a Number and such a Voyage was in the Ship at that Time: All which, if true, serve to prove, That what was afterwards wickedly done was the Horrid Contrivance and Bloody Instructions of the Persecutors, who had resolv'd the Destruction of the poor Sufferers whatever it cost.

The Ship sail'd, as above, and whether by Strefs of Weather, Negligence or Wickedness, it is not material; neither could the poor Prisoners who were lock'd under Hatches judge of it. But this is certain, that coming near the Northermost part of *Scotland* near the *Orkneys*, the Ship was driven on shoar amongst the Rocks, and stuck fast. The Ship's Crew sav'd themselves, and all that belong'd to them; and all the Prisoners, had they been allow'd to shift for themselves, would have been sav'd with Ease

enough ; but the Officer set over them would not suffer the Hatches to be opened, neither could any Entreaty prevail upon him to let one Soul of them out, 'till the Ship being dashed to Pieces, they were all of them drowned in the Hold, except only, that an Honest Seaman, seeing, and being struck with Horror at so Barbarous an Act ; ventur'd his Life to go on Board, and with an Axe cutting thro' the Deck of the Vessel got Forty nine of them out alive ; the rest being about Two Hundred and fifty perished together. After this Piece of Cruelty is related, I think I need make no Apology for having said, That the Reign of *Dioclesian*, or any of the most Cruel Persecutors of God's Church could not match it : For these were Men delivered, Men to whom Life was granted ; after the Decimations and Drafts made out of them for the Gibbet and Scaffold were over, these were sentenc'd to Transportation ; but given up to be Murther'd in the most Inhumane and most Unprecedented Manner, such as I believe no History can shew the like of.

Another Ship which had 60 or more of these Banish'd Men put on board her, whereof several were Ministers, and being oblig'd by the Act of Navigation, really for she was bound for *Jamaica* to go first to *England*, there by the Good Providence of God, some Misunderstanding happening between the Owners and Freighters of the Vessel, upon the Terms of Charter-Party, the Ship was not permitted to go the Voyage ; and the poor Sufferers got their Liberty, no Thanks to their Persecutors.

There was near an Hundred others Transported in several Ships ; some to one Country, some to another ; besides about 30 of the same *Bothwell-*

*Well-Brigg* Prisoners, that dy'd in Prison either of their Wounds, or otherwise by Distempers contracted in their Confinement, and by the Cruelty of their Keepers.

But this was not an End of the *Bothwell-Bridge* Affair: For, as I said before, it was made for some Years the Subject of the Strictest Inquisition; and Abundance of poor People were Murther'd in Cold Blood by the Persecutors on Pretence of their having been at that Rebellion; as shall appear in its Place.

In the Time of these Transactions the Arch-Bishop of St. *Andrew's*, the most Fierce and Cruel Persecutor of the Good People aforesaid; and One, who, as was reported, had declared it as his Opinion, That they were not a People fit to live; but ought to be extirpated from the Face of the Earth, was himself cut off by the Hands of some Men, whose Zeal carrying them beyond their Patience, took upon them this Execution, as a Thing they had a Right to, as they supposed; there being no Way to obtain Publick Justice any other Way.

There have been several Accounts given in Publick of this Man's Death; the Truth and Impartiality of which I have much Reason to question, not only because I have heard it other Ways related; but because those Accounts have manifest Contradictions in them, both as to the Manner and Circumstances of the Fact, and as to the Persons concern'd in it; neither shall I say any more than this for the Relation here set down, than that it came immediately from the Mouth of one of the Persons concern'd in it; and shall be repeated as near as possible in the very Words.

' We were ( says this Person ) a poor People  
 ' made desperate by the Violence of our Perse-  
 ' cutors; and still more so for Want of Oppor-  
 ' tunity and Strength to resist them by Force;  
 ' which in Case of such manifest Injustice as we  
 ' daily receiv'd, we had very much Will to do,  
 ' and believ'd was not only lawful, but our  
 ' Duty: And on this Principle we acted before  
 ' at *Pentland*, and afterwards at *Boswell*; which  
 ' we believe were very Lawful and Justifiable  
 ' Actions; however, it pleased not the Lord to  
 ' give us Success therein. In the Pursuit of this  
 ' Opinion, it was propos'd at a Meeting, whe-  
 ' ther we being therefore, tho' suppress'd by Power  
 ' in a State of War, with our Persecutors, who had  
 ' illegally vow'd our Extirpation; it were not law-  
 ' ful for us to destroy them by Surprize, or by at-  
 ' tacking them as well a-part, as together, where-  
 ' ever we could find them; and it was unani-  
 ' mously agreed, That it was Lawful. Next it  
 ' was propos'd, That whereas all Appeal to the  
 ' Publick Justice being deny'd us; and all Re-  
 ' medy against our Oppressions, That is to say,  
 ' such as the Civil Magistrate ought to yield us,  
 ' being render'd impossible, we might, and ought  
 ' endeavour to execute that Justice which God  
 ' Himself had Denounced against Murtherers; and  
 ' which God had by His Own Law deputed to  
 ' the next of *Kin*. That the Persons here put  
 ' to Death were Murther'd, nay even Butcher'd  
 ' many of them without so much as any Pretence  
 ' to the Legal Forms, and ordinary Course  
 ' of Justice, being Kill'd in Cold Blood by  
 ' the Raging Soldiers, or by Bloody minded  
 ' Persecutors, back'd and supported by the said  
 ' Soldiers; and this by meer Surprize, and Ra-  
 ' venous Unguided Rage, being equal to Assas-  
 ' sination,

‘ sination, or rather something like being de-  
 ‘ vour’d by Wild Beasts or Savages.

‘ That upon such as Murther’d without Law,  
 ‘ Justice was to be Executed without Law, and  
 ‘ the Sword of God was in every Injur’d Man’s  
 ‘ Hand to Execute the Divine Justice on such;  
 ‘ no Justice being also to be had from Men, those  
 ‘ who bore the Sword, not bearing it in vain only  
 ‘ but joyning themselves to, protecting, and  
 ‘ aiding these Murtherers, and therefore bearing  
 ‘ equal Guilt *art and part* with them.

‘ This likewise was resolv’d upon in the Af-  
 ‘ firmative; whereupon we who were then pre-  
 ‘ sent, and whose Souls were fir’d with Zeal for  
 ‘ God’s Glory, resolv’d with *Phineas* to Execute  
 ‘ Justice on those who had thus lifted up their  
 ‘ Hand against the Lord’s People, wherever they  
 ‘ might be found; and to place our selves in  
 ‘ the Room and Authority of the Avenger of  
 ‘ Blood for our Innocent Brethren, who were de-  
 ‘ stroy’d and cruelly Massacred for the Cause of  
 ‘ God and the Testimony of a Good Conscience.

‘ In this our Zeal, and fortify’d with such  
 ‘ Considerations as these, 5 Men of our Number  
 ‘ Arming our selves, plac’d our selves in Am-  
 ‘ bush, with Design to Execute God’s Justice  
 ‘ upon the Laird of \_\_\_\_\_, a Cruel and  
 ‘ Bloody Perfecutor of God’s People; and who  
 ‘ had, not many Days before, put to Death se-  
 ‘ veral of our Brethren in the Province of *Fife*.  
 ‘ This was our Intent, neither had we at that Time  
 ‘ any Thought or Expectation of any other, when  
 ‘ we were surpriz’d with an Account from one  
 ‘ of our Number who was at a Distance; that  
 ‘ the Arch-Enemy of God and his People, the  
 ‘ Prelate of *St. Andrew’s*, was passing on the  
 ‘ Road in his Coach.

' It was immediately suggested to us, that al-  
 ' beit we had missed of the Man who we had  
 ' sought for; yet God had by a Wonderful  
 ' Providence delivered the Great and Capital  
 ' Enemy of his Church into our Hands; and  
 ' that it was a Visible Call to us from Heaven  
 ' not to let him escape: That he had been a  
 ' Notorious Persecutor of God's People, and a  
 ' Vile Murderer of our Brethren; particularly  
 ' in that, when the King Himself sent his Com-  
 ' mands to the Council in the Year 1666 after  
 ' *Pentland* Rising, That no more should be put  
 ' to Death; which Command was sent in Wri-  
 ' ting directed to the said Privy Council, and  
 ' was deliver'd to the said Bishop; yet that he  
 ' had kept the said Written Order in his Pocket  
 ' 'till the last 10 Persons mentioned in this Work  
 ' p. 166, who were then in Prison, were put to  
 ' Death; and that now was the Time when that  
 ' Scripture was to be executed by them, *He who*  
 ' *spilleth Man's Blood by Man shall his Blood be*  
 ' *spilt*: And that they ought not only to believe  
 ' that God had deliver'd him up into their Hands;  
 ' but that if they let him escape it should be re-  
 ' quired of them and of their Brethren, as in the  
 ' Case of King *Ahab*, 1 Kings 20. 42. *Because*  
 ' *thou hast let go out of thy Hand a Man who I ap-*  
 ' *pointed to utter Destruction; therefore thy Life*  
 ' *shall go for his Life, and thy People for his*  
 ' *People.*

' Fortify'd with these Principles, and parti-  
 ' cularly with this Thought, *viz.* how won-  
 ' derfully God had deliver'd this Great Enemy  
 ' into our Hand; we resolv'd that he should  
 ' not escape. However, one of our Number  
 ' declined acting therein, having a private Rea-  
 ' son against his bearing part in this Work; but  
 ' not

' not prevailing with us to desist from our Reso-  
 ' lution, which we thought we had a Call from  
 ' Heaven to finish, he withdrew from us, stand-  
 ' ing at a great Distance, so as to have no Hand  
 ' in the Action; in which Case the Hand of God  
 ' was farther remarkably seen by the Conse-  
 ' quence: For, that none of us ever fell into  
 ' the Hands of the Enemy, or were put to Death  
 ' for this Fact, but that one Person, *viz. Hack-*  
 ' *ston of Rathillet* who really had no Share in the  
 ' Work, but refused to joyn with us therein  
 ' as before.

' Having resolv'd, *as is said*, That this Ene-  
 ' my should not escape the Judgment of God by  
 ' our Hands; we rode after him, and coming up  
 ' to the Coach, quickly stopped the same, and  
 ' disarming his Servants, we gave him Notice of  
 ' our Resolutions, letting him know his Offen-  
 ' ces; and in serious Terms exhorting him to  
 ' give Glory to God, by Confessing his Guilt,  
 ' and that he would repent heartily for the  
 ' Wickedness of his Ways, and the Innocent  
 ' Blood that he had shed; for that, now his  
 ' Time was come to dye for the same.

' It was some Time e'er we could convince  
 ' him, That we were in Earnest resolv'd to put  
 ' him to Death; and he seem'd to smile at what  
 ' we had said about the Wickedness of his Life:  
 ' His Daughter also who was with him in the  
 ' Coach, rail'd on us with much Evil Language.  
 ' But thereafter, causing her to come forth of  
 ' the Coach, we let him know, that his Mo-  
 ' ments were very few; that we would wait for  
 ' him yet a little while, and exhorted him  
 ' not to trifle with his Soul, but to call upon  
 ' God for Mercy: After which, seeing us in-  
 ' deed in Earnest, he began to entreat for Life:

' But

‘ But we soon let him know, we were not to be  
 ‘ put by our Purpose for any Entreaties that  
 ‘ could be used ; and that there was no Mercy  
 ‘ to be shown to him, who had shown no Mer-  
 ‘ cy. Hereupon he began to think of Death.  
 ‘ But *here just the very Words of the Person who*  
 ‘ *related the Story.* Behold ! *God did not give*  
 ‘ *him the Grace to pray to him without the Help of*  
 ‘ *a Book.* But he pull’d out of his Pocket a  
 ‘ small Book, and began to read over some  
 ‘ Words to himself, which filled us with A-  
 ‘ mazement and Indignation. However, wait-  
 ‘ ing some Time, and then calling again upon  
 ‘ him to commend his Soul to God’s Mercy,  
 ‘ for that he should immediately dye ; we fir’d  
 ‘ upon him with our Pistols : When finding he  
 ‘ was not yet dead, and remembring that it had  
 ‘ been reported, that he had used Sorcery, in  
 ‘ Order to defend his Body, and that he was  
 ‘ invulnerable ; and withal to rid him of Life  
 ‘ with as little Torture as we might, we slew  
 ‘ him with our Swords, and departed.

This Relation of the Action coming from the  
 Mouth of one of the Actors, has not only that  
 Authority for its Currency ; but even seems in  
 its self to be most consonant with all the other  
 Accounts of it which have been made publick ;  
 and is believ’d to be a very Just and Faithful  
 Account, both of the Killing the Bishop, and of  
 the Circumstances going before it.

The Reason why this Account is made pub-  
 lick in this Place, tho’ some Time after the Fact,  
 is on the following Account.

The Spirit of Persecution was now come to  
 the Height, and the Persecutors seem’d to have  
 exerted themselves to the uttermost. The com-  
 mon Methods of Cruelty in putting to Death  
 by

by Process and by Forms of Law were exhausted, and they behoved to find out a more summary Way to proceed; for there were Persons to be destroy'd, against whom they had nothing to alledge, nor any Proof to be made against them of any Fact. And it was necessary to find out some Way or other, first to make the whole Body guilty, and then to make Men their own Accusers, charging themselves with belonging to the Body or Society, by owning the Principles upon which they acted.

This is that unheard of Part, which constitutes this Persecution to be the most Inhuman of all the Persecutions which we read of, either before or since the Primitive Age of the Church of God; and by which the Sufferings of the Church of *Scotland* are distinguish'd from the Sufferings of all that ever went before them.

And what Reproach must the Practice of these Times leave upon the Episcopal Party now alive in *Scotland*; many of whom were real Actors in the Cruellest Part of this Tragedy! Nay, saving that the Author of this would not by naming of Names, load the Heads of some who are at the Writing of this, under the just Prosecution of the Government for Treason and Real Rebellion. He could single out the Persons of some that are now in the Hands of Justice; who were among the most Bloody and Raging Persecutors of those Times: But omitting their Names, however just the Reflection, he cannot but lead them by the Hand to this just Observation, *viz.* How Righteous is that Providence, which causes them to lye at the Feet of a Provok'd Sovereign, Crying for Mercy, **AND TO BE DENTED;** who Denied Mercy to so many of their Innocen

cen

cent Neighbours and Fellow-Creatures; who were Guilty neither of Treason or Rebellion; but only of Worshipping the Great Creator of all Things according to His Command; and in such a Manner as the Authority of Conscience made their indispensible Duty.

But to return to the Facts: Prosecutions in Forms of Justice, *as I said*, seem'd now at an End; the Methods of drawing Blood seem'd to be exhausted, tho' the Thirst of Blood was not quench'd. The Number of Prisoners to be dragg'd to Execution, or Informers to accuse particular Persons either were few, or too few, to satisfy the voracious Appetite of the Persecuting Party: Nor was it particular Persons, but the whole Body of Christians in the Denomination of *Whiggs*, whose Blood they resolv'd to shed.

Being therefore unsatisfy'd with the personal Guilt of such who had been at *Bothwell-Bridge*; or such as could be found at Field-Meetings; whose Number, *tho' daily great*, were but few, when compar'd with what they resolv'd to fall upon. They proceeded now to sum up their Profession into Generals; to form them into Principles; and then make those Principles Criminal: By which Method they knew, they should infallibly involve the whole Body of those People in such Circumstances, as would entitle the Government to a Right to put them to Death. The Case was thus.

1. They knew, That these persecuted People esteem'd themselves engaged by the *National Covenant* in the Solemnest Bond imaginable: That it was the Oath of God; that no human Power could dissolve the Obligation;

Obligation : And that the breaking it as it had been broken, was no less a Crime than a National Perjury.

2. They look'd upon the King as an Enemy and Persecutor of God's People; as a Prince perjurd, by his Breaking and Renouncing the Covenant; and guilty of involving the whole Nation in the same Detestable Crime of Perjury : Also they look'd upon him as a Persecutor of God's Church, and a Bloody Destroyer of his People. And for these Reasons they could not satisfy themselves to pray for him, or say to him, God speed.
  
3. As for the Killing the Arch-Bishop of St. *Andrew's*, they did not esteem it a Murder, or an Assassination ; but esteeming themselves to be in Open War with him, and with all the Members of that Bloody Society call'd, *The Council of Scotland* ; who had treated them and their Brethren with Barbarity as Enemies to Mankind ; and had by all Kinds of Cruelty and Inhumanity *without Law* ; *except such as their Lust of Blood form'd into Acts of Council, and contrary to the Constitution had call'd Laws* ; and to which they gave the Force of Laws ; put their Brethren unjustly to Death ; which they esteem'd Murder of the vilest Sort, esteeming these Men, I say, by their Bloody Doings to be Blood-Suckers, Murderers, and open declared Enemies to God and Man : They thought it just, *as in Time of War*, to pursue them to Death in what Manner they could, and wherever they could,

could; and wherever they might be found.

4. As to the Taking Arms at *Pentland* and at *Bothwell*, and other Places; they would by no Means admit it to be Rebellion: Because Nature dictating Self-Defence to all Creatures to whom it has given a Life to defend. And they being attack'd by the Arm'd Troops of their Persecutors, while they innocently and peaceably performed their undoubted and indispensable Duty, viz. the Worshipping God according to his own Institution; they thought themselves bound by the Laws of Nature, and allowed by the Laws of God to defend their Lives, and the Lives of their Wives and Children.

As the poor People maintain'd these Principles with the greatest Exactness; and persisted to do so with the greatest Constancy: So their Persecutors knew well what Use to make of this Steady Adherence to their Principles; and how to make it a Handle to them to take Hold of the otherwise most innocent and inoffensive part of the People, and drag them to immediate Execution without further Process. And this Device they question'd not would serve them to destroy and extirpate the whole Body of the People, as they owned was their Design.

To this Wicked and Barbarous Purpose they fram'd 4 Questions upon the Heads above-mentioned; which they resolv'd to have offer'd to the persecuted People upon all Occasions; and to which they should oblige the said People to give

give an immediate direct Answer: On refusing which Answer, or not answering to their Minds, they were immediately to be put to Death. And here is to be noted, that *as it was said*, the late Arch-Bishop of St. *Andrew's*, Gen. *Dalziel*, and several others of the fiercest of the persecuting Council had often complain'd, That the Formalities of the Law, that is to say, bringing Men to the Bar, and to be Try'd by Judges, Juries, Hearings, Pleadings, &c. were Obstructions to the King's Service: So the present Council proceeding by the same Rules of Cruelty, resolv'd to make shorter Work with them; and therefore, that the Forms of Process, bringing to Prisons, and to Tryals, might not delay, or encumber the Execution, and prevent the dispatching the innocent Victim fast enough. They decreed, That every private Soldier, *an Army of whom they had now Quarter'd upon the persecuted People*, should have Power to tender the said Questions to every Man they met, or to whom they pleas'd; and upon refusing to answer, the said Soldier was empowered to kill them upon the Spot; and lest I may be thought to do this General *Dalziel* an Injury, and record of him any Thing, which was not suitable to the rest of his Practice; who, if Fame belies him not, was a Man as void of Humanity, as most that ever Heaven permitted to live. I say, that I may not wrong him, I shall give the following brief Account of an Action of his, or a Specimen of his compassionate Temper; by which the Character of the Man may be guess'd at without Breach of Charity. It was soon after the Rising at *Pentland*, when he had been sent into the Shire of *Air*, to make Search for, and put to Death such of the poor People as he could find

were

were in the said Rising. He sends a Lieutenant with a Party of Men to *New-Mills*, and order'd them to seize and bring to him an honest poor Man, whose Name was *Finlay*, and who was peaceably living in his own House, nor had he been at all in Arms: When his Men brought the Prisoner to him he examin'd him privately, *no Witness being by*; and with a kind of Civility, unusual to him, whether he had been at *Lanerck* with the Rebels? The Man answer'd, He was at *Lanerck* upon his private Business when their Army came thither; and told him what his Business was, offering to prove the Truth of it; and declared, That he was not in Arms, or had any Weapon with him: Neither did he go among them: Then he ask'd him if he remembered any of those he saw among them, and who they were? The Man declar'd he did not; whereupon he calls for the Lieutenant, and order'd him to carry that Man to the Gallows, and have him shot to Death: For that he had confest he was with the Rebels. The poor Man being brought to the Place in a great Hurry and Surprize asks the Lieutenant, if the General was in Earnest; the Lieutenant said he feared he was: However being a Civil Man, and loth to Execute such a Cruel Commission, and the poor Man protesting his Innocency, and entreating him as a Christian, that at least he might have a Reprieve for that Night, that he might prepare for Death and Eternity. The Lieutenant, I say, upon this goes back to the General, and laying before him the poor Man's Case, entreated him to grant him a few Hours Time to prepare for Death: But the General flying out in a Rage at the Lieutenant, and with Horrid Oaths and Blasphemies

Blasphemies commands him to return, and tells him he would teach him to obey his Orders after a better Manner, than to come back and make himself an Advocate for Rebels: Upon this, the Lieutenant went back directly to the Man, and immediately shot him dead upon the Spot.

This and such as this was their Temper at that Time: And I think I may say they were now come to the Height of their Fury. The Measure of their Cruelty fill'd up a-pace; all the *French* Dragooning, the Popish Burnings, the Heathen Torturings that we read of in the World, scarce ever came up to this. In all those cases, the Sufferers were brought before Judges and Magistrates, Officers of Justice, and Men in Power. But such was the Thirst of Blood here, that they appeared willing to strip themselves of their Magisterial Authority, and make every private Sentinel, every Musquetier, both Judge, Jury, and Executioner.

Never was Justice Executed in such a summary Way as on this Occasion: For, now the Soldiers fill'd the Streets and High-Ways with Blood: Men, Women, nay, and little Children were dragg'd out of their Houses, from their Shops, Trades and Labour to immediate Death, without Warning, without Pity, and without Time given them to call upon God for Mercy to their Souls.

Nor was the Life of the most Innocent Person safe at this Time from the Rapine of the Soldiers: For now, it was the easiest Thing in the World for private Revenge to be pursued to Blood; and it was in the Power of the Soldiers to execute the greatest Villany with Impunity: They had no more to do but to Rob, Ravish, Insult, Plunder, and commit what

Wickedness they pleased, and adding Murther to the rest, say, the Person Murther'd, refused to answer the Questions.

These Questions model'd according to the Heads before recited, were thus,

1. Will you renounce the Covenant ?
2. Will you Pray for the King, or will you say God blefs the King ?
3. Was the Killing the Archbishop of St. *Andrews* Murther, yea or no ?
4. Was the rising at *Bothwel Brigg* Rebellion, yea or no ?

It should have been observ'd before this, that in order effectually to suppress these persecuted People, and to finish the ruin of the Country, the Government had raised what the Country People call'd the *Highland Host*. The Account the Persecutors gave of this was, ' That the ' *Loyal Clans* offered their Service to his Majesty, ' to bring into the Field a body of Men, from ' among their Vassals and Servants, compleatly ' arm'd, who were to march whether his Majesty should please to command them, for the ' suppressing of the Rebellion, and for preventing the Rebels and Whigs from gathering ' in Troops, in the Western Shires.

On these pretences, those *Highlanders*, little better than Barbarians, and in some Cases much worse, were arm'd and taken into the Service of *Satan*, and some time after the *Bothwel Brigg* affair, were order'd to the Number of 8000 Men to Quarter upon the suffering People, in the Shires of *Air*, *Galloway*, and other the Western Shires : There they exercis'd all the Rapine, Violence, Robbery and Wickedness, over and above the Murther, and shedding of innocent  
Blood

lood, of which we are just going to speak, that may be expected from an ungovern'd Souldiery, or that could be practis'd upon, or suffer'd by a People, given up to the lust and rage of a crew of Savages.

In this posture stood the publick Affairs as to the Persecutors, yet their rage receiv'd no abatement; the very thought of the Spirit, and undepress'd courage of the Persecuted, gall'd and exasperated them: To see a set of Men living like wild Creatures in the Mountains, and yet there in spite of human Power, freely preserved the Liberty of their Principles, and met publickly and frequently in mighty Numbers, for the worship of God; and that it was impossible for them, either to apprehend or prevent them; this provok'd them to the last Degree: They found now, that as these wandering Outlaw'd People must be, and indeed so they really were harbour'd and reliev'd at the greatest Peril by the People in the plain Country, the only way left to extirpate them more effectually, was to ruin and impoverish the whole Country, that the banish'd proscib'd Refugees, might have no relief from them; and to make it punishable in the highest manner, and as the most capital Crime for any so much as to talk with, much less entertain, comfort, relieve and support one of those, who, *as they call it*, were intercomium'd; and this was so severely put in Execution, that we find among their lists of their Butchery's by the Hangman; one *Ramsley* executed only for going over a River in a Ferry Boat, with one who had been a Rebel, and talking with him in common, as with other Men in the Boat.

But all these cruelties were not yet able to extirpate a race of Men, By whose Sufferings

the Grace and Mercy of God, was to be made so conspicuous in the World : NAY so far was it from that, that on the other hand, the Numbers of them daily encreased, even under their very Persecutions, as was the Case in the Primitive times of the Church, their Field Meetings grew more frequented, and were more publickly held, and that with such Multitudes as were scarce credible to relate.

Nor were the zealous persecuted People prevailed upon, to abate one Tittle of the Testimony, which they thought themselves oblig'd to bear against the Wickedness of their Enemies, and that particularly in two Points.

1. Their National Perjury in breaking their Oath to God, and to his People ; (*viz.*) in breaking and renouncing the Covenant.

2. Their erecting an Episcopal Church, Government which they abhorr'd, and which these treated with no other Name than an Anti-christian Prelacy.

*Note,* They justified the Term Anti-christian, for the Prelatick Hierarchy owning the Supremacy of the King over the Church, whereas they allowed Christ Jesus to be the only Head and King of the Church on Earth.

On the other Hand those two Articles, and especially the open and daring Profession of them, by these persecuted People, was unsufferable, and to the last Degree provoking to their Persecutors ; and the more in that they could neither by all their Cruelties, and most inhuman Usage, deter either those that dyed

dyed to abate their open Detestation of these two Things, at their Execution, or those that remained to refrain their open Profession of the same abhorrences, no not for fear of the same Tortures.

Nor could they by all their bloody prosecutions prevent the Field Meetings they so much exclaimed against, where the resolution of the persecuted People, to persevere to their Death, in their opposition to the Prelates, and their adhering to the Covenant, was always express'd in such Terms, and the People were so confirm'd in those resolutions, that the Council saw too plainly nothing but Death could put an End to it; and the whole race of suffering Christians must be destroy'd and extirpated, or they should never Conquer the Opposition they made to the Planting of Episcopacy in that Kingdom, and upon this resolution they proceeded.

In the mean time the Poor People, as if the heat of the Persecution had but served to influence their Zeal, thought themselves oblig'd to declare a War, tho' of a different Nature against their Persecutors; and to let them see, that upon a just and equal Principle, they could clear themselves of the Guilt charg'd upon them, of being Rebels against Lawful Authority; and to this end at one of their publick and most numerous Meetings in the West, they openly declar'd themselves revolted from the Government, 'renounced and disown'd all  
' Allegiance, Obedience, Homage or Duty to  
' the King and his Administration; as being an  
' Enemy to God and to the Church of God, and  
' therefore not legally constituted, or to be ac-  
' knowledg'd as their Supream Lord. But *Ipso*  
' *Jure* depose'd, from all Regal Authority over  
them

' them, and divested of the Office of a Magi-  
 ' strate, and of the Trust or Charge of Govern-  
 ' ment which was reposed in and devolved  
 ' upon him, by express Compact, at his Coro-  
 ' nation, when he solemnly entred into an Oath-  
 ' and Covenant, with God and his People ;  
 ' and which Oath, Covenant and Compact he  
 ' had violated, breaking all the Conditions, and  
 ' impiously renouncing the Obligation thereof,  
 ' upon which Oath and the Obligation thereof,  
 ' all his regal Authority and their Allegiance,  
 ' were entirely founded ; and upon the Breach  
 ' whereof, their subjection which was limited  
 ' to the provisions of those Compacts and Co-  
 ' venants was explicitly disengaged and remit-  
 ' ted.

This was 'tis true a bold step, and many of  
 their Brethren seem'd to censure them upon  
 such a desperate proceeding, but it seems they  
 were only such who had Accepted the Liberty  
 mentioned before upon the Terms of  
 a License from the Prelates which tempo-  
 rizing and cowardly Compliance, these zealous  
 People abhor'd as Sinful, and condemn'd  
 as a fainting in Gods Cause, giving over their  
 Constancy, and above all, as a wicked recogni-  
 tion of that Episcopal Authority, from which  
 they receiv'd such License ; This they call'd  
 Homologating the Legality of what they  
 themselves Condemn'd as Anti-scriptural and  
 Anti-christian, and which they were engaged in  
 the solemnest manner by the Covenant, never to  
 permit, much less submit to in the Nation.

The Censure of such therefore was of no  
 Value to them, and they insisted upon the  
 right they had to declare, their revolt from  
 their Allegiance to King *Cha. II.* as their natu-  
 ral

ral Privilege, and as the just consequence of his Breach of the Compact of Government.

The noise the Council made of this Declaration, was strange indeed, how they declared these People Rebels, Mad, Enrag'd, *Scelerates*, &c. People to be abhorr'd by Christians, and to be rooted out from the general Society of Mankind, *and the like*; and seem'd to justify all the inhumanities they at that time resolv'd to practice upon them, and to Legitimate all their Extra-judicial Measures, by the clamour they rais'd upon them, for this one Action; not foreseeing that in a few Years those same Men should do the same thing, with the next King of the same Race, and call for a Regiment of those same honest persecuted Sufferers, whom they had thus damn'd for Rebels and Parricides, to guard them in the doing it, *as was within the space of 12 Years, the very Case*, as I shall shew in its order.

In this solemn revolt, or renouncing their Allegiance, they repeated the several Acts of Violence and Oppression, which had been practis'd or authoriz'd by the King, and by his wicked Counsellors, whereby he unhinged all the legal Establishment of their Religion, and subverted all their Religious Liberties: The Kings Supremacy, they call'd a Blasphemous and Sacrilegious; Usurpation being an illegal Anti-scriptural Dominion over the Institution of *Jesus Christ*, and the Ordinances of his own Divine Appointment:

They proceed to declare, that the King had overturn'd all the Fundamental part of the Civil Constitution, subverting the Laws and Liberties of the People, destroying their Civil and Natural Rights, and all the Securities of Life and Enjoyment whatsoever; and that all  
this

this was by claiming and assuming a right to an Absolute, Tyrannical Arbitrary Government, by his pretended Prerogative, independent of Law, and superior thereto; all which they declare to be illegal and inconsistent with the Safety, Freedom, and legal Privileges of the People, and with the Oath and Obligation of a King.

These and many other things they gave, as the reason of their revolt from, and renouncing Allegiance to the King, which I am the more particular in, because of their affinity to, and the sanction they soon after receiv'd from the general Practise of the whole Island, and also to add this remark, *viz.* How these poor People were not only handled by their Enemies, but even censur'd by their Friends, for owning those very Principles at that time, upon which the Safety of the whole Nation was found in a few Years to depend; and for professing such Opinions, as in so little a while were judged essential to the publick Safety, and on which to this Day, our *Protestant* Constitution is founded *viz.* That Tyrants and Arbitrary persecuting Princes may be Renounc'd, the People may revolt from their Allegiance to them, depose them from their usurp'd Authority, and yet cannot be justly call'd Rebels and Traytors: *Witness the Revolution and Protestant Succession.*

But asking Pardon for this needful Digression, I return to the suffering People, who however righteous the Principles were which they acted from were, yet for some Years to Drink the Dregs of *Popish* and Tyrannical Persecution, to the full Tryal of their Faith and Patience. For Example,

After they had thus declar'd their revolt from, and renounced their Allegiance to the  
King,

King, and his Instruments of Tyranny, they proceeded in a solemn manner to pronounce the greater Excommunication, in which they Excommunicated the King, and the Bishops, among the Enemies and Contemners of God and his Church. They likewise in the same Declaration protested against a *Popish* Successor; and declar'd that they would never receive the Duke of York in *Scotland*, nor admit him to possess the Crown.

Thus I have given the Reader an abridg'd Relation of what was done on their part. But what Tongue can express, or Pen describe the Usage these poor People receiv'd, and the Cruelties they suffer'd on this Account. ' Not only  
' Time, *says a solid Writer of that Day*, but  
' Heart and Tongue would fail any Christian  
' to relate all the Violences, Murthers, Plun-  
' derings, Extortions, and Insolencies, that from  
' the beginning of this Persecution have been  
' committed in a military way, besides what  
' has been done in the form and course of pub-  
' lick pretended Justice: IF stabbing, wounding,  
' beating, stripping, and imprisoning Mens  
' persons: IF violent breaking into their Hou-  
' ses in the dead of the Night; beating, woun-  
' ding, ravishing, and inhumanely abusing Wives  
' and Daughters. IF forcing weak Women by  
' Tortures, such as burning Matches, and other  
' unsufferable Torments to discover, nay accuse  
' their Husbands, Fathers, and dearest Relations.  
' IF driving away their Cattle, spoiling their  
' Goods without respect to Guilt or Innocence;  
' and this in as cruel a manner as ever *Scotland*  
' had seen, or could have seen, had a foreign  
' Army been in the bowels of their Country.  
' IF all these, and many more such may express  
' our

our Misery, says this Author, some Guess may be made at the Sufferings of this Church from the Malice and Fury of this wicked prevailing Prelatick party.

But we now come to the methods taken with those persons who they could by no other means lay hold upon. These consisted of two sorts, (1.) Those who having been in Arms, and had escaped the Sword of Battle, were fled to the Mountains: Or, (2.) Those who having been mark'd out for Destruction by their Persecutors were withdrawn to the other: Those Men holding fast their Integrity, and having many Ministers among them, kept up their Field-preachings, and enjoy'd the Freedom of their Religious Exercises, notwithstanding the most inveterate Rage of their Enemies; and this, as I said already, provok'd the Persecutors to such a Degree that they were not able to contain themselves, but would flye at the Innocent to punish the Guilty, that is to say, who they suppos'd guilty, for other Guilt they had none.

To punish them then as far as they were able, seeing they could do it no other way; *First*, they intercommuned them; as they call it, forbidding any Person to harbour, hide, comfort, or correspond with any of them; or even so much as to salute, or talk with them on the way, on pain of Treason and Rebellion; and of being prosecuted for the same Crimes which those they so harbour'd, comforted, or corresponded with were charg'd with.

In the next place to disappoint them who were wandring about in Sheep-skins and Goat-skins, in Dens, and Holes, and Caves of the Earth; and effectually to prevent their being reliev'd or supported from their Friends, Relations, or otherwise

wise

wife; they found it absolutely necessary by Troops of Soldiers who were subsisted by the poor Sufferers, to ruin and impoverish the Country by their various Plunderings and Depredations, rather like Troops in an Enemy's Country, than Troops Billited and placed under Discipline.

This was the Case when Justice was transferr'd from the Judges on the Bench to the Soldier in the Field; and this not to the Officers, to the Court Martial, or Assembly of Officers, or Generals; but to the brutal common Soldiers, who neither had Conscience to judge by, Reason to judge from, Sense to guide, Humanity to spare, or Temper to consider who to kill, and who to save.

It would be endless to turn this Account into a *Scots* Martyrology, or a Register of Barbarities. These Sheets are no way equal to a History of such a length; but keeping myself to the Brevity of Memoirs. *Agreeable to my Title*, I shall give some Specimens of the bloody management of this part of the Work; I mean as to this new fashioned way of Persecution, by delivering a naked defenceless People up to the Fury of the common Soldiers; and some flagrant Instances of this kind will be sufficient to describe the rest.

The first I meet with is the Story of a poor Woman and a young Maiden of about 16 Years old in the West of *Scotland*, who were cruelly murdered by some Men belonging to *Grierison* of *Log*, an Eminent Persecutor in that part of the Country. They began by putting the Questions to them abovemention'd; and the first they offered, *as what was most popular at that Time in the World, and best serv'd, as they thought, to expose the persecuted People to the Court*, was that of, *Will ye say God bless the King*. As I have receiv'd this Story from Creditable Witnesses, take it as follows;

The

The Woman told them she would pray to God to forgive the King his Sins: The Maid said she would pray that God would please to give the King Repentance: But *it would be an impious Thing*, said the Woman, *to pray to God to save, that is, to bless a Covenant-breaking perjur'd Magistrate*, and in the Prosecution of his Perjury too: And they both declar'd it was against their Consciences, their Principles, and the Covenant; and that therefore *they could not do it*. The Woman said boldly, That while the King was a *Persecutor of God's People* he was an Enemy to GOD and to the Church of GOD; and she thought it was an abominable Thing to ask of any Christian to pray for Prosperity *to the Persecutors of the Church of Christ*; for that was to say *God speed to them*, Even in the very Persecution itself: She was an undaunted Woman, and challeng'd them to answer her in that particular; but they had nothing to say to her Argument, but thought she would have some Regard to theirs which was, *Pray to God to bless the King — or dye. Will ye kill me*, says the Woman, *because I will not bless those who God curses! the Lord forbid that I should do it, tho' I were to dye a Thousand Times*. Upon this they fix'd a Stake in the Sea at the low Water Mark, and binding the poor Woman and the young Girl to the Stake, let them stand there 'till the Tide flow'd over them and drowned them both, being also tormented almost to Death with the Cold by standing in the Water so long as 'till the Tide was high enough to drown them. However, they both endur'd it with great Constancy, and without the least Offer of Compliance with the barbarous Adversary.

It has been matter of Censure among some, and even of those otherwise in the same Interest, and  
of

of the same doctrinal Principles with those People; when they found that they were so severely nice in this particular of praying for the King; seeing they are bid to *pray for Kings and all in Authority*. But not to make these Memoirs enter into long Disputes of the Points between them and their Persecutors, which is not the work of a Historian. I shall only state and remove the Question in few Words from these poor Sufferers to their Enemies, and leave them to answer it if they know how.

In the first place, it is true they began with these poor Women upon that Question of praying for the King, which was a piece of wicked Policy on their parts; because it was the most popular Question, and by which they thought they made these People odious to the King, and represented them as his particular Enemies; and persuaded him by it to let them go on with their Persecution, which *by the way* they had much ado to prevail in; for the King who was in himself of a merciful Disposition, being often shock'd with the Accounts of their Cruelties and often saying openly he would have no more Blood shed. *I say*, this was a wicked Policy on their Part; for 'tis known they had Three or Four Questions more in their Orders; any of which were of such a Nature, as that the poor People would have suffred Death rather than to have comply'd: for Example, had these Two poor Women answer'd, *Yes, we will say God save the King*; the next Question had been, *Will ye renounce the Covenant?* a Question, which if it were now ask'd in *Scotland*, I believe there are 50000 People would as soon renounce the very Name of Christians; *that is to say*, they would suffer all that humane Nature could suffer rather than

than do it. So that upon the whole, these People did not suffer for a single Opposition of the King's Lawful Authority as was wickedly charg'd on them; but they were given up to Death by a Party, and they singl'd out such points to question them upon as they knew they could not comply with, that they might destroy them; and if these Questions would not have done it, they would have named others for the Purpose.

Farther, it is evident that they refused praying for the King upon a Religious Principle, not upon a Rebellious Principle; and that as they believed the King, *as before*, to be an Idolater, a Persecutor; and an Enemy to God and his People. They believ'd that for them to pray for God to bless him would be either to mock God by seeming to pray for what they did not mean, or really to pray to God to bless the King, even in his persecuting God's People, which would be impious, and was against their Consciences.

As to the other part which *the Objectors alledge*, *viz.* it was a Trifle, and a Thing so small as that they could not answer to lose their Lives for it; we answer that then much less could those Cruel and Inhumane Persecutors answer to take the Lives of poor innocent Women and Children away for so small a Thing, which in the common Judgment, and by their own Confession, was but a Trifle in its Nature.

Likewise if it was against the Consciences and Principles of the poor People, *tho' we were to suppose them misinform'd or uninform'd*; yet they dyed in a Righteous Cause, not as they dyed for refusing to pray for the King; but as they chose to dye rather than to violate their Obedience to the Sovereignty of Conscience, which is a Principle every Christian ought to adhere to. Let

Let these things serve for Answers 'till they can be confuted, to the Persecutors themselves, and to all those who would blacken the Memory of these Conscientious and Zealous People, pretending they were Obstinate, that they threw away their Lives, and that they dyed upon Foundations and Principles which are not to be justified; it is evident they were right in their adhering steadfastly to the known Duty of a Christian, *viz.* of suffering the greatest Evil rather than committing the least Sin. Nay, tho' they were to have it granted, that they were, as I said above, misinform'd in the Nature of the Thing they suffer'd for: It might be observed here, that it was the very Argument used with many of the primitive Martyrs in the Time of the Ten Persecutions: That it was a small Thing but to take a Censor in their Hands, *to seem as if they did sacrifice, tho' they did not*; That the Prayer to the Gods was made by the Priests, and it was a Thing of no Consequence to bow the Head, which they might do as to *Cesar*, and not as to the Gods above; Thus also in the Case of the Martyr'd *Maccabees*, their Persecutors pretended in Clemency to offer them their Lives, if they would but take a bit of Swine's Flesh into their Mouths, tho' they did not swallow it down. But with what Abhorrence did they *REFUSE!* with what Joy and Alacrity did they dye! I mean the primitive Christians as well as the *Maccabees*: Inasmuch that the wisest of the Heathen condemn'd them as Fools; for that they cast themselves away, and lost their Lives, not for the Essential parts of Religion, but for Trifles and Circumstances of no Consequence.

I might insist here upon the evident Testimony, that God was pleased to give even from  
Heaven

Heaven to these suffering People; that the offering up their Lives in this Case was an acceptable Sacrifice to Him, and a reasonable Service in them: And this Testimony was by an almost universal Assistance given them in their Sufferings, filling them with abundant Strength to undergo, Patience to bear, and Comfort, even to Joy and Tryumph under the severest and cruellest Torments that their most inhumane Persecutors could inflict. I take this from an Author who was an Eye-Witness of, and a Fellow-Sufferer in much of it; and therefore give the following Account in his own Words, and from his own Observation, *as follows*,

‘ We shall not, indeed cannot, enter upon the particular Declaration of that Grace, Constancy, and Courage, by which the Lord’s faithful Witnesses were sustain’d, and by which they did bear Testimony to the Word of His Truth: Only this is certain, that many of them, tho’ illiterate and obscure Men, and that when they came to the Scaffold they were hurry’d and interrupted by the Order of the Prelates and Council, and by the Cruelty and Inhumanity of the Executioners and Officers attending; yet they did bear Witness to the Cause of God, and of that Grace and Assurance whereby the Lord upheld them to the Admiration and Astonishment of all the Beholders.

‘ That at *Glasgow* and *Air*, where Eleven of them were Executed, all mean Countrymen; some very ancient, some not above 17 Years old; and that their Enemies caused Drums to be beat round the Scaffold, that they might not be heard; yet were they so little thereby amaz’d, or disorder’d, that as well by Words of Praise and Thanksgiving to God, when they

‘ might

might be heard, and by their Countenances, Gestures, and other Carriage they did bear such Testimony to the Truth, as that thereby many were confirm'd, and their Enemies were made ashamed.

Likewise tho' some at other Times did appear weak and faint-hearted at first, yet so powerfully and abundantly was it given to them *in that Hour*, that out of Weakness they were made strong; and declar'd often, that they had such Discoveries of God's Glory between the Prison and the Gibbet, that all fear was thereby discus'd: And particularly a poor Country Boy, who they Condemn'd at *Air* for refusing the Declaration, which they told him was a Renouncing the Covenant that he had taken at *Lanerck*. This Child thro' Fear, and particularly Ignorance of the Grounds of Christianity, was in great Agonies upon his Soul's Account, greatly fearing to dye, yet not daring to redeem his Life on the Terms offer'd. But after the Prayers and Conference of some good People that had Access to him at *Irwin* two Days before he dy'd, he appear'd so much changed, that on the Morning of his Execution instead of the Depth of Fear and Perplexity, the obtain'd a full Resolution and Joy so much inlightned with the Knowledge of God in and thro' our Lord Jesus Christ, and with the Hope of Salvation thro' His Name; that all that saw him, do bear Testimony to the Grace and wonderful Work of God in his Heart; whereby he went to the Scaffold with Joy, leaping and praising God.

From all which, and the several Testimonies and Speeches which these left behind them in Writing, we conclude and rejoyce, that God

out of the dark Cloud of such a sad and astonishing Providence which has now overspread us, hath brought forth so blessed and so bright a Cloud of Witnesse, strengthened and fill'd with so much Grace and Glory to bear Testimony to His Name *Covenant* and Cause for the Confirmation of all that love and wait for His Salvation.

A further Testimony of this will be seen in the Speeches of some of the Sufferers at the place of Execution ; of which in its Order.

But to return to our Memoirs of Fact, the first Thing the *Highland* Forces were empowered to do, was to press from all the People where they had any Knowledge of their being *Dissenters*, or of their having *Dissenters* in their Families, a *BOND of Conformity*, as they call'd it ; wherein every Person entring into the said Bond was bound, not only for himself, but all under him, *viz.* Wife, Children and Servants, to frequent and keep to his *Parochial Kirk*, or *Parish-Church*, and never to go either to any House or Field-Meeting ; nor *resett*, that is, receive or entertain any that did so, on any Pretence whatsoever ; also to inform against, and to deliver up if in their power, all the Ministers or Preachers, that exercised the Office of a Minister or Preacher, in any such Meeting or Assembly.

Many thro' Fear, complied with these unreasonable Conditions ; not being able to bear the ruin of their Families, and the severity of a Flight into the Mountains, in the Winter Season ; where they had no Comfort or Relief, but struggled with the extremities of Cold, Hunger and Diseases, occasion'd by damp Places to lodge in, want of Necessaries, &c. But others resolving to suffer every thing, that Nature was able

able to support, to preserve a good Conscience, fled to the Mountains, where they had to their Lot exactly what is described in the 11th of the *Hebrews*, ver. 37, 38. *They wandered about in Sheep-skins and Goat-skins, being destitute, afflicted, tormented; they wandered in Desarts, and in Mountains, and in Dens and Caves of the Earth.* This was their Portion, and by this means the Towns were left uninhabited, the Villages desolate, the Lands unlabour'd, *i. e.* uncultivated, and the richest, most populous, and, in Proportion, the fruitfullest Part of *Scotland*, became a kind of Wilderness, and like a House without the Inhabitant.

By this Means however, and by the Rising at *Bothwell*, mention'd before, the Number of those Refugees in the Mountains encreas'd, and the Meetings in the Fields for Publick Worship were more frequent, which still exasperated the Persecutors; and they, being enraged, omitted no Cruelty, no Injustice, no Inhumanity, for the Destruction of them: They very well knew that the People lurking in the Mountains must of Necessity receive Supplies of Food and Clothes, either from their own Families and Friends which were left behind, or of Charity from others; and therefore as first they took care effectually, by Plunder and Rapine, to leave nothing in the Houses of those that were fled, so they persecuted with the utmost Rigour all that were but suspected of harbouring or relieving them.

I shall begin with the Prisoners taken at *Bothwell*. Mr. *Kid* and Mr. *King*, as has been said, and several others, were executed as Traytors; and, as if their Cruelty had been satisfy'd, it was resolv'd in Council to Transport the rest into the

*English Plantations.* Upon the King's Orders and under Pretence of this Transportation, there were 300 of the said Prisoners put on board of a Ship, in Order, as was said, to be sent to the *West-Indies*. These are those of whom Mention is made already, Page 203. of whom this is yet necessary to be said, That altho' they were publickly allow'd Transportation, yet it is certain nothing less than so much Favour was design'd them. Some have said that it was then publickly known that the Council had, *notwithstanding the Order from England*, determined the Transported People for Death; and, indeed, it seems more than probable, seeing (besides what is said before of their not having sufficient Store of Provisions in the Ship for such a Voyage) they sail'd Northward to go to the *English Colonies in America* directly from *Scotland*; which, by the Constituted Law of those Countries, called the *Act of Navigation*, could not be done, neither would any of those Colonies have received them, but have seized upon and forfeited the Ship and Goods that came with them; so that it is certainly more than a Suspicion that the poor People were design'd for Destruction. The Case was thus, when these poor People, I say, were put on board the Ship, and sail'd out of the *Firth of Edinburgh*, it was expected they should have gone directly to *England*, as Ships bound to the *English Plantations* were always used to do, and as indeed they were obliged by the Laws of *England* to do, as above; but, on the contrary, they sail'd Northward to the Coast of the *Orkneys*, where, by Stress of Weather, as was pretended, the Ship was driven among the Rocks, and broken in pieces. The Master and Seamen, and the Persons, or Murtherers rather, who

who had the Guard or Conducting of the Prisoners, easily got on Shore, as has been said; and, had they been permitted, all the Prisoners might likewise have done the same; whereas the Officer who had the Guard of the Prisoners, *with the Master of the Ship*, having, on Pretence of Securing them, lock'd them all down under the Hatches, would not, upon the most earnest and moving Entreaties of even the Seamen and others; nor the Shrieks and Cries of the poor, dying People, suffer the Hatches to be opened, or one of them to be let out.

It seems there was one Seaman who ventur'd his Life on board, when the Ship was just breaking to pieces, and, with an Axe cutting his Way thro' the Side or Deck of the Vessel, let about 50 out, who were every one saved, but the rest all perished, as before.

The best Excuse that the Murtherers ever gave for this, was, that they had strict Orders, whatsoever Port they should go on Shore at, not to let any of the Prisoners go out of the Ship: But this was so trifling an Excuse that none could be satisfy'd with it, for either *they had* Orders, That tho' the Ship was stranded or split they should not let the Prisoners out, or *they had not*; if *they had*, it must be with an Intent in those who gave those Orders to have them perish in such Shipwreck, as it happen'd, and would give a shrewd Suspicion that such a Shipwreck was intended, especially considering how it afterwards came to pass. If no such Orders *were* expressly *given*, then were the Officers Murtherers; for it could not be imagin'd that a general Order not to let the Prisoners go out of the Ship, had any other Meaning, than that he should use all Means possible to prevent their

Escape; but not that they should be drown'd, or that they should be kept in the Ship when she was sinking, any more than a *Mittimus* to a Jaylor, wherein he is to have the Prisoner in safe keeping within his Jayl, (suppose of *Newgate*, or any other Prison) gives him Power, or obliges him, if the Prison-house should be on Fire, to suffer the Prisoners to be burnt to Death, rather than open the Doors to let them out.

It is therefore very reasonable to believe that this wretched Instrument, or Executioner, for he could be no better, had his secret Instructions from the bloody persecuting Council for what was done; and that the Ship was knock'd on the Head on purpose to drown, and cause to perish, the Number of poor Sufferers who the Clemency of the Sovereign had forbid to be put Death in a Judicial way, and who yet the Malice and Rage of the Persecutors would not suffer to live.

Moreover, it has been creditably reported, that those who provided or furnished this Vessel out for her Voyage, acknowledg'd that she was not Victualled at all in Proportion to so long a Voyage, and so large a Number of People as were on board; no, nor any thing like it; nay, it has been said that there was not Provisions on board for the Prisoners, sufficient to keep them alive 14 Days; which, if it is true, would convince an Atheist in such Things, that the Design in putting these poor People on board, was not to Transport, but to Murther them.

Another Argument is still good also against the Persecutors of that Time, *viz.* If they did not approve of the Officers Murthering these poor People, why were they not prosecuted and punished

punished for so horrid and inhumane a Murther, the like of which no Protestant Age or Country can give the History of? But, on the contrary, the Master or Skipper, the Officer of the Guards, and all the rest concern'd, had no Punishment, no Reprimand, neither was any thing done to them, to let them or the World believe they had not done them very good Service.

Thus perished 250 of these good People; I call them so on this most justifiable Foundation, (*viz.*) because that tho' they might have their Lives and Liberties given them by the Sovereign, upon Terms, which, in Conscience, they could not comply with, they *loved not their Lives, to the Death, they refused to accept of Deliverance:* And I call it Murther, because, as it is well known the King's express Orders were that *they should not be put to Death, but be Transported.* The suffering them thus to perish, when it was apparent their Lives might have been saved, was not a Murther only in the Officers, but a premeditated malicious Murther in the Council, who so far conniv'd at and approv'd it, as never to offer any Vindication of themselves from it, or any Resentment against the guilty Persons; for it is a Murther of the blackest and most horrid kind, and which, I think, as before, has not its Parallel in any History.

It has been mentioned also, that there were about 60 more of these Prisoners put on board another Ship for Transportation, who, there being no secret Design to murder them, were suffer'd to go by the ordinary Method, and to sail the usual Way (*viz.*) to *England*; where, as it is already noted, some Difference happening between the Master and Owner of the Ship, so that the Ship did not pursue her Voyage,

and the Prisoners having been made the Property of the Owner, not of the Master; the said Master thereupon, (being also a well inclined Person) open'd his Hatches, and let them all go. I mention this again here on this Occasion, *viz.* that it was very observable, in their Case, that the Government here took no Notice of their Escape, nor did the King order any Search after them, or give any Order to retake them, if found: All which evidently proves, that the Cruelties exercised upon these Sufferers in *Scotland*, proceeded from the Malice and Rage of their Persecutors there, and neither by the Direction or with the Approbation of the King himself; not that this Clemency, which in the King, was rather an Accident to his Nature than a Virtue in his Government, can excuse his permitting these cruel Persecutions, which he had, doubtless, Power to prevent; and therefore was, doubtless, guilty of the Blood that was spilt on that Occasion; which, tho' his Inclination led him not to delight in, yet his Indolence in Government, and his Apostate Principles, suffer'd him to permit. But tho' it is no Excuse to him whose Duty it was to have put a Stop to the Stream of innocent Blood shed under his Authority, it was, on the other hand, a convincing Evidence of the bloody Disposition of his Ministry in *Scotland*, who, thirsting for an Occasion to extirpate the very Name of a *Presbyterian* Church out of *Scotland*, dip'd their Hands in Blood in that most inhumane and unnatural manner, till they made all the West of *Scotland* a Wilderness and a Desolation.

This was the Proceeding against the *Bothwell-Bridge* Prisoners. We shall now see what Usage

Usage they met with who had not been any way concern'd in it.

First, in their Pursuit of the supposed Parties, they established little Inquisitions; and, indeed, they were very properly called so; for they went round the Country in Circuits, where they enquir'd not only who really and actually were in the Rebellion, but who were suspected or believed to be so; and these they took Lists of, make their Return upon; and after this they summon'd them to appear before them, to clear themselves.

If they did not appear, they reputed them Guilty, and declared them to be Rebels Convict.

If they did appear, they were examin'd why they did not go to the King's Camp, in order to fight against the Rebels; and, if they did not give a satisfactory Answer to those Questions, they were committed to Prison, in order to get others to accuse them; where many innocent Persons perished by long and close Confinement, tho' nothing could be laid to their Charge.

If in these Examinations they effectually clear'd themselves of being in the Rebellion, yet an incredible Number were ensnar'd with other unforeseen Enquiries; some were Imprison'd; some Fin'd above the Value of their Estates; others were Condemn'd to Death, for having but seen and spoken to any of the escap'd Rebels, after they had fled from *Bothwell-Bridge*; alledging that it was Treason so to do, and not to discover and apprehend them.

If neither by Examination, Confession, or De-  
*lation, super Inquirendis*, so it was termed  
 in

in their Law,) they were able to reach them, yet many such were Condemn'd and Executed even for their Simple-declar'd Opinion of it, according to the Questions mention'd before, and which we shall speak farther of presently.

Nor was the Number small or inconsiderable of those who were thus dealt with : There is scarce a County or Parish, in those Western Parts of *Scotland*, where several have not been thus Condemn'd ; nor was it easy to prevent the poor People being drawn into this Snare, for when they were brought before the Council, or the Court of Justiciary, it was often extorted from them by Threatnings of Death, and sometimes by Torture, and upon this single Question, in their Courts of Justice (*viz.*) *Whether the Rising at Bothwell-Bridge was Rebellion, and a Sin against God?* I SAY, many, for refusing to answer it, waving the Question, and declaring that they did not think themselves oblig'd to answer, were Condemn'd, and immediately led away to Execution, *for the Mercy of those Courts was such ; that many were Sentenced in the Morning, and Executed in the Afternoon ; nay, some were led immediately from the Bar to the Gibbet, where they were us'd again in the like cruel manner, being not suffer'd to declare their Innocence, or to speak to the People ; but the Drums, being placed round them, were kept beating all the Time of their being upon the Scaffold and Ladder, as has been mentioned already.*

But to return to the Soldiers, to whom, as I said before, these Cruelties not sufficing, Justice was transposed. When we were talking of the Severities of the Courts of Justice, and the Cruelty

rueity of their Executioners, on Pretence of Rebellion, it was sufficient to call it Murther; (for Injustice in Form of Law is the Devil representing an Angel of Light; and killing innocent Men by Legal Process is the worst sort of Murther :) But now we come from Murther to Massacre, for the Soldiers, being now vested with Judicial Authority, went up and down like ravening Wolves, with Mouths open'd to suck the Blood of the Innocent: They seem'd like Men clothed with more Power than they understood, tho' not more than they desir'd; that had a Loofe given to the Excess of what, by their Occupation, they delighted in, I mean Blood; had no Sense of Justice; they knew how to kill, but not how to save; they knew how to destroy, but not how to spare.

Their grand Enquiry was for *Bothwell-Briggen*, as they call'd them: If they heard casually but the least Report of a Man that he was a *Whig* or a *Cameronian* (for so they began now to be call'd) their way of Process was no more than to enter his House, seize upon his Person, and, telling him he was a Rebel, drag him immediately out to the Street, and shoot him at a Post.

If the Soldiers saw a Man in the Road who seem'd in the least shy of them, or that endeavour'd to shun them, they immediately pursu'd him like Blood-hounds; and, if he fled, fired upon him without any further Enquiry.

If, upon searching any strange Person, they found a Bible about him, it was sufficient to charge him with having been at a Field-Meeting, or that he was going to one; either of which was sufficient to set them upon him like Hounds upon a Hare, when they never ceas'd pursuing till they had brought him to Death.

If

If when any were dragging thus to Execution, a Stander-by should offer to intercede for them, or look concern'd, seem to pity them, or lift up a Sigh for them, they would lay Hands on them, and cry, 'What are you, Sir, 'that you seem so much troubled at this? 'Wherefore do you pity them? Are they not 'the King's Enemies? And they were all at 'the Gallows, you should be glad, if you were 'a Friend to the King. Come, can you answer the Questions? And thus they have singled out honest Men among the Spectators, by the meer Trouble which appear'd in their Faces and Countenances for the Sufferings of those that have been thus cruelly handled.

And now, to confirm all these Things by Examples undeniable, the few that are made publick are indeed sufficient to silence the Tongues of any that pretend to deny the Fact; but, alas! they are nothing, compar'd to the Number of those that many yet living can give an Account of from their own Knowledge and Memories.

Besides the publick Accounts given by Name, and of which Lists have been printed, we find several Instances of Cruelty not made publick, especially in this Case of the Soldiers having Power given to kill and save as they pleased.

A Lieutenant and three Soldiers passing by the Road, found a Man sleeping on the Side of a Bank, and a small Pocket-Bible lying by him; whereupon one of the Soldiers waking him, brings him to the Lieutenant. The Lieutenant ask'd him who he was: He told him his Name, Place of Abode, and whether he was travelling, (*viz.*) going to *Fife*, being 'a Weaver by Trade. They ask'd him then *if he would pray for the King.*

*King.* He said, *Yes, with all his Heart* : Upon which the Lieutenant was about to let him go ; but one of the Soldiers unhappily put in : *But, Sir, will you renounce the Covenant ?* The Man hesitated a little, but being urged and insulted, cries out, *Lord, forgive me, that I fear'd to own thy Work* ; and then speaking to the Lieutenant, *Indeed Sir, says he, I'll as soon renounce my Baptism, (or to that Purpose,) I know your Power, work your Will with me* ; upon which they shot him upon the Spot.

A Party of Dragoons in *Nithsdale* had Information that Six *Bothwell-Brigg-men*, as they call'd them, were harbour'd in the House of a Country-man near hand ; they immediately beset the House, and, breaking in, they found Four Men there and the Master of the House ; and, without enquiring whether they were guilty of the Rising or not, brought them all out of the Door, and shot them dead, refusing to give them a Minute's Time to pray to God, but swearing and blaspheming when it was but beg'd for by the Persons.

The Writer of this has heard the late Lieutenant-General *Maitland* express great Abhorrence of the Cruelties committed by Major *Balfour*, Captain *Douglafs*, General *Dalziel*, and several others, who would take Pains to search out such Men as they thought did but shun to be seen, and, with little or no Examination, shoot them upon the Spot ; which he, being then under Command, could no way prevent : But many times, when Power was in his Hands, he either facilitated their Escape, or otherwise prevented the Mischief intended.

In a Village not far from *Hamilton*, a poor Tradesman was beset in his House, while at  
his

his Work, by Five Soldiers, his Name *Lawson*: They call'd to him to come down the Stairs, which he refus'd to do; upon which all the Five Soldiers fir'd at him, but he, being aware, stood by the Wall of the Chamber and avoided the Shot, and then call'd to them and ask'd them wherefore they came to him, he was no *Bothwell-Brigg-man*. Well then, say the Soldiers, come down, and we will do you no Hurt. The Man, however, knowing they were not to be trusted, came down, but got out of his Back Door, and jumping over two or three low Stone-Walls of the Gardens, got into the Fields; and took him to Flight, being very swift of Foot, and knowing they had just fir'd all their Pieces: They pursu'd him, and, loading their Musquets as they run, fir'd at him again several Shot; but, by good Providence missing him, the Man escap'd to the Hills, but was heard of no more at his own Habitation.

The aforesaid Lieutenant-General *Maitland* was then an Officer among these bloody Troops, and was, with some Soldiers, quarter'd in *Glasgow* but, being a Man of generous Principles, and of too much Humanity to be guilty of such Things as these, was a great Relief to the persecuted People, for he shelter'd and protected many who otherwise had been murther'd by the Soldiers; and if he was commanded on the Service which he abhorr'd so much, (*viz.*) to fall upon the poor People in their House or Field-Meetings, would frequently, by trusty Messengers, give them private Notice, that they might have Time to disperse and be gone away; and would often find out some Occasion to make his Men halt by the Way, that his Messengers might not come too late.

Yet this compassionate Gentleman was forc'd (much against his Will, being under Command) to be present at a Village where three poor Men, Weavers by Trade, were dragg'd from their very Loom where they were at work, and, without Mercy, shot to death. Their Names are in the publick List mention'd before.

They tell us another Story of a Soldier, not so divested of Humanity as most of them were, and who meeting a Man upon the Road who he suspected was one of the poor out-law'd pro-scrib'd People, *as indeed he was*; the Man was surpriz'd, and would have got from him, but he saw it was in vain, and yet the Soldier soon let him know that he was not very much inclin'd to hurt him, much less to kill him; whereupon the following Dialogue, as it is said, happen'd between them.

The Soldier seeing the Country-man willing to shun and get away from him, begins thus.

Sold. *Hold, Sir, ye mon no gang frae me, I have muckle Business at you.*

C. Man. *Well, What's is your Will then?*

Sold. *I fear ye are one of the Bothwell-Briggmen. What say ye to that?*

C. Man. *Indeed no, Sir, I am not.*

Sold. *Well, but I mon speir some Questions at you; and ye's answer me right, ye and I'll be good Friends again.*

C. Man. *What Questions will ye ask at me?*

Sold. *First, Sir, Will ye pray for the King?*

C. Man. *Indeed, Sir, I will pray for all good Men. I hope ye think the King a good Man, or ye wou'd not serve him.*

Sold. *Indeed do I Sir, I think him a good Man, and ye are all wicked that wo' no pray for him.*

\* But

\* But what say you then to the Business of Bothwell-Brigg—Was not Bothwell-Brigg a Rebellion?

\* By this Time the poor Man began to see the Soldier was not desiguing to hurt him, and he took the Hint, and was encouraged to answer as he did.

C. Man. I wot not weel what to say of Bothwell-Brigg: But and they took up Arms there against a good King, without a good Cause, it mun be Rebellion, I'll own that.

Sold. Nay then, I hope thou and I'se be Friends presently, I think thou'lt be an honest Man. But they have kill'd the Archbishop of St. Andrews, honest Man: O that was a sore Work, What say you to that, was not that Murder?

C. Man. *Alas poor Man! and ha' they kill'd him! Truly and he were an honest Man, and they have kill'd him without any Cause, Weel I wot it mun be Murther; What else can I call it?*

Sold. Weel hast thou said, Man: Now I have een but ane Question more, and ye and I'se tak a Drink together. Will ye renounce the Covenant?

C. Man. Nay, but now I mun speir at you too, and ye like. There are twa Covenants, Man, which of them do you mean?

Sold. Twa Covenants, say you, what are they?

C. Man. There's the Covenant of Works, Man, and the Covenant of Grace.

Sold. Fou fa me and I ken Man; but een renounce ane of them, and I am satisfy'd.

C. Man. With au my Heart, Sir, indeed I renounce the Covenant of Works with au my Heart.

Upon this Dialogue, if the Story be true, the Soldier let the poor Man pass: But be the Story true or not true, it serves to give the Reader a rruer Idea of the dreadful Circumstances every

every honest Man was in at this time, when their Life was in the Hands of every Soldier, nor was the Consequences other than might be expected on such Occasions ; the Fields, the Roads, the Villages every Day bearing Witness to the Murthers that were committed, and to the injurious and abominable things which the poor People suffer'd from the Rage of the Soldiers who were then inhumanely let loose upon them. The following is but a small part of the Account of the Bloodshed in this manner in one part of the Country, and mostly within the Year 1685, by which may be judg'd a little what was suffer'd from the rising at *Bollemwell* Bridge, which was in 1679 to the Revolution in 1688.

*Graham* of *Claverhouse* the same who was afterwards Viscount of *Dundee*, and was kill'd at the Fight at *Gillicranky* in King *William's* time, was at this time a most furious Persecutor of these poor People ; it was his Rage in falling upon one of their Field Meetings, where he met with a Repulse was the Occasion and beginning of which the rising at *Bothwell* as have been shewed already. This Man is said to have kill'd above 100 Men in this kind of cold blood Cruelty ; making it his business to follow, and pursue poor People thro' the whole Country, and heaving at his Heels a Crew of Savages, Highlanders, and Dragoons, whose sport was in Blood, and whose Diversion was to haul innocent Men out from their Houses or hiding Places and Murder them ; his Companion in this Work was Colonel *James Douglass*, since call'd Lieutenant General *Douglass*. These two with their Men kill'd 28 Men in a very few Days, and at several places in the Shire of *Galloway*, most of them without the least Evidence of their being Guilty, all of them without any legal Pro-

secution and some without so much as Examination.

At their first coming down they found five Men in several Prisons, who had been committed by other Persecutors before their coming : It seems somebody had maliciously told this † *Graham* that they were of the Whiggs that used the Field Meetings ; upon which without any Oath made of the Fact, or any Examination of the Men, without any Trial or other Sentence, than his own command his bloody Soldiers fetch'd them all to *Mauchlin*, a Village where his Head Quarters were, and hang'd them immediately, not suffering them to enter into any House at their coming, nor at the Entreaty of the poor Men, would permit One to lend them a Bible who it seems offered it, nor allow them a Moment to pray to God.

Four more Men who were betray'd to him, being hid in a House at the Water of *Dee*, and were at the Time his Men came praying together ; he caused them to be drag'd just to the Door, and shot them Dead as they came out, without any Enquiry whether they were the Persons that he came to apprehend ; their being found praying to God was it seems sufficient Testimony of their Party and Offence ; after this, coming to the same Place, at two or three Days distance, and understanding the People of the Town had buried the Bodies, he caused his Men to dig them up again, and commanded that they should lye in the Fields : The Names of these four were *John Grier*, *Robert Ferguson*, *Archibald Stuart* and *Robert Stuart*.

---

† Note, God did not permit him to have time at his Death to pray or repent, but he was kill'd, even in the very Article of Victory.

At *Camorel* in the County of *Carrick*, he saw a Man run hastily cross the Street before his Troop, and as he might suppose did it to escape from or avoid them, tho' as the People of the Place related it, the poor Man had no Apprehensions of them, but as he took all Occasions for his bloody design, he commanded his Men to shoot this Person, without so much as Examining him, or asking who he was, the poor Mans Name was *Matthew Mckellwrat*.

The same Party having intelligence, that there were several of the Whiggs hid in a great Cave among the Hills of *Glencairn*, that the People resorted to them to pray together, and that several Women carry'd them Provision and Coal to burn to warm them. Col. *Douglafs* sent a small Party who surrounded the Hill, and drew five Men out of the Cave, it seems there had been near Fifty there just before having met to pray, but were separated again; had they been all there, *Douglafs* had not had them so cheap, for being all Arm'd, it was likely they would have sent him back faster than he came, heaving but 18 Dragoons with him; these five however, who it seems were betray'd by one \**Watson*, this Col. *Douglafs* dragg'd out of the Cave and immediately shot them dead, not giving them time so much as to recommend their Souls unto God.

The Names of the murther'd Men were, *Robert Grierson*, *Robert Mitchel*, *James Bennoch*, *John Edgar*, and *John Gibson*.

---

\* Note, After the Revolution this *Watson* who betray'd them was seiz'd by some of the Relations of these poor Men, and put in Prison as *Drumfreis*, but they did not put him to Death as he deserv'd.

The same wretched Gang coming to a House where they had been inform'd one *Welch* a Field preacher was harbour'd, or was to be found, they rush'd violently into the House, but found ; not the Man they sought, neither indeed was he there ; but they found five Men together, with the Women and Children of the Family all on their Knees at Prayers ; whereupon without Examining any farther, they said it was a seditious Meeting which was forbidden by the Council, and thereupon instantly dragg'd out the Men and shot them to Death before the Door.

*John Smith*, was shot to Death by two Soldiers at *Lismehago*.

*William Skillilew*, was shot by one Lieueenant *Saunders* in the River *Air*.

*John Ferguson*, *George Whitburn*, and *Patrick Gemmil* at *Finnick* by two Soldiers.

That murdering Persecutor *Graham* of *Claverhouse*, seeing a Man riding by him on the way, called after him, and the Man not making answer, nor stopping his Horse, *Graham* caused one of his Soldiers to shoot him dead, as he rode along, whereas, upon Enquiry into the matter, it was found that the poor Man was Deaf and could not hear him call to him ; the murdered Man's Name was *Robert Auchinleck*.

*William Adams*, at the *Wallwood* in *Kyle*, going along the way, and seeing some Soldiers at a Distance, hid himself in a Thicket thinking to shun them, but being discover'd by the Soldiers, they instantly shot him without so much as asking his Name, or enquiring after any other Guilt, than his shunning to meet them.

*Capt. Douglass* seiz'd a Taylor and shot him dead, only because he had some small Pieces of Lead about him, such as the Taylors put in the  
Sleeves

Sleeves of Women's Clothes; and another of that persecuting Family of the *Douglafs*, shot on no other pretence than because he had a Flint in his Pocket; these things it seems they call'd Ammunition: At another House he shot a Man because he attempted to escape from him, tho' he had no Knowledge of the Man or any Charge against him.

Several were kill'd in the dark, being shot by they knew not who, or for what; the Highlanders shot Men for their Sport without asking them any Questions, and answer'd that they could not mistake for all the Country were Rebels.

Most of these mentioned above, were massacred in the Year 1685, and in one Count, besides many more in all parts of the West Country; the Dragoons patrol'd all over the Country, by Night as well as by Day, so that the distress'd People who lay hid in the Mountains, could not come down to the Houses of their Friends in the Night, as they usually did for Succour, and so retreat again in the Morning before Day; but now they got no Liberty to come down, but at the utmost hazard; so that their Wives and Children, or Relations, and sometimes Charitable and Compassionate Christian Friends, went to them to the Hills, and to the Caves and Holes in the Earth, where they were harbour'd, to carry them Necessaries and Relief, and without which they must have perished, for meer want of Food; and notwithstanding which they endured in those vast and desolate Hills, inexpressible hardships, extremities of Cold, without Covering, without Shelter, without Fuel in the deepest of Winter, and often without Food and without Light: A List of Threescore and Eighteen Men by Name has  
C c 5  
been

been published, who were massacred by the Persecutors named above, and of whom some of those named here were a Part, but the Number who were thus hunted down and Murther'd by the Highlanders, and the Dragoons, in the whole Country, is not to be reckon'd up, and is indeed Incredible.

The Writer of these Memoirs, having talked with many Sober and Judicious Persons, who lived in that part of the Country at that time, and were Eye Witnesses to much of it, found that they all agreed in this, that many Thousands of People perished under the violent Hands of these Men, besides those killed in the Field of Battle at *Pentland Hills, Bothwell, &c.* And one Reverend Minister of the Church of *Scotland*, assur'd the Writer hereof, that taking in the People who dyed in Prisons and in Banishment; there was an Account taken of above Eighteen Thousand People, whose Blood these Persecutors have to Account for, besides the Numbers who at the time of the Revolution were actually in Prisons, in the Isle of the *Bass, Dumnotter Castle, Blackness, Edinburgh*, and other Places, amounting to a very great Number.

And yet here it cannot be omitted, that to the Honour of the Cause, these People suffered in, and in justification of the Principles which they acted from; we must observe, that their Number was so far from being diminished, or themselves, or their Ministers, from being discouraged, that on the contrary, they encreased prodigiously in Number, neither were their Meetings ever destitute of Ministers, nor were they ever so discouraged as to give over Meeting for the publick Worship; resolving not to forsake the assembling themselves together, where they praised

fed God in singleness of Heart, and with Joy Embraced the Opportunities tho' at the hazard of their Lives.

I cannot Express this more fully than in the Words of the Sufferers themselves left upon Record by one of their own Fellows in Affliction, thus, (*viz.*) ' To speak of the Numbers, *says he,*  
' we must do Justice to the Miracle of God's  
' Working, whereby the very means used to ex-  
' tirpate us from the Face of the Earth, was by  
' the Wise Disposer of all things, made to en-  
' crease our Numbers ; for that albeit they went  
' on for many Years imprisoning, banishing, and  
' butchering our dear Brethren, yet all the Pri-  
' sons they could fill with us, and all the Ships  
' they could freight with us, and all the Gibbets  
' they could hang us on, could never either ex-  
' haust or lessen our Number, but the more we  
' were Afflicted, the more we grew, and the  
' design to Destroy us, thro' the Mercy of our  
' God, prov'd always ruinous to the Destroyers ;  
' and this must be acknowledged to the Praise  
' of God's Clemency, and the Condemnation of  
' Man's Cruelty, that when they had Tried all  
' ways possible to destroy us, and root us out  
' from the Earth ; after they had hang'd, shot,  
' tortur'd and banished for Slaves, all they could  
' catch of us, they were further from their pur-  
' pose than when they began : Our Numbers  
' were not diminished, our Meeaings for Gospel  
' Ordinances were not disappointed, but we  
' enjoy'd the administrations in their Purity, and  
' Power, with greater Certainty, and met toge-  
' ther in greater Numbers than ever, for that  
' our Numbers encreased more and more : That  
this was true, their Enemies openly acknow-  
ledg'd, and this enraged the Persecutors so much

the more, and that to such a degree that they once resolv'd on a general Massacre of all together by the Troops of *Heretors*, Dragoons and *Highland Men*, who, forming themselves into a great Army, spread themselves from one Side of a whole County to the other, having their Men placed, marching single at a great Distance, but always one in Sight of the other ; so marching forward, every one straight before him, they by this Means searched the Rocks , Rivers, Woods, waists, Mountains, Mosses, and every the most private and retired Places of the County, where they thought we were hidden ; so that it was impossible any thing could escape them : And yet so true were the Mountain-Men, as their *Persecutors call'd them*, to one another, that in all that famous March they found not one Man, tho' many a good Man perhaps, with trembling Heart and Hands lift up to Heaven for Protection, saw them, and were pass'd by them undiscover'd.

Failing in any Enterprize of this Nature, and being disappoynted in their Prey, always, redoubled their Fury at those who fell into their Hands : It was not far from *Edinburgh* that a Field-Meeting was appointed, and not the Minister only, but a great many People went out of that City, at the Hazard of their Lives, to have been present at it ; when, on the Way, they got Notice that the Appointment had been discovered, and that Soldiers were coming to fall upon the People. The faithful Spies, that gave them Intelligence of this, did it so timely and so prudently, that the Soldiers found no-body assembled at the Place : But their Rage doubling at the Disappoyntment, they fell upon every one they met in their Return,

and

and chiefly upon the poor Women and Maid-Servants, charging them with being actually going to the Field-Meeting, tho' not present at it: Besides the Rudeness and Insolence of another Nature which they offer'd to the Women, as upon all such Occasions was their Manner, they carry'd about 30 Women to *Edinburgh*, and Four or Five Men, where they were put in Prison, some in the Tolbooth, some in the Correction-House, tho' Persons of good Fashion and Families; and of these 7 or 8 were at several times put to death, principally upon their refusing to renounce *the Covenant*, and to make Declarations condemning their Principles; and on acknowledging their being on the Way to a their Meeting. One poor Servant-Maid, belonging to a Citizen's Wife of *Edinburgh*, being with her Mistress, and having her Mistress's Bible under her Arm, was taken by the Soldiers, her Mistress escaping by running into a Stable: The poor Maid, being examin'd upon no other Suspicion but having the Bible, boldly own'd she was going to the Field-Meeting, but refused to accuse her Mistress, or any one else; whereupon they threaten'd her with the Torture, to make her confess. She answer'd, she was ready to endure Torture or Death, and talk'd to them with such Presence of Mind, such Strength of Reasoning, and such Chearfulness, as made them both mad and asham'd: They sentenc'd her to be hang'd in the Street of *Edinburgh*, and another young Woman with her. She receiv'd the Sentence with rejoicing, and lifting up her Hands and Eyes, gave God Thanks, that had thought her worthy to suffer for her Testimony to the Truth of Religion, and the Purity of his Worship.

The Cruelty of the Persecutors was farther remarkable in these poor young Women's Suffering, that they brought them to their Execution with two Murtherers, (*viz.*) two Wretches condemn'd for murdering their Bastard-Children, mixing them together that the Common People might imagine they were all guilty of such Crimes, or that at least they might not be known asunder by the Crowd of Spectators ; but they easily discover'd the Difference by the Manner of their Behaviour, while these two appear'd with smiling Countenances, singing Psalms, and in a chearful inimitable Frame ; the other dejected, confused, and, to say all in a Word, like what they really were.

It would be endless to give an Account of the Manner of Execution, the Behaviour of the Suffering People in their Imprisonment and at their Execution, or the Cruelty of the Judges in Torturing those who were brought before them, with that truly barbarous Engine for Torrture unknown to all the World but to *Scotland*, call'd the *Boot* ; by which, the Leg being put in, and the Wedges driven with a great Maul by the Executioner, the Bone has been entirely compress'd, and the Marrow of the Bone has been seen to burst out thro' the macerated Flesh.

Yet it was not found that any one of those who were thus tortur'd yielded to the Tormentors, either to accuse themselves or betray others. Mr. *Hugh Mackail*, a young Man of about 24 Years of Age, and being what they call a Probationer for the Office of a Minister, but not yet a Minister ordain'd, was Licentiat, and had preach'd some time before the turning out of the Presbyterians at the Restoration, he is an eminent Example of this : His Case, in short, is as follows ;

Being

Being a young Man of promising Parts and great Elocution, he was appointed to preach in the Great Church at *Edinburgh* the Sabbath before the Turning out of the Ministers; and his Subject, as might be expected, related to the cruel Persecutions which the Church of God, in all Ages, had undergone from the Enemies of Jesus Christ and his Kingdom; it was suggested that he carry'd on a Parallel between the Persecutions of the People of God in the *Jewish* Church, and those of the People of God in the Presbyterian Church of *Scotland*: And it was very particular and surprizing to many that heard him, when he told them the Church were persecuted by a *Pharaoh* upon the Throne, a *Hamman* in the State, and a *Judas* in the Church; by whom he was suppos'd to mean King *Charles* the II<sup>d</sup>. then reigning upon the Throne; the Duke of *Lauderdale*, then principal Agent in *Scots* Affairs; and the Archbishop of *St. Andrews*, an Apostate from the True Church, and then the most false Betrayer, and at that time, the most implacable Persecutor of that very Church which he had before been a Member and Minister of.

It seems the Archbishop, who was seldom known to forgive any one, had not forgotten, this tho' it was in the Year 1661, four Years before: And it was not many Days after his preaching that Sermon, that a Party of Soldiers was sent to seize him; but he got notice of their Design, and convey'd himself away into the West, where he continu'd retir'd till the Affair of *Pentland*, of which Mention has been made, when being oblig'd, as he thought, to join with his Brethren in renewing the Covenant, he went to *Lanerk*, where that solemn renewing the Covenant was perform'd, as has been observ'd

Page . . . . . When they were defeated at *Pentland*, it happen'd this young Man was taken and brought in Prisoner to *Edinburgh*. The Archbishop remember'd the Sermon and the Man, and had his full Revenge upon this Occasion, as the Event shew'd: Mr. *Mackail* was not taken in the Action, neither was he in it, nor was he taken in the Company of any that were in the Action; but meerly, and unpolitickly enough, as travelling on the Road; for the Weakness of his Constitution having render'd him unable to bear the Fatigues of marching, or the Rigour of the Season, he was oblig'd to leaye the Body of Men who march'd after to *Pentland-Hills*, being no longer able to endure it; so parting from them at a Place call'd *Cramond-Bridge*, he was taken by some Countrymen who were sent out to stop the Passages, to prevent the Escape of the Rebels, as they were then call'd.

Being taken and brought to Council, he was committed to the *Tolbooth*, and several times examin'd, and at length tortur'd to make him confess himself guilty, which however they could not make him do; the Archbishop of *St. Andrews* being present all the Time of his Torture, as one of the Judges, appointing and directing the same: A terrible Work indeed it was for a Christian Bishop! but very agreeable to the rest of his Character, if we may believe what was generally said of him at that Time among even indifferent Men.

They question'd him likewise, upon Torture, to declare what was the original Cause and Design of that Insurrection. He answer'd, he knew not any more of it, than that it was occasion'd by the Cruelty of *Sir James Turner*, who  
having

having been resisted by some People who could no longer bear his Violence; that Resistance having expos'd them to the Revenge of the Soldiers, and the Apprehensions of that Revenge having made them desperate, that very Accident drove them to take Arms, as has been observ'd before in the Accounts given of that Action.

They were not satisfy'd with this Answer, but press'd him to declare all he knew of that Affair; and, upon his declaring he knew *no more*, they order'd him to be tortur'd: At every Blow the Tormentors struck, they ask'd if he would confess; and upon receiving still the same Answer (*viz.*) *That he knew no more than he had told them*, they renewed the Torture till he had received Eleven Strokes of the Hang-man.

It seems they had been heated the same Morning, and their Fury increas'd, by having just before tortur'd another Gentlemen (*viz.*) Mr. *Nicholson* of *Corsock*, in a most terrible manner.

Here, for the Information of the *English* Reader, or other Stranger to the Customs and Judicatories of *Scotland*, it is necessary to note, that this Examination by Torture is always done in the Presence of the Judges, who order the Tormentors when to begin, how long to proceed, and when to stop, and interrogate the Sufferer all the time, and in the Interval of their Blows.

‘ Mr. *Mackal*, says an Author who relates that  
 ‘ Story, having before declar'd ingenuously all  
 ‘ he knew, could not be mov'd by the Torture  
 ‘ to express any Impatience or Bitterness, tho'  
 ‘ the Torture was in it self very violent and  
 ‘ terrible, by reason of the Compressure of the  
 ‘ Flesh, Sinews, and even the Bones, by the  
 ‘ Force of wooden Wedges driven in with a  
 ‘ Ham-

' Hammer in a double and unusual Measure,  
 ' even to 10 or 11 Strokes, with considerable  
 ' Intervals; all which he sustain'd most con-  
 ' stantly and christianly: But before he received  
 ' the last three Strokes, he protested solemnly  
 ' in the Sight of God, That he could say no  
 ' more, tho' all the Joints of his Body were in  
 ' as great Torture as that poor Leg; and de-  
 ' sires to know what could hinder them to be-  
 ' lieve one of his Profession, who had so so-  
 ' lemnly declared, as in the Sight of God, that  
 ' he knew no more than he had told, viz.  
 ' That, to the best of his Knowledge, the Ri-  
 ' sing in the West was meerly occasional, upon  
 ' a Discontent between the People in the *Stewartry*  
 ' of *Galloway* and Sir *James Turner*, to which  
 ' every one did run as their Hearts mov'd  
 ' them, when they heard of it.

The Violence of this Torment threw him  
 into a Fever, and yet could not these merciful  
 Judges be prevail'd with to respite his Appearing  
 before them above one Day, tho' two Physicians  
 and a Surgeon certify'd his dangerous Condition,  
 and he petition'd for a Delay on that Account:  
 Accordingly the next Day he was rather dragg'd  
 or carry'd than went to their Bar, and was con-  
 demn'd to die; on the third Day after which  
 was executed accordingly.

There is another of these Sufferers who can-  
 not be forgot when we are Recording the Zeal  
 of the Church of *Scotland's* Martyrs, who, in  
 Imitation of the Primitive Zeal of the first Cen-  
 turies, offer'd himself to the Sacrifice, without  
 any one laying Hand on him. This was *James*  
*Nicol* of *Peeble*.

He was occasionally at *Edinburgh* when three  
 of the Western People were to be brought to  
 their

their Affize or their Trial, for refusing to answer the wicked ensnaring Questions so often mention'd in these Memoirs. He went to the Justiciary Court to see them Try'd : It grieved his Soul to see three innocent Men deliver'd, as meek Lambs, into the Hands of the Butchers, to be slaughter'd : It mov'd his Passion to see the Tyrannical Behaviour of the cruel Judges and Perfecutors, insulting and reviling the Sufferers ; and much ado he had, as he express'd himself, to restrain his Anger from breaking out upon the Spot, and from reproaching them with shedding innocent Blood ; but was in part satisfy'd and appeas'd, when he heard the three Sufferers, who were his dear Friends and Brethren in the Cause of God, answer with such Chearfulness and Courage as put their Enemies to Shame.

He went from the Court however grieved in his Spirit, having seen them Condemn'd, and heard the bloody Sentence pronounc'd ; and that, it being then about 11 o'th' Clock, they were order'd to be carry'd not back to Prison, but from the Court where they receiv'd their Sentencce, to the Place of Execution.

Mr. *Nicol*, not intending to see the sad Sight, order'd his Horse to be brought out about One o'th' Clock, to return to his own House, but was oblig'd to stop at the West Port of the City to have his Saddle mended ; while he was staying there, he saw the People running, and, asking what it was for, was told the three honest Men were bringing to the Place of Execution, and looking up the Street saw them ascend the Scaffold, which was in View of the Place where he stood : This moved him to walk up the Grass Market to see them die. Now he was no longer able to contain, being moved with a strong

strong Zeal against these Murtherers: But he crys out in the midst of the throng; *they had murther'd Three of God's Servants, contrary to their own Laws, and in a most Barbarous and Inhumane manner.* Hereupon he was immediately apprehended, this was on the 10th of *August* 1684, on the 18th he was examined before the Council, where they were astonish'd to find that he, against whom they had no Accusation, was bold to declare himself in the most dangerous Questions, and rather 'sought the Martyrdom he expected, than that he would endeavour to avoid what they had to Infiict, as the Reader will see by the manner of their Interrogating him, and his Answers penn'd by himself as follows.

**F**IRST, I was Interrogate by two in a Room privately thus. Question, Was you at *Bothwel Bridge*? *A.* I am not bound to be my own Accuser; I am not (said one of them) to desire you, but only say upon your Honest Word, that you were not there. *A.* I am not bound to satisfy you, but Prove what you have to say against me, and especially you, till I come before my Accusers. Well, said he, I am one of them. Then I Answered, I was there. *Q.* How came you to rise in Arms against the King? *A.* Because he has broken the Covenant of the Lord my God. *Q.* Was the Prelate's Death Murther? *A.* No, it was not Murther. *Q.* Was *Hackstoun's* Death Murther? *A.* That it was indeed. *Q.* How dare you own the Covenant, seeing the King gave Orders to burn it by the Hand of the Hangman! *A.* Yes, I dare own, for altho' ye should escape the hand of Men for so doing, yet ye shall all pay for it, e're all be done, and that

to purpose: As for me I would not do it for the whole Earth. Then I was Interrogate by other two, who asked some frivolous Questions which I baffled to silence. Then I was brought in before the Bloody Crew. What now, Sir, said they, do ye own the King's Authority? *A.* I own all things that the Precious Word of God owns in less or more, and all Faithful Magistrates. *Q.* But do you not own King *Charles* also? *A.* I dare not for a World, because it is Perjury, for he has unking'd himself in a high degree, and that in doing all things contrary to the Word of God and Confession of Faith, and Catechisms Larger and Shorter. *Q.* Know ye to whom ye are Speaking? *A.* I know I am before Men. But (said one of them) ye are speaking to the *Chancellor* and *Members of Council*, Sir. But, said I; AS I have told you already that he has unking'd himself, SO have you degraded your selves from being Princes. *Q.* If the King were here what would you say, Sir? *A.* I know how I ought to speak to the King, if he were King, Sir, is ordinarily said to him; and so to let you know that I am no Quaker, or Erroneous in any thing, but a pure *Presbyterian*, and of a Gospel, Apostolick Spirit; I call you *Sirs*, because ye are Noblemen by Birth, but not because ye are my Judges. *Q.* Will ye not say God bless the King's Majesty? *A.* I dare not bless them whom God hath rejected; ' If any Man bring another Doctrin then ye have received bid him not, God speed, nor receive him into your House 2 *John* 10. And *Psalms* 16. verse 4th says *David*, Their Drink Offerings of Blood will I not Offer, nor take up their names into my Lips, viz." Them that hasten after other Gods, and therefore I dare not Pray for him. *Q.* And will ye not Pray for him

him? *A.* If he belongs to the Election of Grace, he has a part of my Prayers; and also if he were a King that had kept Covenant with God I would give him a double share, and make mention of his Name; but he is an Apostate, (So, my Friends, they looked still one to another at every Question and Answer) *Q.* How Old are you Sir, *A.* I am 51 Years. *Q.* How dare you own the Covenants seeing we have burnt it by the hand of the Hangman. *A.* Sir, I dare own them upon all Perills whatsoever to the utmost of my Power, all the Days of my Life. And with that they Smiled and Laughed one to another and to me; and said my Days were near an end; I said I am now in your Power, but if ye take my Blood, ye shall take Innocent Blood upon your selves, as in *Jer. 26.* *As for me, I am in your Hands do to me as seems good and meet unto you, but know for a certainty that if ye put me to Death ye shall bring Innocent Blood upon your selves and on this City, and the Inhabitants thereof.* And as for me, if ye take my Blood, it's as Innocent Blood as ever ye did take; for I did never wrong any Man to this Day.

*Q.* Do you go to the Church? *A.* I went ay to the Church, where I could get any faithful Minister to go to; but for your Prelates Kirks, and *Baal's Priests*, I never heard any of them, nor never intends to do, if I were to live an hundred Years: But (said they) Ye shall not live long now Sir.

Then on *Tuesday* they called me before them, again, being the 19<sup>th</sup> Day of this Instant. *Q.* What say ye the Day, do you adhere to all ye said Yesterday? *A.* I adhere to all and hail upon all Perills whatsoever. *Q.* Do ye approve of *Bothwell Bridge*? *A.* Yes I do. *Q.* Do you

go to the Kirk at Peebles? *A.* No, nor never intends to go there, nor no Place else, which pertains to the perjured Prelates. *Q.* Do you own the Covenants? *A.* I adhere to every Point of them. *Q.* Do ye own *Airs-Moss, Sanguhair, Rutherglen* and *Lanerk Declarations*? *A.* Yes, I do; because they are agreeable to the Covenants, and Work of Reformation. Many more Questions they asked, which I cannot now particularly remember, but I told them in general, That I was against *Papery, Prelacy, Malignacy* and *Prophanity*, and all that is against sound Doctrine, Discipline, Worship and Government; and all Errors whatsoever, which are contrary to sound *Presbyterian* Doctrine, be what they will; for there is none other right, but erroneous; how fair a Face soever they have, which shall be found not agreeable to the Apostles Doctrine. And then they read some thing of what I had said, and questioned if I would subscribe what I had said. I answered, No, *Q.* Can ye write? *A.* Yes, I can write? Then do it, said they: I said, I would not do it at all, Now, my Friends, I say these are but part of my Interrogations.

Again I was brought before the Justiciary (as they call themselves) on the 20th of this Instant, and interrogate thus: *Q.* What now, Sir, what think you of your self the Day? *A.* I praise my GOD, I am the same I was. *Q.* What think ye of what ye said Yesterday before the *Chancellor* and the *Council*? *A.* I hold all, and decline nothing; no not one Ace. *Q.* Were ye at *Bothwel Bridge*? *A.* Yes, that I was. *Q.* Had ye Arms? *A.* Yes that I had. One of them said, *GOD help you*: And I said, I wote none of ye can pray for your self: said he, I wish you better nor

ye do your self: But I said, No: for ye would have me disown my great LORD, the King of Zion, and obey Man; yea, base Men; *whose Breath is in their Nostriles*, who give out Laws and Commands contrary to his. Q. How dare ye rise in Arms against the King? A. *It is better to obey GOD than Man*, and he is an Enemy to GOD. Q. Would ye rise yet in Arms for the Covenants against the King's Laws, if ye had the Occasion? A. Yes, that I would, say the contrary who will, upon all Peril. Q. What think ye of your self in spoiling the Country of Horse and Arms, Sir? A. Sir, I had not the worth of a Spur Whang of any Man's, but was mounted of Horse and Arms of my own. Q. Where have ye been all this Time? A. Sometimes here and there, in *England* and *Scotland*. Q. Whom have ye conversed with? A. I was about my Business, being a Merchant. They said ye have been about another Business; for ye are found to be *a Fugitive* and *a Vagabond*. A. I have been a Merchant from my Youth. Q. But where had ye your Chamber in this Town? A. I had none these several Years. Q. Where quarter ye in this Town? A. I have not been much in it these 7 or 8 Years: Q. But where was ye the Night, and the last Night before the Execution? A. I was not in Town, I came but in to Port just when the first was cast over. Then they looked one to another, and whispered together; But they would fain have had me wronging my Landlords in all the Parts of the Country, and in all Burghs; but Glory to my LORD, I have wronged none yet, nor yet hopes to do; for it was ay my Care, and Prayer to GOD earnestly, that I might wrong no Man, and that I had rather suffer before any were wronged by me, which he has kepted me from

from to this Day: Then they read what I had said. *Q.* Will ye subscribe what ye have said. *A.* No, no. *Q.* Can ye write, Sir? *A.* Yes, that I can. Well, said they, write down, That he can, but will not. They told me five or six Times, that my Time should not be long, and said to me, Will ye have a Minister? *A.* I will have none of your *Baal's Priests*.

After these Interrogations, and that they had left him for Two or Three Days, on the 22th one brought him the Copy of his Indictment, telling him at the same Time, that on the 27th he would receive his Sentence, and that he would be carry'd directly from the Bar to the Scaffold, which was done accordingly, and where he Dy'd with the same resolute undaunted Courage, that he had behaved with all along.

There was yet another small action in Arms, which the Writers of those Times say little of, they are asham'd to call it Rebellion, they would call it a pursuit of Murderers, but *the Fact was shew*; the Number of the Persons proscib'd was prodigiously Great, who flying into Dens, and Holes and Caves of the Earth, lay concealed in the Hills and Mountains, from whence by the vigilance of their Enemies, they were frequently dragg'd out to Execution and Death, either with or without Process, as has been said. Sometimes as Occasion offer'd, these distress'd People would get together either for their Field Meetings, or to shift from Place to Place, as Occasion offer'd for their Relief, and that they might not be a prey to every single Soldier or Laird, that should meet them Naked and Unarm'd, they carry'd Arms for their Defence; so long only as they were together, separating again as they had Occasion, and then laying by their Weapons.

One of these Parties with Mr. *Richard Cameron* their Minister, the same from whom these Men were after called *Cameronians*, having been together some Days but with no other view, than their own Security as above ; were pursued by the Dragoons, and being surprized as they were lying down upon the Grass for refreshment, at a place call'd *Aird-Moss*, they were oblig'd to fight : The Dragoons who came upon them were about 120 Men, being 3 Troops ; the persecuted People were about 40 Foot indifferently Arm'd, and 26 Horse ; the Horse were led by *David Hackston*, Esq; of *Rathillet*, a Gentleman of a good Family and allyed to some of the best Families in *Scotland* ; he had been proscrib'd long before for the killing the Arch-bishop of *St. Andrews*, tho' as has been observ'd, he was the only Man of that Company who refused to have any Hand in it.— Some say he refused, because he would not have had him kill'd, but others say he refused, because he formerly had a declar'd Quarrel against him Personally, and would not suffer it to be said that he executed his private Revenge ; he that as it will, it is allow'd by all that he was not an actor in the Death of the Bishop, any way whatsoever, but that being with the Persons who kill'd him, he separated from them, and refused to be concern'd in it:

Being forced thus to Fight as above, with so unequal Numbers, Mr. *Hackston* follow'd by 15 Horse, charged up to the very Faces of the Dragoons, and after giving them a Fire from their Carabines, broke into the body of them, where having shewed all the Marks of Bravery and Gallantry possible, being surrounded by Numbers and over power'd, the most of them were Kill'd or Wounded : Mr. *Hackston* seeing his Men broken, fought

fought like a Lyon, and with a desperate Courage made his way quite thro' the Enemy, Killing and wounding several of them with his own Hand; and being got clear, and without receiving any considerable Wound, he made off, but was closely pursued by 4 Dragoons; the goodness of his Horse carryed him from them, and he was in a fair way to have escap'd, when his Horse plung'd into a Bog, from whence he could not get him out: Being thus un-hors'd a Dragoon came up to him who knew him, and offered him Quarter, which he refused, and fought him with his Sword, and would have Master'd him, but Three other Dragoons surrounding him, they knock't him down, giving him several Wounds in the Head, and so took him Prisoner.

Mr. *Cameron* fighting as boldly at the Head of the other part of the Horse, was Killed, and his Head cut off, and carryed with the Prisoners to *Edinburgh*. The Foot being rid down by the Dragoons and Dispersed, fled to the Hills, about 17 of them were killed or taken, and the rest escaped. They carryed Mr. *Hackston* Wounded as he was to *Edinburgh*, where they led him, and Three more of the Prisoners taken at the same place in Triumph thro' the City on a Horse, with his Face to the Horse's Tail, Mr. *Cameron's* Head stuck on the point of a Halberd, being carry'd before him, and another Head in a Sack: His Examination, his resolute Answers, his horrible Torture, and his cruel Execution, are well known to all *Scotland*.

He had been several Times, carryed before the Justiciary Court, as they were call'd, for he would not call them so, where he refused to answer to any Questions whatsoever, declining their Jurisdiction, and protesting against their Authority.

But they resolv'd to treat him for it, in a Method which they doubted not, would bring him to submit to them, wherein however they failed, and were most effectually disappointed; for neither was their threats of Torture, the barbarous loading him with Irons, who had seven Wounds upon him, the refusing to let those Wounds be Dress'd for some Time, no nor at last the Torture it self, prevail with him to answer them.

They would have had him confess the Murder of the Archbishop, but he would not; then they would have had him deny it, but neither would he do that, but steddily adher'd to his Protestation, (*viz.*) That they had usurped the Supremacy over the Church, which belong'd alone TO JESUS CHRIST, and establish'd Idolatry, Perjury, and other Abominations; and in Confiscating themselves therein, had persecuted God's People, and shed innocent Blood, and for this Reason, he would have nothing to say to them, but Declared them open Enemies, to Christ's Kingdom, Competitors with him, for his Crown and Power, and utterly declin'd them *as Judges*. This was the substance of his Answers, upon several Times being brought before them, and it is no Wonder, that they were exceedingly Provok'd at him, as they soon shew'd they were.

Upon *Friday July 30*, being again brought before the *Counsel*, it was asked of him if he had any other thing to say? He answered, That which I have said I will Seal it. Then they told him that they had something to say to him, and commanded him to sit down and receive his Sentence, which willingly he did; but told them they were all Murderers, for all that Power they had was derived from Tyranny, and that these  
Years

Years by-gone, they have not only Tyrannized over the Church of GOD, but have also grinded the Faces of the Poor; so that Oppression, Bloodshed, Perjury, and many Murders were to be found in their Skirts, upon which he was incontinent carried away to the Scaffold at the Mercat-Cross of *Edinburgh*, where he died with great (\*) Torture inflicted upon his Body, nor being permitted to leave any Testimony to the World, except what is comprehended in a few Missives directed to some of his Christian Acquaintance from his Prison in the Tolbooth of *Edinburgh*, which are as follows.

It is impossible to relate all the particulars, of their Persecution, either as to the cruelty of the Persecutors, or the constancy of the Sufferers: what has been said, will serve to open the Eyes of all who are yet Ignorant, and to fill every Christian Reader with Abhorrence of the Practices, and of the very Names and Memories of the Persons who exercised such Cruelties on their *Christian Brethren*.

I say Brethren, because to the Dishonour of the *Protestant* Name, it is said that these Persecutors were call'd *Protestants*.

There is but one thing that either ever was, or indeed could be said to Extenuate the Charge and great Pains has been taken to possess the World with the Notion (*viz.*) that these Men were *Mad-Men*, Enemies to Government, to Monarchy and to Civil Society, that they denyed Magistracy it self, as well as the Person and Govern-  
ment

---

(i) *The Cruelty of Executing Hackston of Rathillet, besides the Torture they before put him to, was indeed Unheard, orb his Hands being cut off, and after his Breast cut open, and his Heart pull'd out, even before he was Dead, as many bear Witness, who saw him Executed.*

ment of the King, and that they were executed as Rebels, not as Religious Persons.

It is needless to answer to any part of this Charge; the profession of the Sufferers at the Place of Execution, and upon all other Occasions against the Enemies they opposed, making it clear that they did not oppose Government or Monarchy as such; but Wicked, Perjur'd and Persecuting *Governors*; These they did oppose, and declare against, as Enemies to God and their Country; and as breakers of Sacred Oaths and Covenants, made both with God and Man: These they Opposed, and thought themselves bound in Conscience to do so, as being discharg'd from all *Civil Allegiance* to them, by the Breach of their Coronation Engagements; and of all *Religious Engagements* to them, by the breaking their solemn Oath to God and his Church; and turning Persecutors of that very Church they had Sworn to maintain; and this they did on the same Arguments which justify'd the Revolution, and on which the *Protestant Succession of Hannover* is now founded; to wit, of taking Arms against perjur'd Princes, who break their solemn Compact with God and their People; Renouncing and Deposing them, and excluding both them and their Race; and blessed be God who has given such a Testimony in our Days, to the Memory of his Saints, and to the truth of the Doctrine and Principles, which these faithful Martyrs in *Scotland* suffered for, by bringing the whole Nation, nay even some of the very Persecutors themselves, to take up those very Principles, with respect to Government and Obedience, that those suffering Christians Dy'd for; and to Expel and Depose, reject and cast off that very Race, and one of those very Kings as Tyrants and Robbers, breakers of their  
Oaths

Oaths, and injurious to the People, which these good People were Persecuted and Murdered for rejecting before. And therefore even the Declaration at *Torwood* as it was call'd, where they Excommunicated the King, and which the Enemies of these good People pretended, to be Enthusiastick, Devellish, Rebellious and Antichristian, and for which said good People were Censur'd, even by their Brethren who accepted of the Indulgences. I say, that very Excommunication is expressly founded upon the same Grounds, as was afterwards the renouncing the King by the Revolution, with this Difference only, that the Reasons given by Mr. *Cargil*, Mr. *Cameron* and the People then call'd *Cameronians* in the Declaration of the *Queens-Ferry*, and the Excommunication of *Torwood*, contain all that is understood in the Memorial to the Prince of *Orange*, from the People of *Great Britain*, to invite him to assist them in Arms against the same King, and much more.

To make this clear, I here give you that famous Excommunication, pronounced by Mr. *Donald Cargil* at *Torwood*, Anno 1684 and only desire the impartial Reader, to compare it with the Memorials abovenam'd, and see if it be possible for any *British Protestant*, who owns the Justice of the Revolution, to reflect upon the Zeal of these People, without blushing for himself, and the whole Nation, that they did not see and abhor the Tyranny of those Reigns sooner: Then they had joyn'd with these People, instead of censuring their Zeal: The Revolution had then been brought about, without Foreign help at all; the Prince of *Orange* had then been call'd over as peaceably as King *George*, to take possession of the Crown, and the Blood of near Twenty Thousand

ſand People, who were one way or other Murther'd or Deſtroy'd, by that now abdicated race of Tyrants, and their bloody Adminiſtration had been ſaved.

What a ſhame it is to us, and how much to the Honour of theſe persecuted People, that THEY could thus ſee the Treachery and Tyranny of thoſe Reigns, when we ſaw it not; or rather that they had ſo much Honesty of Principle, and obey'd ſo ſtrictly the Dictates of Conſcience, as to bear their Teſtimony Early, Nobly, and Gloriously, to the truth of God, and the rights of their Country, both Civil and Religious, while we all, tho' ſeeing the ſame Things, and equally convinc'd of its being Right, yet betray'd the cauſe of Liberty and Religion, by a ſinful Silence, and a dreadful Cowardice; not joyning to help the Lord, or the People of the Lord, againſt the Mighty, ſitting ſtill and ſeeing our Brethren Slaughter'd and Butchered, in Defence of their Principles, which our Conſciences told us, *even then*, were founded on the Truth, and by thoſe Tyrants, who we knew deſerv'd to be rejected both of God and the Nation, and who afterwards we did reject accordingly: *But to Proceed.*

As thoſe Suffering People are abundantly juſtified by the Practice of the whole Nation, in the Revolution, ſo I muſt add, that they are abundantly acquitted of that weak and unjuſt Charge, mentioned before, *viz.* of their being Enemies to Government, and reſuſing to ſubmit to Lawful Authority, by their behaviour in the Revolution; their Chearful joining in it, and their being the firſt that Petitioned the Parliameut to make the Prince of *Orange* King, and promiſing all

all Dutiful Submission to such a King, as they knew would rule in Righteousness, and Defend, not Destroy the Heretage of the Lord; but as this belongs to the next part of this Work, I shall refer to the fuller Account of their Conduct; which will appear in its Place.

*Here follows an Account of the Proceedings at Torwood.*

The Meeting was, in the Fields, at a Place call'd *Torwood*, in the Western part of *Scotland*, the 11th of *September*, 1688, *Mr. Richard Cameron*; *Mr. ———* and *Mr. Donald Cargil*, Ministers; assisting but *Mr. Cargil* Preached the action Sermon from *21. Ezek. 25, 26, 27. And thou prophane wicked Prince of Israel, whose Day is come, when Iniquity shall have an End: Thus saith the Lord God, remove the Diadem and take off the Crown, &c.* In this Preaching, he made first a short Pertinent Discourse, on the Nature, Subject, Causes, and Ends of Excommunication, and declared fully his own Motives then to Pronounce it, and that it was not from any private Spirit, Malice, or Passion, but Conscience of his Duty and Zeal, for the Honour of God, and of his Church; after which, he began as follows, *viz.*

‘ We have spoken of Excommunication, the  
 ‘ Causes, Subject, and Ends thereof, we shall  
 ‘ now proceed to the Action it self, being con-  
 ‘ strained by the Conscience of our Duty, and  
 ‘ Zeal for God, to Excommunicate at this Time,  
 ‘ some of those among us in these Lands, who  
 ‘ have been guilty of such Crimes, as renders  
 ‘ them the proper Subjects of this Censure, and  
 ‘ especially those who have been Authors of the  
 the

the present Mischiefs, to the Church of Christ, in this Nation of *Scotland*, and in doing this, we shall give them the ordinary Names, by which they are called, that it may not be in the least doubtful, who we are speaking of, in so solemn an Occasion.

I Being a Minister of Jesus Christ, and having Authority and Power from him, do in his Name, and by his Spirit Excommunicate *CHARLES II.* King, &c. and that upon the Account of these wickednesses following. 1. For his high mocking the Majesty of God in that, where he had Confest his own Sins, his Fathers Sins, his Mothers Idolatry, and had Solemnly engag'd against them in his Declaration, at *Dunferlin, August, 16. 2650.* and was upon that Declaration, and on the Conditions thereof accepted as King: He has broken the said solemn Engagement, and return'd more avowedly to those Sins, than all that were before him. (2.) For his abhorr'd (a) Perjury in that, after he had Twice solemnly subscrib'd the Covenant; he most Presumptuously disown'd, and Renounc'd it, causing it to be burn'd by the Hangman. (3) For that he has caused all those (b) Laws for establishing Religion and Reformation, and which he had engaged in the said Covenant, to preserve, to be rescinded; and enacted Laws, directly contrary, and is still Working to set up  
*Popery*

---

(a) At the Revolution, they charg'd King James with Perjury, in breaking his Coronation Oath, wherein he had Sworn to maintain the Church, and true Religion.

(b) At the Revolution, they charg'd him with dispensing with the Laws, and setting up his Arbitrary Will, in the Room of the Law.

\* *Poery* among us. (c) (4) For Commanding his  
 \* Armies (d) to destroy the Lords People, who were  
 \* standing in their own just Defence, of their  
 \* Rights, and Privileges, and for the (e) Blood  
 \* he hath Shed, by Land, and by Water,  
 \* of the People of God, for the sake of  
 \* Religion, and of Righteousness, more than all  
 \* the Kings that have been before him in *Scotland*;  
 \* the said People being most willing in all other (f)  
 \* Things, to render him Obedience, if he had *Rigned*  
 \* and Ruled them, according to his Covenant and Oath.  
 \* (5) For that he is still an Enemy to, and a Per-  
 \* secutor of true *Protestants*; a favourers (g) and  
 \* helper of the *Papists*; at Home and Abroad,  
 \* and hath hindred the due Execution of just  
 \* Laws. (6) For his relaxing of the  
 \* Kingdom, by his frequent granting Par-  
 \* don to Murderers, which is expressly contrary  
 \* to the Law of God, and therefore not in the  
 \* Power of any King to do. (7) His great and  
 \* dreadful Uncleaness, Adultery, and Incest; his  
 \* Drunkenness and Dissimulation, with God and  
 \* Man, performing his Promises, where his Engage-  
 \* ments were Sinful, &c.

\* By the same Authority, and in the same  
 \* Name, I Excommunicate and Cast out of the  
 \* True Church, and deliver up to *Satan*, *James*  
 \* Duke of *York*, and that for his Idolatry, as far  
 \* as

(c) King James charg'd with setting up Popery among us.

(d) King James charg'd with keeping up a standing Army in  
time of Peace.

(e) King James charg'd with Arbitrary shedding innocent  
Blood.

(f) MARK THAT, willing to render Obedience, &c.

(g) King James charg'd with helping and favouring Papists.

as concerns *Scotland*, for other Things I read not; and for setting up *Idolatry* in *Scotland*, to defile the *Lords Land*, and his encouraging and drawing others to do so.

Next in the same Name, and by the same Authority, I Excommunicate *James Duke of Monmouth*, &c. For his coming into *Scotland*, upon his Fathers unjust Command, and leading Armies against the *Lords People*; they being constrained to Rise, being Killed in, and for the Right Worshipping of the true God, and for his refusing at *Bothwell*, the Cession proposed by Others.

Next I do by the same Authority, and in the same Name, excommunicate, cast out of the true Church, and deliver up to *Sathan*, *John D. of Lauderdale*, for his dreadful Blasphemy, against the great God, especially those horrible Expressions used by him, to the Prelate of *St. Andrews*, in Prophanation of the Holy Word of God; (viz.) *Sit thou at my right Hand, till I make thine Enemies thy Footstool*: Likewise for his Atheistical drolling upon the Scriptures of God in General; scoffing at Religion, and Religious Persons; his Apostacy from the Covenant and Reformation, and Persecuting thereof, after he had been professor and pleader for, and possessor of the said Covenant, &c. Likewise for his Perjury and Murther, in the Case of Mr. (h) *James Mitchell*; likewise for his Adulteries, and  
Unclean

---

(h) *He was one of them in the Council, who gave publick Faish to Mr. Mitchel, that his Life should be saved, if he would Confess his firing a Pistol, at the Bishop of St. Andrews, and Wounding the Bishop of Glasgow; without which Confession, they could not have put him to Death; notwithstanding which, they not only did make use of this Confession to condemn Him to Death, but made Oath before the Justiciary Court, upon his Tryal and Torture, that there was no such publick Faish given.*

• Uncleanness, for his Counselling and Assisting  
 • the King, in all his Tyrannies, and endeavour-  
 • ring to overturn the true Religion; for his o-  
 • penly Gaming on the Lords Days, and finally  
 • for his usual and ordinary Cursing.

• Next I do by the same Authority, and in the  
 • same Name, cast out of the true Church, and de-  
 • liver up to *Sathan*, *John Duke of Rochest*, &c. For  
 • his Perjuries, in the aforesaid Case of Mr.  
 • *Mitchell*, for his Adulteries and Uncleanness,  
 • and openly allotting the Lords Day for the  
 • same. For his openly professing and avowing  
 • his Willingness and Readiness, to set up *Poper*y  
 • in this Land, at the King's Command, and for  
 • his Barbarous and Unheard of Cruelty, to  
 • that Worthy Gentleman, *David Hackstoun* of  
 • *Rathillet*, whereof he was the chief Author,  
 • Contriver and Commander; and lastly, for his  
 • ordinary Cursing, Swearing, and Drunkeness.

• Next, I do by the same Authority, and in  
 • the same Name, Excommunicate, &c. Sir *Geo.*  
 • *Mackenzie*, the King's Advocate, for his Apo-  
 • stacy in turning to a profligate Conversation,  
 • after he had begun a solemn Profession of  
 • Holiness; for his constant Pleading against,  
 • and Persecuting to Death, the Servants of God,  
 • and alledging and laying to their Charge,  
 • Things which in his Conscience he knew to  
 • be against the Word of God, against Truth,  
 • Reason, and the Laws of this Kingdom: And,  
 • on the other hand, his Pleading for Sorcerers,  
 • Murderers, and other Criminals, that, by the  
 • Laws of God and Man, ought to have been  
 • put to death; likewise for his Ungodly, Er-  
 • roneous, Fantastick and Blasphemous Tenets

publish'd to the World in his Pamphlets and Pasquils.

‘ Lastly, I do by the same Authority, and in the same Name, Excommunicate, &c. *Thomas Dalziel* of *Bins*, for his Leading Armies, and Commanding the pillaging, oppressing, and cruelly murdering the Lord's People; particularly for his Commanding to shoot at Post — *Finlay*, an innocent Person, at *New Mills*, without any Form of Law, Civil or Military, he not being guilty of any thing which they themselves counted a Crime; likewise for his Lewd and Impious Life, led in Adultery and Uncleaness from his Youth, in a Contempt of lawful Wedlock, which is the Ordinance of God; for his Atheistical and Irreligious Life; and, lastly, for his unjust Taking away and Keeping Possession of the Estate of that worthy Gentleman *William Muire* of *Caladol*, and other injurious Deeds in Exercise of this Power.

After he had pronounc'd the above Sentences of Excommunication, he went on to the Purpose following. ‘ I think, *said he*, none that acknowledge the Word of God, the Power deputed to his Church, and the Reason and Nature of that Power, can judge this Sentence to be unjust. The Pretence of its being unformal, without Warnings, Admonitions, &c. is fully answer'd, in that those Men have placed themselves above the Admonitions of Ministers, have repell'd all due Warnings, and wickedly put to cruel Deaths the Servants and Ministers of Christ, who have with Freedom and Boldness adventur'd to give them Warnings and Admonitions, and shut up all Access from us that remain to do the like; and as for Proof of the Fact, I have here charg'd upon them

it.

' it needeth not, the Deeds being notour and  
 ' known, and the most of them such as them-  
 ' selves do avow, and, to their Shame, boast of :  
 ' And *as the Causes are just*, and such as for which  
 ' the Ministers of Christ have in all Ages pro-  
 ' ceeded to the like Sentence, SO it being now  
 ' done by a Minister of the Gospel, and in such  
 ' a Manner as the present Circumstances of the  
 ' Church of Christ, with respect to the present  
 ' cruel Persecution, will admit, the Sentence  
 ' likewise is undoubtedly just also; and there  
 ' are no Powers on Earth, either of Kings,  
 ' Princes, Magistrates, or Ministers of the  
 ' Gospel, can, without the Repentance of the  
 ' Persons openly and legally appearing, reverse  
 ' these Sentences upon any *such* Account: And  
 ' as God, who is the Author of that Power, is  
 ' the more engaged to the ratifying these Sen-  
 ' tences, so all that acknowledge the Word of  
 ' God, and believe themselves subject to his  
 ' Government, ought also to acknowledge them.

' If any shall object, as we hear they do, that  
 ' these Proceedings, tho' not unjust, are foolish  
 ' and rigorous: We answer with that Word of  
 ' Scripture which we have much more reason  
 ' to use than those of whom it is recorded,  
 ' *Gen. 34. 31. Should he deal with our Sister as with an*  
 ' *Harlot?* Should they deal with our God as  
 ' with an Idol; Should they deal with his Peo-  
 ' ple as with Murderers and Malefactors; and  
 ' shall we not draw out God's Sword against  
 ' God's Enemies.

It is true that this Action was the Execration  
 and Aversion of those Times, and of the Sovereign  
 that then Reigned, and to their Reproach  
 it will be Recorded, that two sorts of People  
 blam'd the *Cameronians* for running that length.

*First*, Their Brethren of the Presbyterian Church, who temporis'd at that time, and not thinking themselves called to bear their Testimony in such a manner against the Persecutors ; or perhaps not being able to bear the fury of the Prosecution, consented to receive the liberty of their Worship by the *Indulgence* of the King, and the License of the Bishops : And *3dly*, The good People, as well Dissenters as others in *England* or elsewhere ; who were Ignorant not only of what those People suffered, but of the Principles by which they acted ; and who receiving their Information in a Partial, or Imperfect manner from their Enemies only, or from the other People who join'd not with them, never rightly understood their Case ; which Ignorance, and consequently the Prejudices that attended it, remains to this Day.

As to the *First*, God has been pleas'd to Convince most of those People, that their suffering Brethren were in the Right ; and for the Information of the *Second Part*, these Memoirs are written.

I shall close this Account of Sufferers with Two or Three remarkable Instances, as well of Christian Constancy in the Persons Suffering, as of the Account given by them of the Reason of their then bearing their Testimony against the Power that then Ruled : And the First is in the Death of Mr. *John Nisbet*, who was put to death at *Edinburgh*, Dec. 4. 1685. the first Year of the Reign of King *James VII.*

The account of this Gallant spirited Gentleman, as well as couragious Christian, is thus faithfully abridg'd by one of his near Relations, who was an Eye Witness to his Sufferings.

‘ In the Year 1664 he had a Child born, and  
 ‘ refusing to let it be Baptised by the *Parish Cu-*  
 ‘ *rate*, or Episcopal Parson, he had it privately  
 ‘ Baptised by one of the outed Ministers. The  
 ‘ Persecution being then but newly begun, and  
 ‘ very little Blood shed on that account : The *Cu-*  
 ‘ *rate* enrag’d at this, publish’d in his Pulpit, that  
 ‘ he would Excommunicate Mr. *Nisbet* the next  
 ‘ Lord’s day, and had done so, but that the Day  
 ‘ before he was snatch’d away by Death suddenly.  
 ‘ When the Persecuted People in 1666, met to-  
 ‘ gether at *Lanerck*, and received the Covenant at  
 ‘ *Lanerck*, his Conscience summon’d him to join  
 ‘ with them; and being known, and threatn’d with  
 ‘ Death for that Action, was oblig’d for his own  
 ‘ safety to follow those People, and keep with  
 ‘ them in Arms : At the Fight at *Pentland* he was  
 ‘ sore wounded, stript as Dead, and left among the  
 ‘ Slain, but was preserv’d, and made his escape.

‘ At the Insurrection at *Bothwell*, he joyn’d with  
 ‘ the same People again, and fought openly and  
 ‘ *Boldly* at the *Bridge*; being not only a zealous  
 ‘ Christian, but a Man of great Bravery and Re-  
 ‘ solution, as long as any Man would stand;  
 ‘ and made his retreat and escaped falling  
 ‘ into the Enemies Hands for that time;  
 ‘ but being known, was proscrib’d by Pro-  
 ‘ clamation, and a large Reward offer’d for ap-  
 ‘ prehending him, his Estate and Goods seiz’d,  
 ‘ his Wife and four Children stript of all, and  
 ‘ turn’d out of Doors.

‘ In this Condition he was one of those who are  
 ‘ describ’d in the 11th *Heb.* 38. *They wandred about*  
 ‘ *in Deserts and in Mountains, and in Dens and*  
 ‘ *Caves of the Earth, of whom the World was not*  
 ‘ *worthy*, and thus he lived, Suffering as we may  
 ‘ say, all kinds of Distress, from the Year 1679

to 1685; above six Years, *not accepting Deliver-*  
*ance*, that he might preserve to himself the free  
 enjoyment of the Gospel faithfully Preached in  
 the Fields and Hills; whether he, and a select  
 Company, such as he was, came always well  
 Arm'd, as well to defend themselves, as to Pro-  
 tect their Ministers and Bretheren from Vio-  
 lence during the Worship of God, as occasion  
 should present: At length being retired to a  
 poor Man's House in the Parish of *Tinnick*,  
 where they had used to be sheltered in severe  
 Weather, it pleased God that they were seen,  
 and private Information given, so that before  
 they were aware the House was surrounded; and  
 after a very desperate Resistance, in which he  
 received Seven Wounds, they were all taken.

The Lieutenant of Dragoons, who was of his  
 own Name, yet Insulted him, and Treated him  
 in a most Barbarous manner: First he took his  
 three Friends, who were Prisoners with him,  
 and Shot them Dead before his Face; then com-  
 ing to him, asked him *what he thought of himself*  
*now?* He Reply'd, *I think as well of Christ and*  
*his Cause as ever, and not at all the worse for what I*  
*Suffer; and I only Grieve that I am left, and my*  
*dear Brethren are gone to Heaven, whom you have*  
*wickedly Murther'd.* The Bloody Cruel Wretch  
 Reply'd with an Oath, *he should not be long behind*  
*them, but he reserved him for worse Punishment.*  
 He Answered, *If the Lord stand by me, and keep*  
*me faithful to Death, I care not what Sufferings I*  
*am put to endure.* The Lieutenant then bound  
 him Cruelly, tho' bleeding at his Wounds, and  
 carried him to *Kilmarnock*, and from thence  
 to *Air*, where by Intercession of Friends, a Sur-  
 geon was allow'd to dress his Wounds, after  
 which he was carried to *Edinburgh*. It seems all  
 this

‘ this was done, that the Lieutenant might have  
 ‘ the Reward published for apprehending him,  
 ‘ otherwise he had been Shot with the rest.

‘ Being brought to *Edinburgh* he was brought be-  
 ‘ fore the Bloody Council, where they ask’d him  
 ‘ the Questions following, and received short An-  
 ‘ swers from him, such as barely shew’d, that he  
 ‘ neither expected or sought any Mercy at their  
 ‘ Hands: The Questions were thus.

Q. *Was you at the Field Conventicle at — ?* [Here  
 they Nam’d the Day and the Place]

A. Yes.

Q. *How many Men in Arms had you there ?*

A. I went there to hear the Gospel Preach’d,  
 and not to take an Account of Men or Arms  
 that might be there.

Q. *Which Way went you when the Preaching was done ?*

A. The best way we could to escape your Cru-  
 elty.

Q. *Where keep you the General Meetings, and what  
 do you at them ?*

To this he Answered he was not obliged to  
 give an Account; at which one of the Council  
 pretended he would do it for them, and made a  
 long Speech of what was done (tho’ he gave a  
 false Account) at a General Meeting near *Edin-  
 burgh*: Then they asked the Prisoner if he was not  
 there.

A. No.

Q. *We hope you are so much of a Christian as to  
 Pray for the King.*

A. Prayer is a holy Ordinance of God, and  
 we ought to Pray for the King as well as  
 for others, but not when every Profligate  
 Commands us.

Q. *Do you own the King as Lawful and sole Sovere-  
 rain Lord ?*

A. He being Papist and that from his Youth, and a Protestant of the Presbyterian covenanted Perswasion, I neither can or will own him while he remain such, if he repents and turns to God, I shall readily acknowledge him and obey him; and pray for him.

Upon these answers and without any farther process, they passed Sentence of Death upon him, which he receiv'd, *says the relator of this Story*, not only with Christian Submission, but with thankfulness, blessing, and praising God, who had counted him worthy to suffer for his Name: during the time of his Imprisonment he was used very cruelly, having a merciless Weight of Irons upon him during the whole time; yet he declar'd that he had a constant wonderful inward Assistance and Support from the Good Spirit of God, bearing him up under the Cross, having both a comfortable Assurance of the Pardon of his Sins, and a full Satisfaction of the Justness of the Cause in which he suffered.

After this we need but conclude this Work with an Account of the last Martyr who suffered in this Cause, and this was a Godly Minister; to leave it upon Record, that as the first that dyed was a Minister (*viz.*) Mr. James Guthrie. So was the last also (*viz.*) Mr. James Renwick.

There is another Observation on the Occasion of his Death (*viz.*) that he dyed the 17th of Feb. 1688, the beginning of the same Year of the Revolution, Testifying that the Episcopal Party never abated or relented; that they were never satiated with Blood; but went on as long as they had Power, even till they saw the very Cloud hovering and the Storm ready to break upon their Heads, nor had their thirst of Blood been quenched to this Day, or as long as their had been a faithful

ful Member of the Church of *Scotland* left alive, had their Power lasted ; so that it was the End of their Government put an End to their Persecutions, and no Clemency, Pity or Compassion in them ; no such things were so much as named among them.

This Observation puts me in mind of a brief Story within the Compass of my own Knowledge, of a Gentleman who was set upon by a Furious Mastive Dog : The Gentleman defended himself with a Sword for some time, but the Mastive after being very much wounded, got within his point and fastned on his Arm, the Gentlaman being in great Distress, and fearing every Moment that he would quit his Arm and fasten upon his Throat, had no other way to Master this Great Dog, but being a large heavy Man, he cast himself flat down upon the Dog with his other Elbow lying on the Dogs Breast, and thus with the Weight of his Body crush'd the Beast to Death, and upon this he observ'd that as the Dog dyed gradually under him, so fast and no faster his Teeth loosen'd in his Arm ; his Fury lasted with his Life, and both ended together.

The whole Story is applicable to the Purpose in hand : The Church of *Scotland* was near worried by this cruel Creature call'd Prelacy, and very near she was to being taken by the Throat and destroy'd. But she fell at last upon the Mastive, and crush'd him to Death, and as he dyed under her, his Teeth loosen'd, his bloody Feud abated, and not one jot faster ; the persecuting Rage of *Scots* Prelacy continued with its Life, died when it died, and will revive if ever it revives, of which we shall see some Confirmation in the last Part of this Work.

Mr. *Rentwick* at his Death, hath this remarkable prophetick Expression, in his last Speech, (*viz.*) *Do not fear, that the Lord will cast off Scotland, for he will certainly return again, and shew himself gracious in our Land.* This I quote here, tho' his last Speech is also added at Large, in the next Pages: I say, this Prophetick saying I quote here, because the fulfilling of this Prophecy is the Subject of the next Part.

In this Persecution, as has been Collected from the Accounts, both Publick and Private, above 18000 People have suffered the utmost Extremities, their Enemies could inflict; of which the following Particulars are a part, many of which can be proved even to the very Names of the Persons, with the Places of their Aboad.

1700 Have been Banished as Slaves to the *English* Plantations; besides such as were by order of Council, at the beginning of the Persecution, ordered on pain of Death, to leave their Country, which amounted to Eighty Seven; and besides above 750 banished to *Shetland*, to the Isles of *Lewis*, *Orkney*, and other remote Places belonging to *Scotland*: Of these 200 were wilfully, and premeditatedly Murthered, by keeping them under Hatches till they were drowned, when the Ship was Stranded, and there was time for them to escape, as is observed already:

800 800 were Outlaw'd; as we call it in *England*, about the time of *Pentland* affair, by the Order of the High Commission Court, and five and Fifty eminent Persons were Pannelled, as the Scots Law Terms it; that is, were Prosecuted absent, and were Senten-  
ced

tenced to be Executed without farther Prosecution, when they should be taken, as many of them afterwards were; among these were 10 or 11 Ministers, of which Notice is taken before, page 165.

It is impossible to give an Account of those who perished by unjust and tedious Confinement in Prisons by the Barbarity of merciless Jaylor's, stretch of close and horrible Dungeons and Vaults, want of Conveniencies, crowding 30 or 40 into little, dark and damp Rooms together, lying on the Ground, extremity of Cold and Hunger, weight of Chains, Bolts and Irons, and the like. Besides this great Numbers by the unhappy Places, where they were Confin'd, such as the Castles of *Blackness*, *Dunnotour*, *Inverlochy*, and the *Bass*; and by innumerable Cruelties, Practis'd upon them, in those Places, contracted Diseases, lost the use of Limbs and Senses, as Sight, Hearing, Tasting, and some even of their Understandings, but many more of their Lives; and those who think they have modestly computed the Number of these, for an exact Account cannot be had; Tell us, they amount to above 3600, including the 800, and the 27 last mentioned.

In the several Actions, which their Persecutors call *Rebellions*, and the Skirmishes which on those Occasions, as also upon Surprises, or otherwise have happened; there has been kill'd in the Field about 560, as at *Pentland*, *Barbwell*, *Aird Mass*, *Queen Ferry*, and other Places, in defence of their Meetings, and personal defence of their Lives, besides

besides those who have dyed of Wounds, receiv'd on such Occasions, which are reckon'd, to be about 120.

Those that have fled from their Country, into voluntary Banishment, have been yet a greater Number: These made their way into *England, Ireland, Holland, Sweden*, and to any Place whether Necessity drove them, for safety of their Lives, and as opportunity of Escape offered; in which Countries they were driven to great Distress; such as Want, Cold and Hunger, having their Lives given them indeed for a Prey; but being perfectly destitute of Friends, Shelter, Help or Relief; other than what God was pleas'd to raise them up by his Providence, and by the Christian Charity of Foreign Protestants. The Number of these, have been esteem'd by such as think they have made a modest  
7000 Calculation, at above 7000.

Of these, that I may do Justice to the Charity of every Man, and every sort of Men, the Cruelty they suffer'd at Home, and the Extremities they suffer'd abroad, were such, as was ever detest'd by Papists themselves; and some of the Suffering People have acknowledg'd, they have met with Compassion, even among the Roman Catholics; who have express'd their Astonishment, that Protestants should exercise such Inhumanities upon one another. In *England* also they were often Harbour'd, Reliev'd, Entertain'd and Conceal'd, even by some Charitable People, who were of themselves Episcopal, and Members of the Establish'd Episcopal Church; but who abhor'd the Cruelties and Inhumanities of  
the

the *Scots* Persecutors, and even abhorr'd the Persecution it self.

Of those who went then into voluntary Banishment, or, as it may be rather said, fled from the Face of their bloody Persecutors, very few ever returned again to *Scotland*, the Number of Years being such, that Age, together with the hardship of their Sufferings, carried most of them off before the happy time of the Deliverance of their Country arriv'd.

Besides these, there were abundance of Innonent and Pious Sufferers, who were basely Murthred by the Soldiers and Persecutors, upon the Occasions and by the Methods of which we have Spoken, being generally kill'd in cold Blood, without Procces of Law, Civil or Military, without visible Crime, Charge, or Examination: Of those, the Printed Accounts tell us the Names of 78 Murthred by particular Persons, and I am well assur'd there were very many more, and have hear'd, that a Person, whom I have not met with, has the Names of above 420 more; but that Number I do not a-  
498  
vouch.

The Number really Executed, in the Pretended course of Justice, and by the Sentence of the cruel Persecutors, and who died by the Hangman, as I am credibly Inform'd, is very great, and I am told that about 362 are to be found on the several Books of the Justiciary, and Council Courts, upon Record, besides what were Executed by Military Laws, as they call them, of which no  
352  
Record has been kept.

The Numbers of those who Perished thro' Cold, Hunger, and other Distresses, Contracted in their Flight into the Mountains, wandring without Shelter or Harbour, in dreadful Winters, during the long space of 28 Years Persecution, and who often came home in such Extremities, as just to step into their own Houses to die, and some times were, even in the Article of Death, dispatch'd by the Murthering Soldiers: These were many Thousands, and cannot be Calculated, but will certainly make up more than the Number of Eighteen Thousand, mentioned above.

Among these, I say nothing of the Pillage and Spoil of Goods, the turning Women and Children out into the Fields, in Cold and Nakedness, after devouring their Food, and tearing off the Cloaths from their Backs, of which many Perished for Want, and by the Extremeties of the Weather.

It were also endless, to Number the Families ruined and reduc'd to Misery and Want, which must be the Consequence of the Plunderings and Murthers, mentioned above; so that it should be wondered rather, that any of those People were left, or that there were any found at the Revolution; tho' to the Honour of Truth, it must be own'd, that at the Revolution, their Number was found to be greater than ever, Witness their raising a Regiment of 800 Men in one Day, without beat of Drum, for the Guard of the Convention, and for the Service of their Protestant King; which Regiment was compos'd of Men, as serious in Religion towards God, as Resolute in Arms for their King and Country, and were Eminent in the Army for preserving the Worship of God among them, for which they were call'd in Derision, the Psalm Singing Regiment. Their Noble Colonel, the

the Earl of *Angus*, was kill'd at the Fight at *Steenkirk*, where the Regiment behav'd with such Gallantry, that the King himself gave Testimony of their Bravery, and is still in being in the Army, having lately given another happy Instance of their Behaviour at *Preston*, where great Part of them were Slain, and where, if they had not behaved with an uncommon Resolution, the Rebels had not been reduced as they were.

All the Account given of those Things, are fill'd with the last Speeches of the dying People, which the Brevity of these Memoirs does not allow, nor the Design of them make needful. However, as I promis'd, *Page 290*. I have clos'd the Scene with the dying Speech of one *Mr. James Renwick*, whose Tragedy clos'd the Persecution, for he was not only the last Minister, but the last Man they had Power to put to Death, and it is as follows.

Speakers, (or if there be any of you) Auditors, I must tell you, I am come here this Day to lay down my Life, for adhering to the Truths of CHRIST, for which I am neither affraid nor asham'd to suffer; Nay, I bless the LORD, that ever he counted me worthy, or enabled me to suffer any thing for him; and I desire to praise his Grace, that he hath not only kept me free from the gross Pollutions of the Time; but also from many ordinary Pollutions of Children; and such as I have been stain'd with, he hath washed me from them in his own Blood. I am this Day to lay down my Life, for these three Things. (1.) For disowning the Usurpations and Tyranny of *James Duke of York*. (2.) For preaching, That it was unlawful to pay the *Cess*, expressly exacted for

' for bearing down the Gospel. (3.) For preach-  
 ' ing, That it was lawful for People to carry  
 ' Arms, for defending themselves in their Meet-  
 ' ings for the persecuted Gospel Ordinances. I  
 ' think a Testimony for these is worth many  
 ' Lives, and if I had Ten hundred, I would think  
 ' it little enough to lay them all down for the  
 ' same.

' Dear Friends, Spectators and (if any of you  
 ' be) Auditors, I must tell you, That I dye a  
 ' *Presbyterian Protestant*. I own the Word of God  
 ' as the Rule of Faith and Manners. I own the  
 ' *Confession of Faith, Larger and Shorter Catechisms,*  
 ' *Sum of Saving Knowledge, Directory for Wor-*  
 ' *ship, &c. Covenants National and Solemn League,*  
 ' *Acts of General Assemblies,* and all the faithful  
 ' Contendings that have been for the Work of  
 ' Reformation. I leave my Testimony approving  
 ' the Preaching of the Gospel in the Fields, and  
 ' the Defending the same by Arms. I adjoyn my  
 ' Testimony to all that hath been seal'd by Blood,  
 ' shed either on Scaffolds, Fields or Seas, for the  
 ' Cause of Christ. I leave my Testimony against  
 ' Popery, Prelacy, Erastianism, &c. Against all  
 ' Prophanity, and every thing contrary to sound  
 ' Doctrine; particularly against all Usurpations  
 ' made upon Christ's *Rights*, who is the **PRINCE**  
 ' **OF THE KINGS OF THE EARTH**, who  
 ' alone must *bear the Glory* of Ruling his own  
 ' Kingdom, the Church: And in particular a-  
 ' gainst the *Absolute Power* usurp'd by this *Usur-*  
 ' *per*, that belongs to no Mortal, but is the *In-*  
 ' *communicable Prerogative* of **JEHOVAH**; and a-  
 ' gainst this *Toleration* flowing from that *Absolute*  
 ' *Power*.

' Upon' this he was bid have done; He an-  
 ' swer'd, I have near done. Then he said, ye  
 ' that

' that are the People of GOD, do not weary in  
 ' maintaining the *Testimony of the Day*, in your  
 ' Stations and Places; And whatever ye do, make  
 ' sure of an Interest in Christ; for there is a Storm  
 ' coming that shall try your Foundation. *SCOT-*  
 ' *LAND* must be rid of *SCOTLAND*, before the  
 ' Delivery come. And you that are Strangers to  
 ' GOD, *break off your Sins by Repentance*, else I will  
 ' be a Witness against you, in the Day of the  
 ' Lord. Here they caus'd him to desist. Upon  
 ' the Scaffold he sung a part of the 103d *Psalms*  
 ' from the beginning, and read the 19th Chapter  
 ' of the *Revelation*: And having thus finish'd his  
 ' Course, serv'd his Generation, and witness'd a  
 ' good Confession for his Lord and Master, before  
 ' many Witnesses, by the Will of GOD, he  
 ' yielded up his Spirit into the Hands of GOD  
 ' who gave it.  
 ' Being the last that seal'd the Testimony of  
 ' this suffering Period in a publick Way upon a  
 ' Scaffold.

*The End of the Third PART.*



The first part of the document discusses the importance of maintaining accurate records of all transactions. It emphasizes that every entry should be supported by a valid receipt or invoice. This ensures transparency and allows for easy verification of the data.

In the second section, the author details the various methods used to collect and analyze the data. This includes both manual and automated processes. The manual process involves reviewing each entry individually, while the automated process uses software to identify patterns and anomalies.

The third section describes the results of the analysis. It shows that there are several areas where the data is inconsistent or incomplete. These areas need to be investigated further to determine the cause of the discrepancies.

Finally, the document concludes with a list of recommendations. These include implementing stricter controls over data entry, improving the accuracy of the automated systems, and conducting regular audits to ensure the integrity of the data.






---

 PART IV.
 

---

 THE  
**CHURCH**

 IN HER  
**PRESENT STATE.**


WE are now happily come to the End of this melancholly Part, and the Church of *Scotland* having now gone thro' a long Series of Trouble and Affliction, began to see a glimpse of that glorious Deliverance which was approaching: The Tyrannick and illegal Attempts upon the Religion and Liberties of the *English* Nation, as well as of the *Scotts*, began to stir up that Nation to think of preserving themselves from Destruction; and having apply'd themselves to the Prince of *Orange* for Assistance, that glorious Person began to listen to their Proposal, and to make Preparations for his coming into *England*.

In the Deliverance that follow'd, the Church of *Scotland*, found her Deliverance also: For in the Death of Civil Tyranny, Christian Liberty reviv'd.

The History of the coming of the Prince of *Orange* to the *English* Throne, is perfectly and fully related in so many Histories, is recent in the Memory of all People at the writing hereof, and probably will still be on so many subsequent Occasions preserv'd to Posterity, that as it does not immediately relate to our present Memoirs: So also I need not enter upon an Account of it here, other than what is absolutely Necessary to the Story I am relating.

It is also well known, that this Glorious Prince having finish'd the Deliverance of the *English* Nation, resolv'd the same should extend to *Scotland*; and that as it is express'd in his Declaration, Religion should be settl'd in *Scotland*, in such a manner as was most agreeable to the Inclinations of the People; from whence, and in the Consequence of which, we shall soon see many useful Observations most naturally drawn, pertinent to the Case now before us; and which, I see, all have great Occasion to make mention of again in the Process of these Memoirs.

1. But AS it has been already made plain in the first Part of these Memoirs, that the beginning of the Reformation in *Scotland*, and the first Reformers of *Scotland* were *Presbyterian*, and that Episcopacy sprung up there but from the Degeneracy of the Reformation: SO it will now, that the Inclination of the People of *Scotland* Ran with an irresistible Torrent into *Presbyterianism* again at the Revolution, as it had always done when it was left in the Choice of the People; and

and that as at the Revolution aforesaid, it was left to the Nation by the *Prince of Orange*, to settle Religion in such manner as was most desir'd by the People, not a *Dog wag'd his Tongue* against the *Presbyterian* Establishment, not a *Mouth gave a Vote* for *Episcopacy*; nor was it so much as nam'd to the King as a Question, whether the Inclination of the People was for *Episcopacy* or *Presbytery*; insomuch, that the King was often heard to say afterwards, that he wonder'd much what was become of the Episcopal Party, seeing no Man at the Revolution so much as nam'd the Word *Episcopacy* to him, nor had the Party any one to speak for them, or one Word to speak for themselves.

How they could, since that, have the Face to say, especially as they often did to the late *Queen*, that they were superior in Number to the *Presbyterians*; and that if the People of *Scotland* were left free to Vote, they would carry it for *Episcopacy*, I say, how they could say thus, would be strange to any that did not know how that Party have, on all Occasions, made such Things their *Refuge*, and the *Refuge* of their *Prelatick* Hierarchy; and the Author of these *Memoirs* is Thankful, that even at the Time they did so, he had the Honour in behalf of the Church of *Scotland*, to let her Late Majesty know how untrue that Suggestion was, and to Convince her Ministry how grossly those Men endeavour'd to impose upon *England* in that Case, as they did at the same Time in their Boast of the People receiving the *English* Service Book with willingness in *Scotland*, which Her Majesty was afterwards fully satisfy'd was a Cheat, and done only to amuse the *English* Clergy, and get Money of them,

2. It is observable in the Revolution, that the People of *Scotland* came all into the Principles of the suffering sincere Party, the suffering Party kept their own footing, and did not go over to them; those that had thro' Fear, or from Time-serving Principles, or for want of Zeal, or for any other weak Reason consented, and, *as I may call it*, taken so low a Step, as to accept of Licenses from God's Enemies to serve Christ; asking leave of Men to Worship God; a Duty and Debt which they had a Natural and Divine Right to, without bowing the Knee to *Baal* for it; I say, THESE, far from justifying or recommending the Practice, openly recogniz'd the Zeal, Courage and Sincerity of the Sufferers, honour'd them for it, and rather desir'd to bury their own Compliances in Silence and Forgetfulness, than to have it mention'd or remember'd.

3. Now it was seen, and made plain to the World, that the suffering People in *Scotland* acted upon no Principles of Enthusiasm, blind Zeal or religious Frenzy, *as their Enemies suggested*; that they were no Enemies to Monarchy, Civil Government, order of Society, and the like, *as had been scandalously said*; but that they kept strictly to the Rule of God's Word, adher'd to an honest Cause, and acted upon just Principles: And when such Kings were call'd to the Throne, as desir'd to Rule for God, and the Good of the People, who made the Laws of God and Man the Rule of their Government, and the Prosperity of Religion, and of their Subjects the End of it; they knew how to obey, serve and defend such Princes with their Blood and Treasure, as well as they had Courage to resist and reject those, who, with the Breach of Faith, Honour or Constitution, became Tyrants and Persecutors, Enemies

mies to God, and Destroyers of Men, as their former Princes had been.

This is evident by their Practice, at the Revolution; in that no sooner was the *Prince of Orange* Landed in *England*; and the Enemies of our Constitution began to stagger, but these People immediately took Arms, and successfully chas'd the bloody Party, out of their Country. But when this was done, *what Measures did they take?* Did they run into any Enthusiasm? Did they set up KING JESUS as a Temporal Prince, and the fifth Monarchy in his Name? Did they Preach the Doctrine of *Dominion founded on Grace*, or form Schemes of Republican Government? Did they erect themselves as Tyrants in the Room of those they pull'd down, so making the People change their Masters, not their Yoke? NO, NO, they adher'd to the Legal Constitution of their Country, they submitted cheerfully to the Return of Magistracy; and the free Course of the Laws of their Country, they arm'd themselves, and came up to *Edinburgh* at their own Charge, form'd themselves into Companies; indeed, they were able to have form'd a considerable Army, and offer'd themselves to March to any Part of the Nation against the Popish and Jacobite Party; and especially they offer'd, and were accepted, and admitted to Guard the *Convention of Estates*, against the Attempt of the Duke of *Gordon*, who at that Time commanded a Popish Garrison in the Castle of *Edinburgh*; and against all, of any Denomination that should attempt to Disturb them; and to the eternal Honour of the wild Antimonarchical, Enthusiastick, Lunatick *Cameronians*, for so their Enemies had call'd them; they were the first Men in *Scotland*, that address'd or petition'd

the Convention of Estates, to Place the Crown of Scotland on the Head of their Deliverer King *WILLIAM*, which was done accordingly; to the restoring of Religion, healing the Breaches of *Scotland*, and the utter Confusion of their Persecutors, of whom I shall have more to say presently.

I cannot give a better Account of this, than in their own Words: First, of their Declaration, or Memorial of their Grievances, and then their Petition itself: At the End of the said Memorial of Grievances, we have them concluding thus, the Repetition of which will appear very Pertinent to the Case in Hand (*viz.*) to prove their willing adhering to Legal and Religious Governors and Government, their Words are these, (*viz.*) ‘ We are represented by our Enemies as ‘ Antipods to all Mankind, Enemies to Govern- ‘ ment, and incapable of Order: But as their ‘ Order and Cause is, *Toto Diametro*, opposite to ‘ the Institutions, and Cause of Christ; so they ‘ must have little Wit, and less Honesty, who ‘ believe and receive those Notions, and the Re- ‘ proaches of those, who were as great Rebels and ‘ Enemies to the present Government, as we a- ‘ vow’d ourselves, to be to the last: Our Suffer- ‘ ings for declining the Yoke of Tyranny, and ‘ Popish Usurpation, are already hinted, and ‘ are generally known; and all that will examine, ‘ and consider our Conduct, since the King began ‘ his heroick Undertaking, to redeem these Na- ‘ tions from Popery and Slavery, will be forc’d ‘ to acknowledge, that we have given as good ‘ Evidence of our being *willing to be Subject* to ‘ King *William*, as we gave before of our being *un- ‘ willing to be Slaves* to King *James*: Upon the ‘ first Report of the Prince of *Orange’s* Expedi- ‘ tion,

tion, we own'd his Quarrel, even while the  
*Prelatick Faction* were in Arms, to oppose his  
 Coming: In all our Meetings, we pray'd open-  
 ly for the Success of his Arms, when in all  
 the Churches, the Prayers were for his Ruin.  
**NAY, and Note,** even in the indulg'd Meetings,  
 they pray'd for the Popish Tyrant, who, we  
 pray'd against, and who the Prince came to Op-  
 pose. We also associated ourselves early, bind-  
 ing ourselves to promote his Interest, and were  
 the first who openly own'd and declar'd our De-  
 sire to joyn with him; and this, when the o-  
 thers were associating with, and for his Enemies:  
 In order to make good our declar'd Intention  
 upon the false Allarm of *Kircudbright* being  
 burn'd, we had Recourse to Arms, and mod-  
 ell'd ourselves into a Body, and into distinct  
 Companies, whereby we were in readiness to  
 offer our Assistance; and did offer, and had the  
 Honour done us to be accepted, and admitted  
 to Guard the honourable Convention of Estates,  
 against all the Attempts of the Popish and per-  
 secuting Party, under the Duke of *Gordon*, Vis-  
 count of *Dundee*, or other Enemies whatso-  
 ever; after which, understanding that the Go-  
 vernment requir'd the raising Forces for its De-  
 fence, against the threatned Insurrections and  
 foreign Invasions of King *James VII.* We no  
 sooner heard thereof, than we offer'd ourselves  
 to raise a Regiment for His Majesty's Service,  
 and accordingly made up the Earl of *Angus's*  
 Regiment of 800 Men all in one Day, without  
 beat of Drum, or Expence of *Levy-Money*, ha-  
 ving first only concerted and concluded such  
 Conditions with the Lieutenant Colonel *Clee-*  
*land*, a Gallant Gentleman, and Christian Sol-  
 dier,

dier, as were necessary to clear our Consciences,  
and to secure Liberty and Safety, viz.

1. That all the Officers should be Men of Conscience, Honour, of approv'd Fidelity, well affected, of sober Conversation, and such as had never before serv'd the Enemy, in pulling down that Cause they were now to defend.
2. That the Service they should now be employ'd in, should be under the King's Majesty, for Defence of the Nation, the Recovery and Preservation of the Protestant Religion, and in Particular, the Work of Reformation in *Scotland*, in Opposition to Popery, Prelacy, and Tyranny.

Upon these Terms the Regiment was rais'd, and they offer'd to compleat two or three Regiments more, if His Majesty had Occasion. But, *says the same Memorial*, before we offer'd to be *Soldiers*, we first made an offer to be SUBJECTS; and because we did not look upon ourselves as Subjects to the late King, who treated us as Enemies, we made therefore a voluntary Tender of our Subjection to our Deliverer in a peculiar Petition, the Tenor whereof follows.

To the Meeting of the Estates of the Kingdom of *Scotland*, (*viz.*) The Noblemen, Barons and Burgesses lawfully call'd and chosen, now assembled at *Edinburgh*, for establishing the Government, restoring and securing the *True Religion*, Laws and Liberties of the said Kingdom.

' The humble Petition of the poor People, who  
 ' have suffer'd grievous Persecution for their Re-  
 ' ligious, and for their Revolt from, and disowning  
 ' the Authority of King James the VIIth, pleading  
 ' for Devolving the Government upon the Prince  
 ' of ORANGE, now King of England.

*Sheweth, &c.*

*NOTE HERE, That waving for Brevity sake  
 the long Introduction and Recital of the Suffer-  
 ings of Scotland, under the Reign and Tyranny  
 of King James the VII. they go on thus.*

' We prostrate ourselves yet under the sorrowing  
 ' smart of our still bleeding Wounds, at your Ho-  
 ' nours Feet, who have a Call, a Capacity, and we  
 ' hope a Heart to Heal us: And we offer this our  
 ' Petition—enforc'd, and Conjuring your Honours  
 ' to hearken to us.

- ' By all the formerly felt, presently seen,  
' and for the future, fear'd Effects, and Ef-  
' ferts of Popery and Tyranny.
- ' By the Cry of the Blood of our murdered  
' Brethren.
- ' By the Sufferings of the banish'd Free-born  
' Subjects of this Realm, now groaning in  
' Servitude, being sold into Slavery in the  
' *English Plantations of America.*
- ' By the Miseries that many Thousands, for-  
' feited, disinherited, harras'd and wa-  
' sted Houses and Families have been re-  
' duced to.

‘ By all the Sufferings of a Faithful People,  
 ‘ for adhering to the antient covenanted  
 ‘ Establishment, of Religion and Liberty.

‘ And by all the Arguments of Justice, Ne-  
 ‘ cessity and Mercy, that ever could join  
 ‘ together to begin Communication among  
 ‘ Men of Wisdom, Piety and Vertue.

‘ Humbly beseeching, requesting and craving of  
 ‘ your Honours, NOW when God hath given you  
 ‘ this Opportunity to Act for his Glory, the good  
 ‘ of the Church, of the Nation, your own Honour,  
 ‘ and the Happiness of Posterity. NOW when  
 ‘ this Kingdom, the Neighbouring, and all the  
 ‘ Nations of *Europe*, have their Eyes upon you,  
 ‘ expecting you will acquit your selves like the Re-  
 ‘ presentatives of a free Nation, in redeeming it  
 ‘ from Slavery, otherwise inevitable, following the  
 ‘ Example of your renowned Ancestors, and the  
 ‘ Patron of the present Convention and Parliament  
 ‘ in *England*: THAT you will proceed without any  
 ‘ Delay to declare the late wicked Government  
 ‘ dissolv’d, the Crown and Throne Vacant, and  
 ‘ *JAMES VII.* whom we *never have own’d*, and  
 ‘ resolv’d, in Conjunction with many Thousands of  
 ‘ our Countrymen, *never again* to own, to have  
 ‘ really forfeited and rightly to be deprived of all  
 ‘ Right and Title he ever had, or could ever pre-  
 ‘ tend to have thereto, and to provide that it may  
 ‘ never be in the Power of any succeeding Ruler  
 ‘ to aspire unto, or arise to such a Capacity of Ty-  
 ‘ ranizing: Moreover since *Annarchy* and *Tyranny*  
 ‘ are equally to be detested, and the Nation  
 ‘ (a) can

(a) cannot subsist without a righteous Governor ;  
 as also, that none can have a nearer (b) Right  
 or fitter Qualifications than his Illustrious  
 Highness the Prince of *Orange*, whom the most  
 High has singularly own'd and honour'd to be  
 our Deliverer from Popery and Slavery : We  
 cry therefore to your Honours, and crave that  
 King *William*, now proclaimed King of *England*,  
 may be chosen and proclaimed also King of  
*Scotland* ; and that the legal Authority may be  
 devolved upon him, with such necessary Provisi-  
 ons and Limitations as may give just and legal  
 Securities for the Peace and Purity of Religion,  
 the Stability of our Laws, Privileges of Parlia-  
 ment, and Liberties of the People, Civil and  
 Ecclesiastic, and may thereby make our Sub-  
 jection both a clear Duty and a comfortable Hap-  
 piness.

[Here they enlarge upon the King's being oblig'd to pro-  
 fess and preserve the pure Religion, and the Work of  
 Reformation ; and conclude thus :]

Upon such Terms as these, we render our  
 Allegiance to King *William*, and hope to give  
 more pregnant proofs of our Loyalty to his Ma-  
 jesty in adverse as well as prosperous Providen-  
 ces than they have done or can do, who pro-  
 fess

---

(a) Note here the Justice of their Principles as to Government,  
 and how entirely free they are from all that they have been char-  
 ged with, as to refusing lawful Subjection to just Powers, or being  
 of Common Wealth Principles, Enemies to Monarchy and such  
 like.

(b) Here 'tis evident they preserved the Principles of the Crown's  
 Lineal Descent, as well as that of a Monarchical Government ; and  
 perhaps were always as true to the Doctrine of Hereditary Rights,  
 as they who have made such great Stir about it, could do.

‘ fefe implicit Subjection to absolute Authority;  
 ‘ fo long only as Providence preserves its Gran-  
 ‘ deur.

*May it therefore please your Honours, &c.*

From this Time forward till the Union, we scarce ever heard of the *Cameronians*: Their Separation before was evident from juſt Reaſons, their not complying with indulg'd Liberty, accepting that from their Enemies which was their Native Right, and by which they muſt recognize the Right and Superiority of Episcopical Jurisdiction, which they abhor'd; this was all founded on Conſcience and in juſt Exceptions: But when upon the Revolution, and upon King *William's* eſta- bliſhing their antient Liberty, and that Episcopacy was depos'd, as we ſhall ſee preſently: They appeared to be all one united Body of Preſbyterians, one Church, under one Religious Govern- ment and Adminiſtration; the ſame in Opinion, the ſame in Doctrin, Diſcipline, Worſhip, and Government, having fewer Breaches, fewer Diviſions, fewer fallings off to a differing Opinion, than any Proteſtant Church in the World.

It remains then that our Memoirs give a brief Account of the Reſtoration of the Church upon this great Turn of Affairs, and this ſhall be done ſo conciſely, and with ſuch regard to what has been made public already on other Occaſions, that I hope none ſhall think their Time loſt in looking back, or think the Relation a vain Repetition.

According to the Prayer of the above Petition, King *William* was declared King of *Scotland*, the Crown was tender'd to him, and accepted by him in Form, in Conjunſtion with Queen *Mary*. The Act of Tender, the Claim of Right, the King's Acceptance, with his Majeſty's Letter to the Meet-

**Meeting of Estates** concerning his accepting the Crown, and the remarkable Oaths taken by the King and Queen on that Occasion, are all to be found in the Collection of Public Acts of *Scotland*, Vol. 3. P. 147, 153, 156, 159, 187. As soon as these Things were done, the Convention of Estates were turned into a Parliament, and from thence forward began to Act as the Public Legislature of the Nation. I say no more of the Particulars, because they are to be found in all the Histories of that Time: But it is to our present Purpose to Note, that therewith *Persecution* entirely ceased, *Episcopacy* sunk into its Primitive State of Obscurity, the *Persecutors* fled on all Hands from Justice; The banish'd, and proscrib'd, such as were left alive returned to their Families, Friends and Native Country. Religion now began to hold up its Head, the Godly persecuted Ministers and People shewed their Faces, and possess'd the Seat of their Enemies.

The first Act of Parliament (after that for turning the Convention into a Parliament, and another to recognize the King's Authority,) was the Act for abolishing *Episcopacy*: This makes it abundantly clear, that the general Bent and Inclination of the People was for *Presbytery*, and that *Episcopacy* was their Aversion; for that the very first Act after constituting the Civil Government, was this of abolishing the Ecclesiastick Government; I say the first, because as there were but two Acts which past before it; one for turning the Meeting into a Parliament, the other for recognizing the King's Authority; 'tis evident without these they could not have acted at all, and therefore the Act for abolishing *Prelacy* may be said to be the first Act they made, after the Power of acting was confirmed.

The

The Act for abolishing Prelacy is very remarkable, and can not be omitted without manifest Defect in our Work, it is as follows.

## ACT abolishing PRELACY.

July 22d 1689.

WHEREAS the Estates of this Kingdom in  
 their Claim of Right of the 11th of *April*  
 last declared that Prelacy, and the Superiority  
 of any Office in the Church, about Presbyters, is  
 and hath been a great and insupportable Grievance to this Nation, and contrary to the Inclination of the generality of the People ever since the Reformation; they having reform'd from Popery by Presbyters, and therefore ought to be abolished. OUR SOVEREIGN LORD and LADY the King and Queens Majesty, with Advice and Consent of the Estates of Parliament, do hereby *abolish Prelacy* and all Superiority of any Office in the Church of this Kingdom above Presbyters; and hereby rescinds Cafes, and annulls the 1 Act, 2 Sess. the first Parl. *Cha.* II. and the 2 Act, 3d Sess. 1st Parl. *Cha.* II. and the 4th Act, 3d Parl. *Cha.* II. and all other Acts, Statutes and Constitutions, in so far allanerly, as they are inconsistent with this Act, and do abolish Prelacy, or the Superiority of Church Officers above Presbyters; and do declare, that they with the Advice and Consent of the Estates of this Parliament, will settle by Law that Church Government in this Kingdom, which is most agreeable to the Inclinations of the People.

This

This was a short Session, the Meeting requiring nothing of publick Business at that Time but those three Necessary Acts: They met again in *April*, and then the second Act pass'd, was to do Justice to the poor persecuted suffering Ministers, who had been driven out by the Fury of the late Times; By this Act all the Ministers who had been so driven away, or as the Law exprestes, *ie Thrust from their Churches*, from the 1st of *Jan. 1661.* to that Time, should be forthwith admitted and allow'd free Access to their Churches, from which they were so Thrust out; that so they might presently Exercise their Ministry in their severall Parishes without any new Call, and the present Incumbents are order'd to give Place to them, and remove themselves.

This was not Persecution, as some would have *stild* it, but restoring the persecuted, and removing Intruders, for they were no other; and this was previous to any Church Settlement, because it was no more than putting the injur'd Men into Possession of their Legal Right: All this while Episcopacy held its Possession in general, tho' its Government was dissolv'd.

But the fifth Act of the same Session of Parliament laid the Ax to the Root of the Tree; this was that famous Act, entitul'd, *For ratifying the Confession of Faith, and settling Presbyterian Church Government*; the Law itself is too long to be reprinted here, it is to be found in the Collection of Acts, *Vol. 3. Page 206. to 234.*

As the Government of the Church was now restord, so were her Judicatories of Course; and at this Time began the first free General Assembly, which for eight and twenty Years had not been seen in *Scotland*; it is needless here to enter into the detail of the Acts of Assembly, which are

all to be found in the Registers of the Church; 'tis enough to our Purpose to Record, that now the Church was restor'd to the full and free Exercise of her Just and Legal Authority, the Judicatures were erected in their proper Places, such as Kirk Sessions, Presbytery, Synod, and Assembly, and all Ecclesiastical Justice ran in its proper Channel.

Before I go on to what has since happen'd, in Consequence of this Revolution in the Church, it will be necessary to say something here to that Challenge, which some have been very forward to bring against the Church of *Scotland*, as if she were also of persecuting Principles; and had exercised the same Coertion in point of Conscience in her Turn, which she had condemn'd in others; this they have carried on even to the Charge of Cruelty and Persecution in the Treatment and Usage of the Episcopal Ministers who were dispossest'd by those Two Acts, *viz. Of abolishing Prelacy, and settling Presbyterian Church Government.*

This Charge consists of Two Parts, in clearing up both which, the Honour and Character of the Church of *Scotland* will not only be vindicated, but the Injustice and indeed the Ingratitude of the Episcopal People, who have brought this Charge, will very much appear; and a quite contrary Behaviour will be made out to have been the Practice of the present Government.

1. The first Respects the Conduct of the People, when they took up Arms in a tumultuous Manner at the Beginning of the Revolution.
2. The next Respects the judicial Proceedings against the Episcopal Party since, in both which

which there needs no more for the Vindication of the Church, than that the Truth of Fact should be impartially stated.

As to the first it is true, That as soon as the News came to *Scotland* that the Prince of *Orange* was landed with an Army in *England*, and that King *James* was not able to maintain his Ground, the People of *England* enclining to a general Revolt: The People in the West of *Scotland*, for they were the first, ran immediately to Arms, and declared for the Prince of *Orange*: This was done with so Universal a Resolution, and the Consternation the other People were in at the General Face of Things, was such at the same Time, that there was no Capacity, or even Disposition to oppose them.

In this general Defection from the Government, the Western People not only took Arms, as is said; but ran in a Tumultuous manner, first upon the Church Affairs, for there it was that the Oppressions of the former Times had been most sensibly felt: In this first Fury it cannot be wondered that they dispossess'd the Episcopal Ministers (Curates, as they call'd them) of their Churches, and restoring the old Worship, caused their own banish'd persecuted Ministers to come and preach among them: But the Nature of all such Rabbles consider'd, and above all the Sufferings and Provocation of those poor People, and of which I have given some Account; being duly weigh'd, it must be confess'd to be wonderful, that any kind of Violence was forbore, not that I allow it was just to have committed them; but how could less have been expected from a People so treated

as they had been when, they were thus perfectly let loose to thier own Resentments.

Yet we do not find that the utmost Violence complained of, amounts to any more than an over hasty turning the said Episcopal Ministers out of the Parsonage Houses, which it was their Opinion were unlawfully possess'd, and some injurious hurrying their Goods out with them; and this but to a few: But as to any personal Injury, such as wounding or killing of any, I do not find that any such Thing is charged upon them.

On the other Hand, when we reflect, how many must be among those Rabbles who had suffered deeply in the Persecution, I have spoken of; who had lost Fathers, Mothers, Children, Husbands, Wives, and the dearest of remoter Relations in that Persecution, and could not be without the warmest Resentment; add to this, that some of those Ministers or Curates, who they were then dispossessing, had dipt their Hands too much in the Persecution of those poor Sufferers: I say, if these things were duly consider'd, what can be said, but that it was next to miraculous, that an ungovern'd Multitude, left to the full Vent of their own Rage; and that Rage grounded upon such just Provocations should have left any of them alive; and I can not think it any Breach of Charity to say, its very probable had the Parties been chang'd, it would have been quite otherwise.

And tho' any tumultuous Violences are not justifiable in a civiliz'd Christian Nation, yet the the Conduct of these People at that Time, with their Provocations and Circumstances consider'd, is a great Testimony of the Moderation of the Presbyterians in *Scotland*: The Scripture makes this an extraordinary Case, 1 Sam. 24. 19. *If a Man find his*  
his

his Enemy, will he let him go well away: yet when the Presbyterian People in Scotland had their Enemy in their Hands, for so at this Time they had, they left their Revenge to him to whom Vengeance belongs; and contenting themselves with putting it out of the Power of their Enemies to do any more Mischief for the Time to come, they meddled not with punishing them for what was past.

But supposing those Rabbles did commit some Violences, as to Plunder, and as to Personal Rudeness to the Ministers, &c. who they turned out, which yet I have not met with any Account of: This is fully answered in a Book formerly written on that Subject, in these Words.

‘ (a) What’s this to the Church? It might be done by Presbyterians of the Church; but it can never be said, it was ever done by *THE PRESBYTERIANS as a Church*: It was done by no Act of the Church, no, nor of the Government; nor did either the Church or the Government ever Approve, Justify, or Employ any of the Persons — ’Tis true, there was no publick punishing the Actors; neither did the Government in *England* punish, neither was it a Time to punish those Excesses: And particularly the Government in *England* thought fit, by Parliament, so far to bear with them, as to stop all Process against Trespasses, &c.

‘ There is also another unhappy Circumstance, that so effectually clears the Church of this Charge, that I cannot but wonder, the Party could ever make use of it as an Argument, or bring this Matter of Rabbling into the Charge:

G g 3

‘ And

‘ And that is, That these Tumults, Plunderings,  
 ‘ and Driving away the Episcopal Ministers, were  
 ‘ all done and over, before there was any such  
 ‘ thing as a Presbyterian Church ; I mean, esta-  
 ‘ blish’d, or in any Power to Act as a Judicatory,  
 ‘ or as a Body ; So that, to charge the Church  
 ‘ with this, is like Indicting a Man for a Mur-  
 ‘ der committed before he was born.

This I think may serve to clear up the first  
 Head, *viz.* the Conduct of the Rabble, &c.

I come next to the general Proceedings of the  
 Church of *Scotland*, as a Church after their  
 Restoration, or new Establishment: How they were  
 settled by Act of Parliament, has been already  
 observ’d ; it remains to enquire how they acted  
 when settled, and whether either the Civil Govern-  
 ment or Church Government, can be justly charg-  
 ed with Persecution.

‘ It could not be expected, but that, upon the  
 ‘ Revolution, the Prelatic Tyranny would fall  
 ‘ with the Regal : And, were it worth Examin-  
 ‘ ing into, it would be easy to prove, there was  
 ‘ an inevitable Necessity it should do so, they  
 ‘ being so effectually supported one by another,  
 ‘ that they could not but stand and fall together.

‘ That the conjunct Tyranny of both Church  
 ‘ and State had treated the Presbyterians with  
 ‘ such an Impolitic Fury, as must imply, they had  
 ‘ not the least Apprehension of being ever pull’d  
 ‘ down again by them, is very evident from the par-  
 ‘ ticulars, which make up the former Part of these  
 ‘ Memoirs. But to return to the History,

The Bishops being Deposed, and the Presbyterian Government and Discipline restored in the Church: The first thing the Assembly went upon was, to consider of planting Ministers in the Vacant Churches; for it could not be, but that in Eight and Twenty Years of Cruelty and Blood which they had suffered under, and which I have given some Account of in these Memoirs, a great Number of the ancient Ministers were fallen; besides that, even the length of Time, would by the Course of Nature carry a great many off the Stage. *And so it was*, even to such a Degree, that it was at first not very easy to find Ministers to supply Churches from which the Episcopal Ministers or Curates were necessarily to be removed.

And here again the pretence of Persecution is brought as a Plea against the displacing those Incumbents, who would not qualify themselves according to Law: But neither will it hold in this Case neither: See the Words of the same Author, upon the same Subject, where he gives the following brief History of the first Step taken in this Case.

The Government, says he, was no sooner establish'd by the Revolution, and the Kirk restor'd to her Judicatorial Authority, but her several Courts, as Session, Presbytery, Synod and Assembly, took their Courses, and began to Act.

By the first Act of Parliament for settling these Matters, pass'd June 7. 1690. Intituled, *Act Ratifying the Confession of Faith, and Settling Presbyterian Church Government*; It is ordain'd, *That the General Assembly, the Ministers and Elders, should have Power to try and purge out all Insufficient, Scandalous,*

and Erroneous Ministers, by due Course of Ecclesiastical Process and Censures: But this Act no where Impower'd them to Censure any who were not Insufficient, Scandalous, or Erroneous, tho' they would not take the Oaths to the Government— So that, by this Law, the Church could not be capable of Persecution.

It may be objected here, That to be Episcopal, might be adjudged Erroneous by this Judicatory, and so come under the Church Censure, by Authority of this Act.

To this 'tis replied—, First, *In Fact*, No Man was ever since the Revolution Deposed by the Church, meerly for being Episcopal, nor was any Process ever commenc'd against any Man on that Foundation.

Secondly; It was particularly declared by the First General Assembly after the Revolution, viz. in the Sixth Session, in the Year 1690, *That this Assembly will Depose no Incumbents simply for their Judgment anent the Government of the Church, and Urge Re-ordination upon them. Vide Index of the Unprinted Acts of the Assembly, Sess. 6, 1690.*

In the same Assembly, in their Instructions given to their Commission, which was to sit during their Recess, we have these Words;

*That they be very Cautious of receiving Informations against the late Conformists; And that they proceed in the Matter of Censure very Deliberately, so as none may have just Cause to complain of their Rigidity; And that they shall not proceed to Censure, but upon relevant Libels and sufficient Probation, Act 15th, Sess. 26th, Assembly 1690.*

Again, lest the Presbyterians should be rash and severe the Commission is impower'd as follows, *That if they shall be inform'd of any precipitant Procedure*

dare of the Presbyterians in such Processes, to restrain them. *Vide* the same Act as above.

If then they were thus Moderate even in Scandalous Things, and declared against proceeding in Cases meerly Eviscopal, where shall we find the Article of Persecution?

'Tis true, That in the Year 1693, an Act of Parliament was made to Deprive all such Ministers, as would not both Swear to the Government, and Acknowledge the Church Government also, and the Confession of Faith——. But the Occasion of this Act is visible to all that know the Affairs of that Time, *viz.* That it was past to satisfy the Minds of the People, who were exceedingly disturb'd at the Churches having been Insulted in the Assembly 1692, by a general *Formula* procur'd by the Episcopal Clergy, together with their Appeal to the King on a Refusal: And the Assembly being abruptly Dissolved, or Dismissed *sine die*, which put the Nation into a very great Ferment.

Yet, even upon this Act, I may challenge the Episcopal Clergy to show me one Minister, that ever was Deposed for not acknowledging the Church, if at the same Time he offered to acknowledge the Government, and take the Oaths, and they have been often challenged on this Head.

And to confirm this Lenity of Practice by a Law, that famous Act of Parliament was made in the Year 1695, wherein taking the Oaths to the Government is made the *Only* and *Fully Sufficient* Qualification, and all Ministers that would so *Qualifie themselves* are continued. As may be seen at large by the Act, Intituled, *Act concerning the Church, Anno 1695.*

This

. This very Act of Parliament, if I were to go no further, effectually clears the Church of *Scotland* from the Charge of Persecution; since 'tis plain there was no religious Tenet in dispute, but a civil Question of owning or not owning the Government.

It was by this Act of Parliament taken quite out of the Power of the Church, to Depose any Man merely for being Episcopal in Principle, or for refusing to own the Presbyterian Church; nay, the Episcopal Clergy, who by vertue of this Act, remain in their Livings, many of them to this Day, refuse to acknowledge the Church, to submit to any of her Judicatories, or to join, either in Discipline or Worship.

How impossible it is then to be true, that the Presbyterian Church has been guilty of Persecution, I leave to any Impartial Reader to judge; adding withal, what was published in the same Case, *viz.* That there was at the Time of the Union One hundred and sixty five Episcopal Ministers then possessing Churches and Stipends in *Scotland* by the Lenity and Forbearance of the Government, who had no other Qualification required of them, than the taking the Oaths to the Government, and were not bound to, neither did they comply with, or submit to the Presbyterian Church; and a List of their Names has been published, and of the the Parishes in which they Reside; nay, in several Parishes where these Episcopal Ministers are Incumbent, the Presbyterians are at the Expence to have a Minister of their own, who they maintain, and who Preaches in a Meeting-House at their own private Expence: Take the Case in the Words formerly publish'd thus.

It would be pleasant for People who charge the Church of *Scotland* with persecuting the Episcopal Clergy, to go to some of these Paroches and see this uncouth Jest, where the persecuting established Church is fain to submit to a Meeting-House, and the persecuted Episcopal Clergy-man insults them from the Parish Church, and keeps both the Pulpit and the Stipend in spite of them all—— Here is the establish'd Church turn'd Dissenter, and the Dissenter made the Incumbent; the Persecutor become persecuted, and *per contra* the persecuted made the Persecutor.

Thus the Church has re-obtain'd her Establishment, and here she may be said to be arrived at the full extant of her Militant State, flourishing in Peace, and the Wounds of her afflicted State healing apace.

It remains as a proper Close to this Work, that something should be said concerning this despised persecuted Church in General; a Body of Christians placed thus, as it were in the remotest part of the World, in whom however God has been pleased so eminently to appear, and for whom to do such great Things as has been here related.

Now she enjoy'd her full Establishment, I mean just before the Union: After the *Union*, no Attempt that Episcopacy could make upon her could overthrow her Settlement, without overthrowing at the same Time the whole Constitution of *Great Britain*. What Attempts have been made upon her during the Interest which her Enemies had in the Administration, at the latter End of the last Reign, have rather scratch'd her Face, than touch'd her Vitals, and have rather shewed their Design than their Power; Whether she will obtain that  
Justice

Justice to have those Injuries redress'd now the whole Government is restor'd, I cannot yet say, nor does it relate to the present part of this Work.

Her Government, Discipline and Worship, are establish'd now by Treaty; and have the Assent of an Episcopal Church and Nation as a Sanction to it: The Act for her Security is Incorporated into, and made a part of the Act of Union; and the establishing the Church of *Scotland* is there called the establishing the true Protestant Religion.

I know but Two Things which the Church of *Scotland* can be said to complain of, or to ask more than was at this Time granted to her; and those there is some Reason to fear she never will obtain, but as they are not Essential to Religion it self, I shall not lay too great a stress upon them.

1. That the Revenues of the Church, I mean of the Archbishops, and Bishops, Deans, Chapters, &c. when they were Deposed, and Episcopacy Abolished, were not appropriated to the Uses of the Church, as indeed they ought to have been, but divided like the Spoil of the Revolution among the Nobility and Gentry: Had this been done, there had been a Fund for the Service of the Church, which would have been sufficient to have answer'd several Wants, which in Default of this Supply, she feels the Effects of, *viz.*

1. There had been a Supply for supporting Students in the Colleges for the Study of Divinity, and to have enlarged the Stipends of the Regents or Tutors in the said Colleges, which were at that Time very low; and not suitable to the Labour and Application requisite in those Offices: The latter was so evident, that the late Queen was

was pleas'd to add considerably out of her own Purse, as an encrease of Salary amounting in the whole, as I have heard, to about 300 *l. per Annum*.

2. There had been a Fund to encrease the Stipends of Ministers in remote Parishes; where they were too small, to encourage the Incumbents and support their Families in waiting upon their Work.

3. There would have been a Fund to have bred up Ministers to act as Missionaries for the *Highlands*, to study the *Irish* Language, and qualify themselves to go into the remotest Parts to Instruct the poor Ignorant Families of the *Highlanders*, and to support them in such a Work: A Thing attempted since the Union, by a General Subscription for the *Propogating Christian Knowledge*, but I do not find the Success answers the Goodness of the Design.

4. There would have been a Fund to have answered the common Incidents of the Church, such as sending up Ministers to *London* to solicit Redress of Grievances, upon any Occasion, and for every publick Transaction with the Court. OR *which were very desirable* for the maintaining an Agent constantly at *London*, to take care of their Interests, to present their Addresses, recommend their Concerns, and in a Word to manage their Affairs; all which they are now oblig'd either to want Assistance in, or the Ministers *who do come up as Agents* on extraordinary Occasions, are oblig'd to bear their own Charges, which is a Hardship many of them may not be very well furnish'd to bear.

2. Another Thing they complain of, is the want of the Sanction of the Civil Power to enforce Ecclesiastic Discipline and Censure; for want of which, obstinate Offenders are often encourag'd to stand out in Scandal and in wicked Practices, and refuse to submit to the Sentences of the Church, however just, righteous, and moderate: This is one Reason why the Nobility and Gentry very often live in Defiance of Ecclesiastic Judicatures and Process, even in the profess'd and avow'd Commission of flagrant Crimes, such as blasphemous Swearing, open Drunkenness, Fornication, and even Adultery it self; whereas were the Civil Magistrate oblig'd to assist in the Execution of Church Sentences, no Man would then be above Reproof, and Punishment in just Cases.

But as I said before, these Things do not at all break in upon the Church; either in her Doctrine, or in the Liberty of her Worship; they may indeed affect the Establishment of her Discipline, tho' not much; so that *by the Treaty of Union*, it is to be hoped her last struggle with Episcopacy is at an End; and she may now be able to say, that not only she is arriv'd to her full grown State, but that the Continuance of it is secured to her People and their Posterity.

This brings to my Mind, a Reproach usually cast on the Church of *Scotland* by her Enemies, or rather it may be call'd an Insult, (*viz.*) That Presbytery was often hatch'd in *Scotland* and nursed up. But was never *Major*; never came to be of *Age*; alluding to a young Man, who, tho' carefully brought up, dies before he attains to the Age of One and Twenty: But that Jest will serve them no longer, seeing it is now Eight and Twenty

ty Year since the Revolution, and since the passing the Act for abolishing Episcopacy; and yet Presbytry not only remains, but seems to be in a better and more probable Way for Duration than it ever has been since the Reformation.

It might be proper here to say a few Words by way of Observation, concerning the present State of the Discipline of the Church of *Scotland*, which was confirm'd also at the Time of the Union, and indeed I cannot refrain it for Two Reasons.

1. That I think it is a Debt due to the Church her self, who I find suffer innumerable unjust Reproaches, and is contemptibly thought of, not among her Enemies only, but even among those in *England*, whose Interest as well as Principles ought to move them to inform themselves better concerning her, and who being better inform'd, ought to do more justice to those who so well deserve it at their Hands.
2. That she may be a Pattern to all the several Sorts of Protestants in *Britain*, and may shew them by her Example, not only what the Blessing would be of an establish'd well executed Discipline in a National Church, and of a laborious well regulated Clergy, but also how easy it is to attain to it.

I shall not examine into the Discipline of the Two National Churches in this Island, in order to compare them, to recommend one of them as better than the other: But for their due Emulation, this I may say, that supposing the Rules of their Discipline equally good, yet no Man will deny Two Things.

1. But

1. That the Church of *England* Discipline is the most Neglected, the Execution of it the most Incumber'd, and the Prosecution made the most Difficult and Tedious, as well as Expensive and Chargeable to the Prosecutor of any Protestant Church in the World.
2. That the Church of *Scotland's* Discipline is the most exact in Form, the most easy and cheap to the Prosecutor, and the most punctually and strictly Executed, without Partiality, Bribery, or any sort of Corruption, as also without a tiresome, tedious and dilatory Proceeding, of any Church Discipline in the World.

Some of the Consequences of this, are these ;

1. The Ministers (for they are as much subjected to the Discipline of the Church as the People, and perhaps more) are daily and duly enquired into as to their Conduct, and fail not to be Censur'd, if they give occasion of Scandal in the severest manner ; and in this Censuring of the Ministers in *Scotland*, it is to be particularly observ'd, That Ministers have there a severity used with them, if they offend, which the common People have not, and which perhaps no Ministers in the World but these, are subject to, (*viz.*) That if a Minister falls into any scandalous Crime, for which he is Deposed, he is Deposed for ever ; a private Man is receiv'd again, after Scandal given, if he Repent and give Satisfaction, but a Minister never.

NOTE,

**NOTE,** Upon Repentance and making publick Acknowledgement to the Satisfaction of the Church, he shall be received again to Communion as a Fellow Christian, but as a Minister he is perfectly useless, and never can be repon'd,

**NOTE** *also,* That this severity is not by the Law of Discipline, but the Practice and Usage of the Church, the People will never hear or receive such a Man as a Minister.

**NOTE** *Thirdly,* That the happy Consequences of this Severity, and which must be mention'd to the Honour of the Church of *Scotland*; IS, That there is not a Minister now preaching and exercising the Office of a Pastor in the whole Church of *Scotland*, who can be charg'd with any Immoralities or scandalous Behaviour, except such as are under Prosecution for the same.

Could this be said of the Church of *England*, or could it be said that all due Care, as far as her own Laws would allow, was taken to bring it to this, what a new Face would there be of Religion in this part of the Island !

2. The People are restrained in the Ordinary Practice of Common Immorallities, such as Swearing, Drunkenness, Slander, Fornication, Adultery and the like: As to Theft, Murther, and other Capital Crimes, they come under the Cogniscance of the Civil Magistrate, as in other Countries :

But in those Things which the Church has Power to punish; the People being constantly and impartially prosecuted, they are thereby the more restrained, kept sober and under Government, and you may pass thro' Twenty Towns in *Scotland*, without seeing any Broil, or hearing an Oath sworn in the Streets; whereas if a Blind Man was to come from thence into *England*, he shall know the first Town he sets his Foot in within the *English* Border, by hearing the Name of God blasphem'd and prophanelly used, even by the very little Children in the Street.

Another Thing I cannot omit, in which the Constitution of the Church of *Scotland* is Singular and Differing from her Neighbours, and this, is that not the least Room is left here for the popular Charge of Priest-craft, with which the Deists, Atheists and prophane People of this Age, Charge the Ministers of the Gospel of all Perswasions, alledging that all they do is either under the Awe of the Great Ones, to pursue their Interest and Livings, or with Wheedling and Delusion to win upon the Poor to make a Profit of them.

To the Honour of the Church of *Scotland*, her Ministers are so stated, as that (1.) They are under no Influence, Awe, or Command from the Great Ones; for the Stipend or Sallary of the Minister depends not upon the Lord or Patron, but is settled by Parliament, to be paid duly by the Heretor, or Person who receives the Tithes; and if he refuses or delays, the Minister may demand it of his Tenant; so that the Ministers are wholly independant of the Gentry, how much soever the poor People are in Bondage to them.

(2.) As

(2.) As they can lose nothing by the Anger of the Gentry, they can get nothing by Favour of the Commonalty; and this is very remarkable, that no Fees, no Perquisites, no Advantages are made of any kind by the Minister in his Parish, of or from his People; He receives nothing for Burials, Marriages, Baptisms, Visiting, or any other Thing belonging to his Office as a Minister; So that he has nothing to Wheedle the People into, or for. On the contrary, as he presides in his Kirk-Session or Vestry, he is rather a Magistrate or Inspector over the Lives and Conversations of his Parishioners, than a Tool to please and cajole them, that he may get Money by them, as is too much the Case in *England*, and in other Countries also.

This Power of the Minister in his Parochial Jurisdiction is that upon which Mr. *Lauder*, (a) in that famous *and yet unanswered* Book of his, argues, That a private Parish Minister in *Scotland* is a compleat Diocesan Bishop, according to *Cyprian*, and according to the Scripture Institution of a Bishop; presiding in Judicature over his Flock or Diocess, being Vested with the Power both to Censure and Absolve; and that the Government of the Church of *Scotland* by Kirk-Sessions, Presbyteries, Synods, and General Assemblies, is really and properly *Episcopal Government*, to all Intents and Purposes, as the Government of the Church *was Episcopal* in the Third and Fourth Centuries.

(3.) The Office of a Minister in the Church of *Scotland* is a quite different Thing from the Office

H h 2

of

---

(a) Vide *Lauder, ancient Bishops consider'd, cap. viii. page 316.*

of a Minister in *England*; that is to say, as it is now Executed, either in the National Church or among the Dissenters; and it may be said without an Hyperbole, that were the Ministerial Office subjected and discharged in *England*, as it is in *Scotland*, in that Laborious Self-denying Manner, and under such small Encouragements, Thousands of the Clergy, I dare say, would wish to have been brought up Mechanicks rather than Parsons; and scarce a Man that had any Temporal Estate to subsist on, would take the fatigue of the Gown upon them. Here are no Drones, no Idle Parsons, no pamper'd Priests, no Dignities or Preferments to excite Ambition, no Pluralities and Curacies to encourage Sloth, no Authority or Power over one another to gratify Pride, no Exemption from the Laborious part, or Excuse for not performing it.

Every Minister in *Scotland* preaches twice a Day, and Lectures upon or Expounds a Chapter, or part of a Chapter, before the Morning Sermon; except only where in some large Parishes, there are Assistants or Collegues allowed; every Minister is bound by his Office to Visit every Family in his Parish ministerially, and at least once a Year to Examine every examinable Person in his Parish: Every Minister is oblig'd in Conjunction with his Elders, *who with the Minister compose the Kirk-Session*, to take Cognifance of and hear all Complaints against the Morals of every Person in his Parish, and to proceed judicially as the Case shall require: Every Minister likewise is obliged to Visit the Sick in his Parish, when ever they send to him; nor is that an easy Work in the Country where the Parishes are large, and the Villages included in them remote from one another.

Who

Who ever considers the Office of a Minister in *Scotland*, how faithfully the Ministers there execute it, how constantly they preach, how painfully they Study, how diligently they Examine, how duly they Visit, will easily Account for that weak Scandal that our People in *England* raise upon them, (*viz.*) *That we see none of their Writings*: And I shall add to it, what a Worthy and Reverend Divine of the Church of *England* said on Occasion of that Reflection, (*viz.*) *That if our Ministers, as well of the Church, as the Dissenters, would Study more, Preach more, Visit, Comfort, Examine and Instruct their People more, though they wrote less, it would be better Service to the Church, and they would more deserve the Name of Gospel Ministers.*

There are many other Laborious things which the Ministers of the Church *Scotland* go thro', and which Ministers in *England* know nothing of; such as their managing the Parish Charity, keeping the Treasure for the Poor, for there are there neither *Church-Wardens* or *Overseers*, their Travelling to reconcile Breaches, and heal Divisions among their People; their Expensive Journeys Monthly to the Presbyteries, half Yearly to the Synods, and annually to the General Assemblies, and the like; All which serve to make it true which was said by an impartial Enquirer there, (*viz.*) *That the Life of an English Porter was easy compar'd to that of a Presbyterian Minister in Scotland.*

Yet all this is supported and discharged with such Courage, such Temper, such Steadiness in Application, such unwearied Diligence, such Zeal and Vigour in the Work, that our *English Sermon-Readers* know little of, not having the same Support, and I fear, not the same Spirit to carry them thro'; in a Word, as they have a Work which humane Strength, is

hardly sufficient to Discharge ; so they have a Support which humane Nature is not capable to supply ; and I must acknowlege that there seems to be such an Appearance of the Spirit and Presence of God with and in this Church, as is not at this Time to be seen in any Church in the World.

Farther, as there is among the Ministers a Spirit of Zeal, and an earnest devoting of all their Powers, Faculties, Strength, and Time to their Work, so the Peoples Part is in proportion equal ; their Taste of Hearing, their Affection to their Ministers, their Subjection to be Instructed, and even to Discipline ; their eagerness to follow the Directions given ; those are Things so visible in *Scotland*, that they are not to be describ'd but admir'd : To see a Congregation sit with Looks so eager, as if they were to eat the Words as they came out of the Mouths of the Preacher ; to see the Affection with which they hear, that there shall be a General Sound of a Mourning thro' the whole Church upon the extraordinary warmth of Expression in the Minister, and this not affected and design'd, but casual and undissembled.

And one Thing as a Hint, to *English* Hearers, I cannot omit, (*viz.*) That in a whole Church full of People, not one shall be seen without a Bible, a Custom almost forgotten in *England* : On the other Hand in a Church in *Scotland*, if you shut your Eyes when the Minister Names any Text of Scripture, you shall hear a little rustling Noise over the whole Place, made by turning the Leaves of the Bible ; nay, if a blind Body be at the Church, they will have a Bible, which they will give to the Persons next to them to fold down the Texts quoted, that they may cause some Body to read them to them when they come home.

There

There are many more Circumstances, in which I might show the Church of *Scotland* to be happily distinguish'd from most, if not all the other Protestant Churches in *Europe*, but the Particulars are too many.

I wish I could have had Room in these Memoirs to have set down the Heads of their Discipline, which we call in *England* the Canon, but it is too long; what has been said, as it is impartially sincere, so tho' short in Particulars, is sufficient to let you know what a Church she is, and what a Flourishing and Glorious State she is now in. The Glory be to Jesus Christ, the Eternal King and only Head of his Church, for ever and ever, *AMEN.*

*The End of the Fourth PART.*





# APPENDIX

---

OF THE  
STATE  
OF THE  
CHURCH  
SINCE THE  
UNION.



These Memoirs were Written soon after the Union between *England* and *Scotland* was finish'd and rati-  
fy'd, so the Period chosen for the last Part was proper to the Time ;  
but no less than Nine Years having  
past since that Time, and before the Publication  
hereof, it is requisite that some Notice should  
be taken of what has happen'd in that Time, and  
this the rather, because some Depredations have  
been

## A P P E N D I X.

been made upon the establish'd Liberties of the Church of *Scotland* since that Time, and some Attempts, even besides the open Rebellion of the Jacobites, in Order, if possible, to pull down her Fences, and lay open her Enclosure; that *Jacob* might be given to the Spoil, and *Israel* to the Robber.

But that Providence which has so eminently guarded the Church of *Scotland* in so many Dangers, has deliver'd her from this also, and now she sees her self free again from farther Invasion.

We have seen in the Accounts pass'd, on what Foot of Establishment the Church stood soon after the Revolution, and how she went, even till the Treaty of Union; neither is there any Thing in her History, which requires particular Notice during that interval of Time. Farther 'tis observable, that the Church being effectually restor'd *as before*, and enjoying an uninterrupted Prosperity; there remain'd nothing to be done in her Behalf, at the Time of the *Treaty of Union*, but to preserve her as she was in the full Enjoyment and Security of her Doctrine, Discipline, Worship and Government.

For this Reason, when the Treaty began, it was laid down as a Fundamental, *That the Commissioners on either Side should have no Power to enter into any Conferences upon the Ecclesiastick Settlement of either Nation*, for as there was no View or Design, or indeed possibility of bringing the Two Churches to unite: So to agree at first, that both should remain *just as they were*, was the only Method to put the Treaty in a way of being finish'd: The want of such a Preliminary having been the only Reason why all other Attempts for a Union had proved ineffectual and come to nothing.

The

## A P P E N D I X.

The Church then having no room to apprehend that her Constitution should come to be debated in this Treaty, had nothing left to do, but to bring her Security to be one of the Articles of the Union, and so bring the Episcopal Church of *England*, not only to Recognize her Establishment, but to engage the whole Nation and Power of *England* to support and maintain it.

And this alone made the *Union* be acknowledged to be serviceable to the Church of *Scotland*, for otherwise it must be allow'd, that it had been a dangerous Thing for the Church of *Scotland*, which was the weaker, to join and incorporate her Civil Power, which was her Defense, with the *English*, which was the stronger: But now the Security, Liberty and Establishment of the Church of *Scotland* being twisted with the *English* Constitution, and built upon the same Foundation with that of the Church of *England*, it becomes invulnerable, unless we shall suppose the whole Ecclesiastic and Civil Constitution of *Great Britain* should suffer a Convulsion, and be overturn'd and destroy'd.

Nor had the Church of *Scotland* so good a Security for her Establishment before; her Nobility and Representatives, being not the best Friends to her Constitution, often offended at the Severity of her Discipline, and in part debauch'd from her Principles by the Levity and Fashion of the Court; and it was more than probable, that in time they might have given a Blow to the Constitution of the Church, which now it is for ever out of their Power to do.

It is true, that there is not one Ounce of *Good Will* the more between the Two Churches for this Union, nor can I say that the *English* Church has not shewn her Teeth on several Occasions since that: The *Scots* Episcopal Clergy have met with

## A P P E N D I X.

Encouragement in their insulting the Church of *Scotland*, as in the Case of Mr. *Greenshields*, who set up a Meeting-House in the Teeth of the Magistrates of *Edinburgh*, and vilely insulted them when they touch'd him on that Head, telling them he was a Member of the Church of *England*, and appealing from them to the House of Lords.

But after all, as the Government were convinced, that the Episcopal Men were in the Wrong, and that they could not support the Design; so the Man had some Money given him to withdraw, and the Case was dropt as quietly as they could, and with that just Caution with which wise Men generally drop a Thing they are ashamed of.

Nor can I say, that even the Union it self has been so sacredly observ'd on the *English* Side, as the Case of the Church of *Scotland* required, or her Privileges so well preserv'd as they had Reason to expect, from the good Words which were given them at the time of the Treaty; Witness the several Attacks made upon them in the Affair of Patronages, the Yule Vacance, and the imposing Oaths upon the Ministers, inconsistent with their principles; Things of which all I shall now say, is, That as they were done in a Reign, which did several other Things which the present Reign disowns and declares against; so we have great room to hope, and the Church of *Scotland* to expect, that those Impositions and Infractions of the Treaty will be repealed, and that she shall have more Justice for the future.

The Church made what struggle they could at that Time against the passing the Bill for restoring Lay-Patronages; the Agents they employ'd here were heard by their Council, and considering how much was said against it, and how little was, or could be said for it, 'twas thought very unaccountable

## A P P E N D I X,

able that such an Act should pass at all; but it must be placed to the Account of the Times, and whoever reflects upon the Persons who manag'd the Affairs of *Scotland*, and had the Power at that Juncture, will find the Necessity they were in of gratifying the Episcopal Party: Their Advocate then was the Earl of *Marr*, the same who has been since their Champion, and who was then Secretary of State; it was no wonder then that the Church had as little favour in every thing that was mov'd against her, or wherein her Interest was concern'd, as if she had been an Enemy; nor was it in the Power of the few Gentlemen in *England*, who were sensible of the Injury, and would have serv'd her at that Time, to do any Thing for her.

However, a long Defence of her Privileges was published and delivered to the Members of Parliament, and was handsomely spoken to in the House; and the Church had this Satisfaction, that her Cause was lost by Numbers, not by Strength of Reasoning, or of Right.

It would be too long to insert here the tedious Account publish'd on that Occasion, by some who shew'd their good Will, rather than Capacity to state the Case: But the true State of the Case, as it was presented to the House of Lords by the Three Ministers deputed by the Church for that Purpose, cannot but be proper to publish, because it gives the Churches Plea in her own Words, and is as follows.

## A P P E N D I X.

*To the Right Honourable the Lords Spiritual and Temporal in Parliament Assembled. The Humble Representation of William Carstairs, Thomas Blackwell and Robert Baillie, Ministers of the Church of SCOTLAND, concerning the Bill for restoring Patronages, now depending before your Lordships.*

**I**T is with all humble Duty and Submission represented unto your Lordships, that this depending Bill seems to be contrary to the present Constitution of our Church, so well secured by the late Treaty of Union, and solemnly ratified by the Acts of Parliament in both Kingdoms: That this may be more clear, it is to be observ'd, That from the first Reformation from Popery, the Church of *Scotland* hath always reckon'd Patronages a Grievance and Burden, as is declared by the first and second Books of Discipline, publish'd soon after the said Reformation, since which Time they were still judg'd a Grievance, till at length they came by Law to be abolished.

These Patronages having been restor'd with Episcopacy, in the Year 1661, and 1662, did continue to the Year 1690, that Episcopacy was abolish'd, and Presbyterian Government again establish'd; and tho' the Act of Parliament 1690, resettling Presbyterian Church Government, was founded upon the Act of Parliament 1592, which bears a Relation unto Patronages, yet the said Act of Parliament 1690, doth expressly except that Part of the old Act, and refer Patronages to be thereafter consider'd, which accordingly was consider'd in the same Parliament 1690, whereby it is plain, that the Abolition of Patronages was made a Part of our Church Constitution, enacted by the Act 1690, and that this Act 1690, with all other Acts relative thereto being expressly ratified, and  
for

## A P P E N D I X.

for ever confirm'd by the Act for securing the Protestant Religion and Presbyterian Government, and Ingross'd as an essential Condition of the Rati-fications of the Treaty of Union past in the Parliaments of both Kingdoms; The said Act abolish-ing Patronages must be understood to be a Part of our Presbyterian Constitution, secur'd to us by the Treaty of Union for ever.

Yet it is to be particularly consider'd, that the same Parliament 1690, was so tender of the civil Rights of Patrons, and so sincerely desirous only to restore the Church to its just and primitive Liberty of calling Ministers in a Way agreeable to the Word of God, that they only discharged the Patrons Power of Presenting Ministers to vacant Churches, but as to any thing of their civil Rights, did make the Condition of Patrons better than before, not only by reserving unto them the Right of Disposal of vacant Stipends, for pious Uses within the Paroch, but also for giving unto them the heretable Rights of the Tythes, restricting the Minister, who formerly had the said Right to Stipends, much below the Value of the said Tythes, notwithstanding which advantageous Concession to the Patrons by the Parliament, this Bill takes back from the Church the Power of Presentation of Ministers, without restoring the Tythes which formerly belong'd to her, by which the Parons come to enjoy both the Purchase and the Price.

This being then the true Account of our legal Settlement as to this Matter, it appears to be evident that the Restitution of Patronages, as to the Point of Presentation, can only gratify a few, while on the other Hand it must necessarily disoblige a far greater Number, that are now freed of that Imposition, and indeed it cannot but seem strange, that this Bill should be so much insisted upon,  
when

## A P P E N D I X.

when there are so many Patrons, and those too of the most considerable in *Scotland*, that are against such a Restitution.

It is also apparent, that Presbyteries must come under many Difficulties and Hardships, as to their Compliance with this Innovation, and that many Contests, Disorders and Differences, will probably insue betwixt Patrons, Presbyters, Heretors and People, besides the known Abuses wherewith Patronages have been attended even in their most settled Condition; whereof many Instances might be given; especially, that thereby a Foundation was laid for Simoniacal Factions, betwixt Patrons and those presented by them, and likewise Ministers were imposed upon Paroches by Patrons who were utterly Strangers to their Circumstances, having neither Property nor Residence therein.

*It is therefore with all Submission expected from your Lordships Justice and mature Deliberation, That a Bill, as we humbly conceive, so nearly affecting the late Treaty of Union in one of its most Fundamental and Essential Articles, respecting the Preservation of the Rights and Privileges, which our Church at that Time was possess'd of by Law, for the Security of which the Parliament of Scotland was so much concern'd as not to allow their Commissioners to make it any Part of their Treaty, but reserved it as a Thing unalterable by any Judicature deriving its Constitution from the said Treaty, shall not be approv'd by Your Lordships, especially while the Nature of the Treaty it self shews it to be a reciprocal Transaction between the Two Nations.*

W. CARSTARES.  
THO. BLACKWELL.  
RO. BAILLIE.

Before

## A P P E N D I X.

Before the Commons, as have said; they were heard by Council; but all was to no Purpose, the Bill pass'd; and which is worse, we do not see the Church of *England*, or even the Gentlemen in the Parliament of *Britain*, who were actually against the Bill at that time, equally solicitous to restore the Church now to the Privileges which she lost then, how unjust soever the taking them away has been.

Indeed we find the Commission of the Assembly very earnest to solicit the redress of those Grievances, and not without Hope that it shall be effected: And therefore, even while this was writing, Two Ministers, *viz.* Mr. — *Hamilton*, Professor of Divinity in the College of *Edinburgh*, and Mr. *William Mitchel*, one of the Ministers of *Edinburgh*, are Deputed by the said Commission to attend the sitting of the approaching Parliament, to get, if possible, Redress of the Churches Grievances, and a Repeal of those Acts which pass'd in the preceding Reign in their Prejudice: The Acts are particularly.

1. The Act for restoring Patronages.
2. The Act for Tollerating Episcopal Meetings.
3. The Act for the *Yule* Vacance; that is, for keeping *Christmas*.

If those Three are obtain'd, the Church will then be restor'd to her full Lustre and Authority, and its hoped will never more have any Occasion to Complain of being Oppress'd.

F I N I S.